

# THE CŪLAVAMSA II





H. 86

RAMA VARMA RESEARCH INSTITUTE,  
TRICHUR, KERALA STATE.

2 AUG 1931





No: 700

Pali Text Society

TRANSLATION SERIES, NO. 20

1930: EXTRA VOLUME, PRICE 10S.

CŪLAVAMSA

BEING THE MORE RECENT PART OF THE

MAHĀVAMSA

PART II.

TRANSLATED BY

WILHELM GEIGER

AND FROM THE GERMAN INTO ENGLISH BY

Mrs. C. MABEL RICKMERS (née Duff)

AUTHOR OF "THE CHRONOLOGY OF INDIA"

UNDER THE PATRONAGE OF THE GOVERNMENT  
OF CEYLON



London

PUBLISHED FOR THE PALI TEXT SOCIETY

BY

HUMPHREY MILFORD  
OXFORD UNIVERSITY PRESS, AMEN HOUSE  
WARWICK SQUARE, E.C.

1930



Printed by Academy Printer F. Straub, Munich.

RAMA VARMA RESEARCH INSTITUTE.  
TRICHUR, COCHIN STATE.

29 JUN 1931

To

Mr. A. M. Hocart,  
Archaeological Commissioner, Ceylon.

in sincere gratitude.



RAMA VARMA RESEARCH INSTITUTE.

TRICHUR, KERALA STATE.

26 JUN 1961

## INTRODUCTION

Recent years have brought us two comprehensive works on the chronology of Ceylon: 1) JOHN M. SENAVERATNE, "The Date of Buddha's Death and Ceylon Chronology", JRAS. C. B. XXIII, No. 67 (1914), p. 141 ff. and 2) DMDZ. WICKREMASINGHE, "Ceylonese Chronology", as Introduction to vol. III of his *Epigraphia Zeylanica*.

Still earlier investigations dealing with a longer period are: 3) SYLVAIN LÉVI, "Les Missions de Wang Hinen Ts'e dans l'Inde" in JAS. 1900, p. 297 ff., 401 ff., translated by JOHN M. SENAVERATNE, JRAS. C. B. XXIV, No. 68 (1915-16), p. 75 ff. (with "Notes" by the Translator p. 106 ff. and 4) E. HULTZNER, "Contributions to Singhalese Chronology", JRAS. 1913, p. 517 ff.)<sup>1</sup>

I mention further 5) H. W. CODRINGTON, "A Short History of Ceylon" where on p. xiii there is a "Note on the Chronology of Ceylon" which deserves attention.

The numerous single investigations particularly those in the JRAS. C. B. will be quoted in their place. Their authors are: P. E. PERERA, E. W. PERERA, S. DE SILVA, B. GUNASEKARA, H. C. P. BELL, E. R. AYTON, H. W. CODRINGTON etc.

The two first named articles (S. and WICKR.) start as I did myself in the translation of the Mahāvamsa from FLEET's date of 483 B. C. for the Nirvana of Buddha. Even if this date is not absolutely exact — arguments are advanced for the year 487 B. C. — it is as well to retain it for the moment. Now WICKREMASINGHE, EZ. I. p. 155 ff., has proved that even in

<sup>1</sup> I quote the above articles as follows: 1) = S., 2) = WICKR., 3) = L., 4) = H. with the page number (in the case of 3 that of the English translation).

Ceylon itself there are traces of an era starting from 483 B. C. whereas later, almost certainly in the 7th century, 544/3 B.C. was adopted as the year of the Nirvana. Thus the most important thing is to find out the point in the chronology of Ceylon where the transition from the one era to the other takes place, where consequently we find an excess of 61 years.

SENAVERATNE (p. 143)<sup>1</sup> goes farthest in his assumption that the era of B. C. 483 was in use up to the close of the 15th century when a reform of the calendar took place, 544 B. C., being adopted as the year of Buddha's death, 93 instead of 61 years being erroneously added. At the same time the Saka era (78/9 A. D.) was dated back 93 years. Later, about the 18th century, with a new reform of the calendar, the Buddha era was adjusted to the difference of 61 years. S. gets rid of the surplus number by the assumption that several of the kings' names handed down by tradition for the 15th and 16th centuries refer to the same person, that others are the names of co-regents, while many are mere inventions. Parakkamabāhu VI. is identical with Parakkamabāhu IX., Bhuvanekabāhu VI. with Bh. VII., while Parakkamabāhu VII. and VIII. never existed (p. 176—177).

SENAVERATNE defends his thesis with great acumen and extraordinary learning. But against it there is a series of synchronisms by which we can prove that the era 544/3 must be much older than S. assumes. Moreover the simultaneous alteration of the Saka era is very unlikely. For this and other reasons SENAVERATNE's hypothesis was rejected during the discussion following his lecture on the subject. In spite of all the weakness and untrustworthiness of Sinhalese chronology, WICKREMASINGHE is nevertheless right in taking up a more conservative attitude towards its tradition.

One cause of great uncertainty also lies in the fact that in our calculations we have to rely for the most part on the

<sup>1</sup> See also the detailed analysis of SENAVERATNE's hypothesis by C. SCHUHHAMMER in "Ceylon zur Zeit des Königs Bhuvaneka Bābu und Franz Xavers 1539—1552" by C. SCHUHHAMMER and E. A. VONETZSCHE I. (1928), p. 67 ff.

figures for the reigns of the individual kings. Here we cannot rule out the possibility that many of these reigns were at least partly contemporaneous, that it is a case of simultaneous or of joint reigns. But the means for establishing this in individual cases are wanting. We have of course to do also with round numbers. When it is e. g. said that such and such a king reigned 12 years, possibly a few extra months have been thrown in. The sum total of such additions produces however, considerable inexactitude.

The main point however, is that our sources often differ more or less in their statements regarding the length of the various reigns, that for many of the kings in the Cūlavamsa and other documents figures are wanting altogether or can only be obtained approximately by calculation.

Matters are better, at least in my opinion, with the single dates for certain of the more important events, especially those starting with Buddha's Nirvana. I do not deny that some of these dates may have been got at by the authors by the simple process of adding up the years of the reigns. Nevertheless I have the impression that there was a limited number of dates which rested on ancient tradition and had as their starting-point the year of Buddha's death<sup>1</sup>. There are already traces of something like a Buddha era in the Dipavamsa and the Mahāvamsa, as for instance, when it is said in Dip. 17. 78, that Devūnampiyatissa was crowned 236 years after Buddha's entry into Nirvana. Or again when in both chronicles (Dip. 6. 1, Mhv. 5. 21) there is the remark that 218 years had elapsed between the Nirvana and the coronation of Asoka.

It is possible that in later times a chronological system was constructed out of these individual dates to which the reigns of the kings were adjusted, not of course without some violence. Then a new confusion arose when at a certain time

---

<sup>1</sup> I regard also the statement in Mhv. 33. 80 f., that the Abhayagiri-vihāra was founded 217 years, 10 months and 10 days after the Mahāvihāra as an ancient tradition, though it rests on a different basis. A figure so exact cannot be obtained by mere addition.

through a misunderstanding the cause of which we do not know, the Nirvana of the Buddha was dated back 61 years. At some point or other in the list of the kings this number must be allowed for. Then it is an open question — granted an ancient tradition — whether in converting these single dates into the Christian era we are to start from 483 B. C. or 544/3 B. C.

In the face of all this uncertainty it is advisable in our chronological investigations to rely chiefly on foreign testimony regarding the history of Ceylon. There are above all the synchronisms afforded by Chinese annals and South Indian inscriptions. Then we have the confirmatory evidence of Sinhalese inscriptions, especially those of the mediaeval and modern times. Subsidiary to these are the single dates. The skeleton framed by this "foreign testimony" is indeed meagre in the extreme and the evidence is unequally distributed. A good deal remains doubtful. The blame lies partly in the method of description of the Cūlavaipsa which conceals so much that to us seems particularly important. What a pity, for instance, that it has nothing to say about the relations with China which would seem to have been not inconsiderable. The name of China is not even once mentioned.

I come now to the fine and careful work of WICKRAMASINGHE. When I wrote the preface to Vol. I. of my translation of the Cūlavaipsa in which I promised an introduction to the chronology for Vol. II., I had not then seen W.'s "Chronological Table of Ceylon Kings" (EZ. III, p. 1 ff.). Later I had doubts whether a treatment of the same subject by myself might not be superfluous. I think, however, that readers of my translation will be glad to have at hand a list of the kings with their more or less probable dates. They will also like to have a more or less comprehensive survey of the material on which our calculations rest.

One thing more. WICKR. makes no attempt at reconciling the two chronological computations of 483 B. C. and 544/3 B. C. He is apparently convinced that this is at present impossible and wishes to avoid increasing the uncertainty by a new and

again uncertain chronology. In converting into the Christian era he starts us far No. 76 (Kumāradhātusena)<sup>1</sup> from 483 B.C. Up to No. 94 (Dappūla I.) he places the two computations side by side. From No. 95 (Dāthopatissa I.) up to the interregnum after No. 124 (Mahinda V.) he places the figures of the first computation in brackets, thus treating them as less probable and from No. 125 (Kassapa = Vikkamabāhu I.) he follows only the era of 544/3 B.C.

Here I venture a step further. I believe namely that the change of the era falls in the earliest period of the Cūlavamsa, that is at the close of the 4th century A.D. Here accordingly is the period where we must allow for the excess of 61 years.

My theory stands and falls with the identity of Ts'a-li Mo-ho-nan of the Chinese annals (L. 88, 89) with King Mahānāma, No. 5 (63). Mo-ho-nan, so it is said, sent a letter, with gifts in the year 428 A.D. to the Chinese Court. This seems to contradict another notice from Chinese sources quoted by L. 75 according to which a king of Ceylon Chi-mi-kia-po-mo (that is Śrī Meghavarman) sent an embassy to the Indian King San-mcon-to-lo-kiu-to (that is Samudragupta) asking permission to build a monastery at Bodhi Gayā as shelter for pilgrims from Ceylon. The Sinhalese king Śrī Meghavarman is without doubt Sirimeghavapya, No. 1 (59) the first ruler of the so-called Little Dynasty. Samudragupta reigned from 326 — (about) 375 A.D. According to the traditional chronology the reign of Sirimeghavapya is reckoned from 362—389 A.D.

But the Cūlavamsa reckons 79—80 years from the death of Sirimeghavapya to Mahānāma's ascent of the throne which would thus occur at the earliest in 468 A.D. And in fact WICKE, 12 gives the date of 468—490 for Mahānāma's reign. But how does this agree with the other notice giving the year 428 for Mahānāma's embassy?<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> This — not Kumāradidhātusena — is of course the right form of the name. The *ādi* is merely periphrastic, "the Dhātusena who begins with Kumāra". See my Transl. note to 41, 35, 44, 6.

<sup>2</sup> I have pointed out the discrepancy Mhs. Transl. p. XL, note 2

WICKREMASINGHE tries to solve the difficulty by saying: "This (i. e. the embassy) may have taken place probably when Mahā-nāma was a priest wielding power in Upatissa's reign." This argument is refuted by the fact that Mo-ho-nan is distinctly described as a Ts'a-li, i. e. kshatriya, as king.

The solution of the problem must be sought elsewhere. Both Chinese notices are right, but the numbers given in the Sinhalese sources for the reigns of Sirimeghavapu up to Mahānāma are wrong. Their sum total is 129 to 130 years, but they have been expanded about 60 or 61 years in order to reconcile the old era of 483 B. C. with the new one of 544/3.

It is just here indeed that the traditional dates give the impression of artificial expansion. Buddhadūsa and his two sons (Nos. 61-63) are given a reign of 92/3 years! According to the Rājavaliya they even reigned 142 years! These are fantastic figures. Possibly my theory may throw a new light on 37. 100. Suppose we assume that Sirimeghavapu's reign after 362 A. D. was considerably shorter, that perhaps a great part of the 27/8 years allotted to it falls within the period when he was reigning along with Mahāsena or as his rival, we might perhaps follow the reading of the MSS. S. 5, 6, 7 *bhātu* (not *bhalu*) *tassa kanīṭhako* according to which we should translate: "his youngest brother, Jetṭhatissa, still a youth, hereupon raised the umbrella of dominion in Laṅkā." It is in any case only very reluctantly that I have decided to depart from the original text.

Be that as it may, if the Chinese notices and the hypothesis I have built on them are right, we must shorten the period between Mahāsena's death and that of Mahānāma by 60 to 61 years and this gives us for Mahānāma's death the year 430 or 431 A. D. Mahānāma, if we keep to the 22 years ascribed to him by tradition, would have reigned from 409—431 A. D.

---

without seeking a solution. Cf. also J. M. SENAVERATNE, JRAS. C. B. xxiv, No. 68 (1915-16), p. 113.

It is impossible to determine individually how the reigns of Mahānāma's predecessors were distributed. I pointed out above that we might already begin shortening these with Sirimeghavāṇa. Upatissa with his 42 years may be discarded entirely, it seems to me, or at least but a very small portion of his reign be allowed to stand. He may be purely fictitious or perhaps a prince who reigned along with his father and either never came to the throne himself or if so, only for a short period. Here above all when the transition from the one era to the other had been effected, there set in those efforts to adjust the balance by manipulation of the figures.

There is one thing I should like finally to point out. If we go back for the change of the era to Sirimeghavāṇa and his immediate successors there is an inherent probability in this. It coincides with the transition from the Mahāvamsa to the Cūlavamsa. That we have here a significant breach in the history of Ceylon, a powerful reaction in favour of the Theravāda after a period of decline can scarcely be disputed.

## LIST OF SINHALESE KINGS

I have made my own list of the kings of the Cūlavāmpsa, but have added WICKREMASINGHE's figures in brackets. Where former lists differ from my own this has also been indicated in brackets. Thus for instance, (166. Vijayabāhu VI.) means that this king (Cūlava. ed. II. 656 f.) is wanting in my list. — Udaya I. (Dappula II.) means that the king whom I call Udaya I. appears elsewhere as Dappula II.

### ABBREVIATIONS:

- M. == Mahāvāmpsa or from No. 59 onwards Cūlavāmpsa.
- Rv. == Rājāvaliya (published and translated by B. GUINASEKARA.)
- Pv. == Pūjāvaliya (A Contribution to the History of Ceylon, extracted from the Pūjāvaliya, Colombo 1893).
- Ns. == Nikāyasamgrahaya (ed. WICKREMASINGHE).
- Rr. == Rājaratnākaraya (ed. SADDHANANDA, Colombo 1887).
- Nar. == Narendracaritāvalokanapradipikā as quoted by WICKREMASINGHE.

Figures in italics denote that we have to do with fictitious numbers, whereas the others rest on more or less probable calculation. Figures in bold type are single traditional dates and chiefly those from non-Sinhalese sources or from inscriptions which serve to confirm the chronology of the Mahāvāmpsa.

The figures in the last column refer to the notes following the list of the kings.

	Length of reign			Date	Notes
	M.	Rv.	Pv.		
<b>1. Mahāvamsa</b>					
1. Vijaya	38	38	38	483-445 B.C.	1
Interregnum	1	.	1	445-444	
2. Paṇḍuvūśudeva	30	32	30	444-414	
3. Abhaya	20	22	20	414-394	
Interregnum	17				
4. Paṇḍukabhaya	70	70	70	394-307	
(5. Gaṇatissa)	.	40	.	307-247	
6. Muṭhasiva	60	60	60		
7. Devānampiyatissa	40	40	40	247-207	247
8. Uttiya	10	?	10	207-197	
9. Muhāsiva	10	?	10	197-187	
10. Sūratissa <sup>1)</sup>	10	10	10	187-177	
11. Sena	22	22	22	177-155	
12. Guttika					
13. Asela <sup>2)</sup>	10	10	10	155-145	
14. Eñāra	44	44	44	145-101	
15. Duṭṭagāmaṇī	24	24	24	101-77	
16. Saddhātissa	18	37	18	77-59	
17. Thālathana	— 1 10 1 8 —	— 1 — 10	— 10	59	
18. Lañjatissa <sup>3)</sup>	9 — 15 39 —	9 8 15	—	59-50	
19. Khallatānūga	6 — — . . .	6 — —	—	50-43	
20. Vaṭṭagāmaṇī	— 5 — — 5 —	— 5 —	43	43	
21. Puluhattha					
22. Bāhiya					
23. Panayamāra	14 7 — 14 — —	8 7 —	—	43-29	
24. Piñayamāra					
25. Dāṭhika					
(20.) Vaṭṭagāmaṇī	12 — — 12 — —	12 — —	—	29-17	3
26. Mahūcūlīmāhātissa	14 — — 60 — —	14 — —	—	17-3	
27. Cūrañāga	12 — — . . .	12 — —	—	3 B. C. — 9 A. D.	4
28. Tissa	3 — — 3 — —	3 — —	—	9-12 A. D.	

<sup>1)</sup> Rv. mentions two sons of Devānampiyatissa, 1) Sūratissa, 2) Upatissa, each of whom reigned 10 years. It then says that in the days of King Uttiya two usurpers seized the power and reigned 22 years.

<sup>2)</sup> As to the chronological difficulties regarding Asela see WICKR. p. 5, n. 1.

<sup>3)</sup> Rv. calls the successor of Tulnā King Lāmīnitissa who had slain him and reigned 39 years. Then it passes on the Vaṭṭagāmbāhu. The Pv. also calls Tul's successor Lāmīpiṭis.

	Length of reign			Date	Notes
	M.	Rv.	Pv.		
29. Anulā	4 3 —	3 4 —	5 2 —	12—16 A. D.	
30. Kuṭakāṇḍatissa	22 — —	22 — —	22 — —	16—38	
31. Bhātikābhaya	28 — —	18 — —	18 — —	38—66	
32. Mahūdūṭhikama-hānāga	12 — —	12 — —	12 — —	67—79	
33. Āmaṇḍagāmaṇī	9 8 —	9 — —	9 8 —	79—89	
34. Kaṇīrājānūtiṣsa	3 — —	. . .	3 — —	89—92	
35. Cūlubhaya	1 — —	. . .	1 — —	92—93	
36. Sīvalī	— 4 —	. . .	— 4 —	93	
37. Iḷanāga <sup>1)</sup>	9 — —	. . .	6 — —	93—102	
38. Candamukhasiva	8 7 —	. . .	8 7 —	103—112	
39. Yasalālakatissa	7 8 —	. . .	7 8 —	112—120	
40. Subharūja	6 — —	. . .	6 — —	120—126	
41. Vasuhīte	44 — —	44 — —	44 — —	127—171	
42. Vūrīkāñśikalissa	3 — —	3 — —	3 — —	171—174	
43. Gajubhūgāmaṇī	22 — —	24 — —	22 — —	174—196	
44. Mahallanāga	6 — —	6 — —	6 — —	196—202	
45. Bhātikatissa	24 — —	24 — —	24 — —	203—227	
46. Kanīṭhutissa	18 — —	. . .	18 — —	227—245	
47. Khujānāga <sup>2)</sup>	2 — —	. . .	2 — —	246—248	
48. Kuḍanāga	1 — —	20 — —	1 — —	248—249	
49. Sirināga I.	19 — —	. . .	19 — —	249—268	
50. Vohārikalissa	22 — —	22 — —	22 — —	269—291	
51. Abhuyanāga	8 — —	2 — —	8 — —	291—299	
52. Sirināga II.	2 — —	2 — —	2 — —	300—302	
53. Vijayakunāra	1 — —	6 — —	1 — —	302—303	
54. Saṃghatissa	4 — —	4 — —	4 — —	303—307	
55. Sirisāṇḍhabodhi	2 — —	?	2 — —	307—309	
56. Goṭhābhaya	13 — —	13 — —	13 — —	309—322	
57. Jetīhatissa I.	10 — —	10 — —	10 — —	323—333	
58. Mahāsenā	27 — —	24 — —	27 — —	334—361[2] 362 5	

1) WICKRUMASINGHE is I think, wrong when he says on p. 8 that I had overlooked the fact that Iḷanāga was deposed in the first year of his reign by the Lambakāṇḍas. I inserted the three years (Mhv. 35, 27) dominion of the Lambakāṇḍas Mhv. Transl. p. xxxvii, last line, as "interregnum". When W. takes the round figure of 10 years for the interregnum + Iḷanāga's reign, I can only approve.

2) According to Rv. Bhātikatissa's successors were: 1) Kuḍānā (20 years), 2) Vōratissa (22 years), 3) Abāsen (2 years). Then Sirinā (= No. 52) reigned 2 years.

	M.	Length of reign			Date	Notes
		Rv.	Pv.			
<b>2. Cūlavaṃsa</b>						
1. (59.) Sirimeghavajjī	28 c — —	28 — —	28 — —			6
2. (60.) Jetṭhabhīsā II.	9 — —	10 — —	9 <sup>1</sup> — —		362—409	412
3. (61.) Buddhadāsa	29 c — —	80 — —	29 — —			7
4. (62.) Upatissa I.	42 — —	42 — —	42 — —			
5. (63.) Mahānūma	22 — —	20 — —	22 — —	409—431	428	8
6. (64.) Sotthisena	— — 1 — —	— — 1 — —	— — 1 — —	431		
7. (65.) Chattagābha	1 c — —	1 — —	1 — —	431—432		
8. (66.) Mittasena	1 — —	6 — —	1 — —	432—433		
9. (67.) Pāṇḍu <sup>1)</sup>						
10. (68.) Parinda						
11. (69.) Khuddapārinīla	27 — —	— . .	27 — —	433—460		
12. (70.) Tīritara						
13. (71.) Dāthiya						
14. (72.) Piṭhiya						
15. (73.) Dhūtusena <sup>2)</sup>	18 — —	18 — —	18 — —	460—478		
16. (74.) Kassapa I. <sup>2)</sup>	18 c — —	18 — —	18 — —	478—496		
17. (75.) Moggallāna I.	18 c — —	18 — —	18 — —	496—518		
18. (76.) Kumāradhātusena	9 c — —	9 — —	9 — —	513—522	515	9
19. (77.) Kittisena <sup>3)</sup>	— 9 —	9 — —	— 9 —	522		
20. (78.) Sīva I.	— — 25	25 — —	— — 25	522		
21. (79.) Upatissa II. <sup>4)</sup>	1 6 —	1 10 —	1 6 —	522—524		
22. (80.) Silūkāla	13 c — —	13 — —	13 — —	524—537	527	10, 11
23. (81.) Dāthāpabhuti	— 6 6 —	6 — —	— 6 —	537		
24. (82.) Moggallāna II.	20 c — —	20 — —	20 — —	537—556		
25. (83.) Kittisirimēgha	— — 19	19 — —	19 — —	556		

1) For Nos. 9—14 (67—72) Rv. has also 27 years.

2) Rr. has the same number of years.

3) I do not think that Wickr. is right when he follows Rv. in giving 9 years instead of nine months to No. 19 (77). There are other instances of the Sinhalese sources giving years instead of the months or days of the Mhv. (No. 20, 25, 36), people being accustomed to reckon by years. We have no example of the reverse. Moreover with regard to No. 19 (77) Pv. agrees with the Mhv. It seems to me that it is only in cases where both Pv. and Rv. together are against the Mhv. that weight attaches to their statements. Wickr.'s reference to the reading *rassawhi* in S 5 is no help. It is so isolated in comparison with the other MSS. that it is clearly a mere slip of the scribe.

4) According to Nar. 2 y. 6 m.

	Length of reign			Date	Notes
	M.	Rv.	Pv.		
26. (81a) Mahūnāga	3 c — —	3 — —	3 — —	556 — 559	
— (84b) Lāmāni Singānā	. . .	9 — —	9 — —	559 — 568	
27. (85.) Aggabodhi I.	31 c — —	30 — —	34 — —	568 — 601	
28. (86.) Aggabodhi II.	10 c — —	10 — —	10 — —	601 — 611	609
29. (87.) Samghatissa	. . .	— 2 —	— 2 —	611	
30. (88.) Moggallāna III.	6 — —	6 — —	6 — —	611 — 617	
31. (89.) Silāmeghvāṇya	9 — —	9 — —	9 — —	617 — 626	
32. (90.) Aggabodhi III. SSB.		16 — —	16 — —	.	
33. (91.) Jetṭhatissa III. Aggabodhi IV.	16 c — —	— 5 —	— 5 —	626 — 641	
34. (92.) Dāṭhopatissa I.		12 — —	12 — —		
35. (93.) Kassapa II.	9 — —	9 — —	9 — —	641 — 650	
36. (94.) Dappula I. <sup>1)</sup>	— — 7	10 — —	3 3 —	650	
37. (95.) Dāṭhopatissa II.	9 c — —	9 — —	9 — —	650 — 658	13
38. (96.) Aggabodhi IV. SSB.	16 c — —	16 — —	16 — —	658 — 674	
39. (97.) Dutta <sup>2)</sup>	2 — —	10 — —	2 — —	674 — 676	
40. (98.) Hūthulūṭha	— 6 —	— 6 —	— 6 —	676	
41. (99.) Mānavamma	. . .	35 — —	35 — —	676 — 711	
42. (100.) Aggabodhi V.	6 — —	6 — —	6 — —	711 — 717	
43. (101.) Kassapa III.	. . .	7 — —	7 — —	717 — 724	718
44. (102.) Mahinda I.	3 — —	3 — —	3 — —	724 — 727	14
45. (103.) Aggabodhi VI. SMV.	40 c — —	40 — —	40 — —	727 — 766	742/6
46. (104.) Aggabodhi VII.	6 — —	6 — —	6 — —	766 — 772	
47. (105.) Mahinda II. SMV.	20 — —	20 — —	20 — —	772 — 792	
48. (106.) Udaya I. (Dappula II.)	5 — —	5 — —	5 — —	792 — 797	
49. (107.) Mahinda III. SMV.	4 — —	7 — —	4 — —	797 — 801	
50. (108.) Aggabodhi VIII.	11 — —	11 — —	11 — —	801 — 812	
51. (109.) Dappula II. (III.)	16 — —	12 — —	16 — —	812 — 828	
52. (110.) Aggabodhi IX.	3 — —	. . .	3 — —	828 — 831	
53. (111.) Sena I. SMV.	20 — —	. . .	20 — —	831 — 851	
54. (112.) Sena II.	35 c — —	35 — —	35 — —	851 — 885	
55. (113.) Udaya II. (I.)	11 — —	40 — —	11 — —	885 — 896	
56. (114.) Kassapa IV. SSB.	17 — —	. . .	17 — —	896 — 913	16
57. (115.) Kassapa V. SMV.	10 c — —	6 — —	6 — —	913 — 923	918/9
58. (116.) Dappula III. (IV.)	— 7 —	— 7 —	— 7 —	923	17
59. (117.) Dappula IV. (V.) SMV.	12 c — —	12 — —	12 — —	923 — 934	

<sup>1)</sup> The Mbvs. does not count the three years' reign in Rohaya.

<sup>2)</sup> According to Nar. No. 39 (97) reigned 2 y. 6 m.

	Length of reign			Date	Notes
	M.	Rv.	Pv.		
60. (118.) Udaya III. (II.)	3 c —	8 — —	8 — —	934—937	
61. (119.) Sena III. <sup>1)</sup>	9 c — —	9 — —	9 — —	937—945	
62. (120.) Udaya IV. (III.)	8 c — —	3 — —	8 — —	945—953	948
63. (121.) Sena IV.	3 — —	3 — —	3 — —	953—956	
64. (122.) Mahinda IV. SSB.	16 c — —	12 — —	16 — —	956—972	960
65. (123.) Sena V.	10 c — —	10 — —	10 — —	972—981	
66. (124.) Mahinda V. Interregnum	36 c — — 12 — —	18 — —	48 — —	981—1029	1017
67. (125.) Vikramabāhu I. (Kassapa?)	12 c — —	12 — —	12 — —	1029—1041	
68. (126.) Kittī	— — 7	. . .	. . .	1041	
69. (127.) Mahālāmikithi	3 c — —	3 — —	3 — —	1041—1044	
70. (128.) Vikramapāṇḍu	1 — —	3 — —	3 — —	1044—1047	1046
71. (129.) Jagatīpāla	4 — —	1 — —	4 — —	1047—1051	
72. (130.) Parakkamapāṇḍu	2 — —	6 — —	1 — —	1051—1053	
73 a. (131.) Loka (Lokissava)	6 c — —	. . .	6 — —	1053—1059	
73 b. (132.) Kussapa? <sup>2)</sup>	— 6 —	. . .	. . .	1059	
74. (133.) Vijayabāhu I. SSB	55 — —	80 — —	54 — —	1059—1114	22
75. (134.) Jayabāhu I.	. . .	3 — —	13 — —	1114—1116	
76. (135.) Vikramabāhu II. (I.)	21 — —	28 — —	28 — —	1116—1137	
77. (136.) Gajabāhu (II.) <sup>3)</sup>	22 — —	. . .	. . .	1137—1153	
78. (137.) Parakkamabāhu I. SSB.	33 — —	32 — —	33 — —	1153—1186	23
79. (138.) Vijayabāhu II.	1 — —	. . .	1 — —	1186—1187	
80. (139.) Mahinda VI.	— — 5	— — 5	— — 5	1187	
81. (140.) Nissānakamalla	9 — —	9 — —	9 — —	1187—1196	
82. (141.) Vīrabāhu I.	— — 1	. . .	— — 1	1196	
83. (142.) Vikramabāhu III. (II.)	— 3 —	— 3 —	— 3 —	1196	
84. (143.) Codaganga	— 9 —	— 9 —	— 9 —	1196—1197	

1) In Rājāv. the sequence of Nos. 59—66 (117—124) is as follows: 1. Dapulu 12 y. (evidently = No. 59, Dappula IV.), 2. Udā 8 y., 3. Sen 3 y., 4. Udā 3 y., 5. Sen 9 y., 6. Sen 3 y., 7. Mihelsalū 12 y., 8. Salamevan 10 y. (= No. 65), 9. Mihindu 48 y. (= Mahimila V. No. 66). — Pūjāv. has 1. Dapulu 12 y., 2. Udā 3 y., 3. Sen 9 y., 4. Udā 8 y., 5. Sen 9 y., 6. Sen 3 y., 7. Mihelsalū 16 y., 8. Salamevan 10 y., 9. Mihindu 48 y.

2) Having regard to Mhv. 57, 65 and 74, it is advisable to insert the King-sadhananāyaka Kassapa as a distinct sovereign after Loka.

3) Rājāv. and Pūjāv. do not mention Gajabāhu at all as king.

	Length of reign			Date	Notes
	M.	Rv.	Pv.		
85. (144.) Līlāvatī <sup>1)</sup>	3 — —	3 — —	3 — —	1197—1200	
86. (145.) Sāhasamalla	2 — —	9 — —	2 — —	1200—1202	1200 24
87. (146.) Kalyāṇavatī <sup>2)</sup>	6 — —	6 — —	6 — —	1202—1208	
88. (147.) Dharmmāsokha	1 — —	6 — —	1 — —	1208—1209	
89. (148.) Anūkāṅga Līlāvatī <sup>3)</sup>	— — 17	— — 17	— — 17	1209	
90. (149.) Lokissara (II.) Līlāvatī <sup>4)</sup>	— 9 —	— 5 —	— 5 —	1210—1211	
91. (150.) Parakkamapāṇḍu II.	3 — —	3 — —	3 — —	1211—1214	
92. (151.) Māgha	21 — —	19 — —	21 — —	1214—1235	
93. (152.) Vijayabāhu III.	4 — —	24 — —	24 — —	1232—1236	
94. (153.) Parakkamabāhu II.	35 — —	32 — —	32 — —	1236—1271	1236 25
95. (154.) Vijayabāhu IV.	2 — —	. . .	. . .	1271—1273	
96. (155.) Bhuvanekabāhu I.	11 — —	. . .	. . .	1273—1284	1283 26
97. (156.) Parakkamabāhu III.	. . .	. . .	. . .	1284—1291	
98. (157.) Bhuvanekabāhu II. <sup>5)</sup>	. . .	. . .	. . .	1291—1302	
99. (158.) Parakkamabāhu IV. <sup>6)</sup>	. . .	. . .	. . .		
100. (159.) Bhuvanekabāhu III.	. . .	. . .	. . .		1302—1346
101. (160.) Vijayabāhu V.	. . .	. . .	. . .		
102. (161.) Bhuvanekabāhu IV.	. . .	. . .	. . .	1346—1353	1350/1 27
103. (162.) Parakkamabāhu V.	. . .	. . .	. . .	1348—1360	1354 60 28
104. (163.) Vikkamabāhu V. (III.)	. . .	. . .	. . .	1317—1375	1360/1 29
105. (164.) Bhuvanekabāhu V.	20 — —	. . .	. . .	1360—1391	1385 30
106. (165.) Virabāhu II. (166. Vijayabāhu VI.)	. . .	. . .	. . .	1391—1397	1396 31
(167. Parakkamabāhu)	. . .	. . .	. . .		1405—11 32
107. (168.) Parakkamabāhu VI.	52 — —	52 — —	. . .	1410—1468	33
SSB.					
108. (169.) Jayabāhu II.	. . .	. . .	. . .	1468—1473	
109. (170.) Bhuvanekabāhu VI.	7 — —	7 — —	. . .	1473—1480	1475 34
110. (171.) Parakkamabāhu VII.	. . .	. . .	. . .	1480—1484	
111. (172.) Parakkamabāhu VIII.	. . .	20 — —	. . .	1484—1518	
(173. Parakkamabāhu IX.)	. . .	22 — —	. . .	1506—1528	35

1) The first time Līlāvatī reigned along with Kittī, the second time with Viikkantacāmīnakku, finally alone.

2) Along with Āyasmanta Cāmīpatī.

3) Reigned according to Rr. 24 years. According to Daṭṭadāsirita (Wickr.) Nos. 97 and 98 (156 and 157) reigned at times together. Wickr. reckons the sum total of their reigns at 16 years.

4) Wickr. reckons the beginning of the reign as 1303 A. D.

	Length of reign			Date	Notes
	M.	Rv.	Pv.		
112. (174.) Vijayabāhu VI. (VII.)	.	18?	—	1509–1521	36
113. (175.) Bhuvanekabāhu VII.	.	21	—	1521–1550	37
114. (175 d) Vīravikkrama <sup>1)</sup>	.	45?	—	1542–?	38
115. (175 t) Mūyādhāna <sup>1)</sup> (176. Dharmapāla)	.	70	—	1521–1581	39
116. (177.) Rājusīha I.	.	—	—	1581–1593	
117. (178.) Vimāladharmamā- nariya I.	.	12	—	1592–1601	
118. (179.) Senāratana	7	—	25	—	1601–1635
119. (180.) Rājusīha II.	52	—	—	1635–1687	
120. (181.) Vimāladharmamā- nariya II.	22	—	—	1687–1707	
121. (182.) Vīrapāṇikkama- carindasīha	33	—	—	1707–1739	
122. (183.) Sirivijayanījusīha	8	—	—	1739–1747	
123. (184.) Kittisirīrājusīha	35c	—	—	1747–1782	40
124. (185.) Sirinūḍhīrājusīha	18	—	—	1780–1798	
125. (186.) Sirivikkamarājusīha	18	—	—	1798–1815	

- 1) In the middle of the 16th century a number of princes reigned at the same time in different parts of the Island. The most eminent of these was Māyādhāna, the Māyādhāna of Rv. The Vīravikkrama of Mhs. 92. 6 is probably identical with Kūmāra Baṇḍūra (Rv.). In addition to these Jayavīra Baṇḍūra who wielded power in the Highlands and Rājusīha or Ruyīgam Baṇḍūra are mentioned as contemporaries.

### Residences

1. Mahāvaipsa: Nr. 1: Tambapāṇī. — Nr. 2, 3: Upatissagāma (10. 52). — Nr. 4–58: Anurādhapura.
2. Cūlavāṇīsa: Nr. 1 (59)–15 (73): Anurādhapura. — Nr. 16 (74): Sīhagiri. — Nr. 17 (75)–63 (121): Anurādhapura [Puhattimugura temporary residence of Nr. 46 (104) and Nr. 53 (111); Puhattimugura and Rohaya of Nr. 65 (123)]. — Nr. 67 (125)–73 b (132): Rohaya. — Nr. 74 (133)–92 (151): Palallhinagara. — Nr. 93 (152): Jambuddoṭī. — Nr. 94 (153): Jambuddoṭī (Palallhinagara 88. 29 ff.). — Nr. 95 (154): Palallhinagara. — Nr. 96 (155): Jambuddoṭī (Subhagiri 90. 42). — Nr. 97 (156): Palallhinagara (90. 56). — Nr. 98 (157)–101 (160): Hatthigāmipura. — Nr. 102 (161)–104 (163): Gaṅgāśiripura. — Nr. 105 (164)–113 (175) Jayavīra Baṇḍūra. — Nr. 114 (175 d): Sirivāḍhāna. — Nr. 115 (175 t)–116 (177): Sirivāḍhāna. — Nr. 117 (178)–125 (186): Sirivāḍhāna.

## N O T E S

1. The first traditional synchronism is that of the landing of Vijaya on the Island with the Nirvana of Buddha. Mhv. 6. 47, Dip. 9. 40. It makes the impression of having been purposely invented that the event might thereby have a greater significance. But it would be a mistake if for that reason we were to regard as inventions those single dates referring to later kings (Devānampiyatissa and Vaṭṭagāmī). For here we start not from Vijaya but only from the Nirvana. But the reigns of the kings between Vijaya and Devānampiyatissa seem to have been manipulated in order to obtain the synchronism Vijaya-Nirvana.

2. A seemingly ancient tradition makes Devānampiyatissa a contemporary<sup>1</sup> of the Maurya king Asoka. There is no urgent reason for doubting the fact. According to Dip. 17. 78, Devānampiyatissa was consecrated as king<sup>2</sup> 236 years (that is in the 237th year) after the Nirvana. This figure corresponds to the sum of the years which according to Dip. and Mhv. had elapsed since Vijaya. If we take the date arrived at by Fleet for Buddha's death — 483 B. C. we get the year 247/6 B. C. as Devānampiyatissa's coronation year and the fact of his being a contemporary of Asoka is confirmed.

3. According to Ns., p. 10<sup>14</sup> Valagam Abū came to the throne 439 y. 9 m. 10 d. after the Nirvana<sup>3</sup>. This gives us 43 B. C. This agrees with the statement of Mv. 33. 80 f. as

<sup>1</sup> For further details of nay transl. Mhv., Introd. p. xxxi ff.

<sup>2</sup> Also in Ns., p. 2<sup>19</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> Cf. also EZ. II. 205.

to the foundation of the Abhaya-vihāra<sup>1</sup>. According to the statement in Mhv. the foundation took place 217 y. 10 m. 10 d. after that of the Mahāvihāra the date of which is, according to Fleet, in May 246. Therefore the Abhayagiri-vihāra was founded in March 28 B.C., after Vaṭṭagāmī had regained the kingdom.

4. According to Rv. a famine called *būmini-sāya* took place under Coranāga and lasted three years.<sup>2</sup> This is said to have coincided with the beginning of the Saka era 78 A. D. = 622 A. B. The statement cannot be reconciled with the other events of the chronology. It would seem that the tradition about this famine was uncertain, for it is placed by Pv. 19<sup>3</sup> in the reign of Vaṭṭagāmī.

5. For the end of the reign of Mahāsena and therewith of the so-called Great Dynasty Rv. and Rr. agree in giving 814 y. (? Pv. 846) 9 m. 25 d. after the Nirvana. Ns. 14<sup>4</sup> reckons the beginning of the reign as 818 A. B., so that with a reign of 27 years the end would fall in 845 A. B. This seems to me in fact one of those single dates which rest on a sure traditional basis. This is also easy to understand. The tradition was that of the Bhikkhus of the Mahāvihāra and for them the death of Mahāsena meant the end of a period of persecution and the beginning of a new period of prosperity. In Mhv. trsl. p. xxxviii I have calculated the year of Mahāsena's death as 352 A. D. The difference between it and that of Wickr. and S. can be adjusted by assuming that the round numbers of a reign usually include some extra months.

6. I refer the reader to the Chinese account mentioned on p. V which makes Sirimeghavajña a contemporary of the Indian king Samudragupta (326-375 A. D.).

7. Fa-hian comes to Ceylon 411-412 A. D. A thera mentioned by him is perhaps identical with the Mahādharmnakathin named in Mhv. 37, 175 (cf. note to the passage) as living

<sup>1</sup> See Mhv. transl., p. xxxiv f.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. also SERAVERATNE, JRAS. C. B. xxiii, No. 67 (1914), p. 216.

under Buddhadāsa (AYRTON, JRAS. 1911, p. 1142). Of course this therā may have survived Buddhadāsa, as the chronology seems to indicate.

8. For Mahānāma's reign Chinese sources furnish us with an exact date A. D. 428. See above p. V ff. For the arrival of Buddhaghosa in the reign of Mahānāma tradition furnishes us with a date which assuming 544/3 as the year of the Nirvana, yields 412/3 A. D.

9. For Kumāradhātusena's (Kumārdas) reign a Chinese notice mentioned by TENNENT<sup>1</sup> will serve. It says: "In the year 515 on the occasion of Kumara Das raising the chatta, an envoy was despatched with tribute to China." Unfortunately TENNENT does not state whether the name of the Sinhalese king is mentioned in the Chinese account. Possibly it is a deduction of his own. At any rate according to my own calculation, the year 515 would fall in the beginning of the reign of Kumāradhātusena.

10. A further Chinese notice quoted by L. (see p. 91 f.) offers difficulties. According to this, an embassy of the Sinhalese king Kia-ehe Kia-lo-ha-li-ya brought tribute to the Chinese Court in the y. 527 A. D. As a rule Kia-che is the transcription of the name Kassapa. But it is impossible that this could be Kassapa I. since he reigned before Kumāradhātusena (see note 9). S. Levi has already pointed out that the second name Kia-lo-hu-li-ya might refer to Silākāla (Ambareraya Salamevan). It should be noted too, that Silākāla was the son-in-law of Upatissa II. (III.) and that according to Mhv. 41. 8 ff., this king had a son called Kassapa who was Silākāla's most dangerous rival. It might therefore be assumed that the Chinese account had confused these two persons or that the Sinhalese tradition had made out of one Kassapa Silākāla two individuals.

11. For Silākāla we have one more single date handed down in the Ns. p. 17<sup>28</sup>: 1088 A. B. = 544/5 A. D. Accord-

<sup>1</sup> Ceylon, 2nd ed. I, p. 596.

ing to Wickr. this date refers to the introduction of the *Vetulla Canon* (*dhammadhatu*)<sup>1</sup> which according to Ns., Rr. and Mhvs., took place in the twelfth year of the king's reign. This does not quite agree with our chronology, for according to Ns. the beginning of Silākāla's reign would fall in 532/3 A. D. (instead of 524)<sup>2</sup>. If we might assume an error in the tradition and read 1080 instead of 1088 A. B. there would be complete agreement.

12. According to Mhvs. 42. 44 ff., the king of Kaliṅga came to Ceylon in the reign of Aggabodhi II. and entered the Order under the guidance of the Thera Jotipāla. According to H. W. CODRINGTON (HC. p. 35, 51) this king of Kaliṅga had been driven out by Pulakesin II. of the Cālukya dynasty who had seized the kingdom of Kaliṅga. This took place according to JONVEAU-DUBREUIL, 609 A. D. This year must therefore fall within the reign of Aggabodhi II.

13. According to Mhvs. 47. 33 ff., Mānavamma tries in vain to wrest the dominion over Ceylon from King Dāṭhopatissa II. He is helped in this by his friend Narasiha at whose court in Jambudipa he had taken refuge. According to H. p. 557, this is the Pallava king Narasimhavarman I. who reigned 630–668 A. D. This enables us to fix an approximate date for Dāṭhopatissa II.

14. From Chinese sources (L.) we know that in the y. 718/9 a Chinese pilgrim Vajraboīhi visited Ceylon and was received with honour by King Chi-li Chi-lo. The name of the king as it is given here, may very well be an abbreviation of Siri-Silāmegha(vappa). L. suggests Mānavamma, who also had the biruda of Silāmegha. AYROX (Ceylon Notes and Queries II, Jan. 1914, p. xxvii ff.) quite rightly objects to this for chronological reasons. But his own identification with Aggahodhi VI. also offers difficulties with my calculation as well as with that of WICKR and S. I suggest Kassapa III, No. 43 (101).

<sup>1</sup> See my transl. Cūlav. I, note to 41. 37.

<sup>2</sup> According to Rr. 1088 A. B. = 852 (sic!) after the introduction of Buddha's doctrine, was the date for Silākāla's ascent of the throne.

As we know, the biruda of Silāmegha alternates with that of Sirisampghabodhi. Since Kassapa III. was the second predecessor of Aggabodhi VI. who was certainly called Silāmegha (Mhvs. 48. 42), he is almost sure to have had the same surname, though this may not be expressly stated. All we know of him is that he was a very pious prince (Mhvs. 48. 20 ff.).

15. There is no difficulty about the two embassies of King Chi-lo-mi-kia to the Chinese Court in the years 742 and 746. That king was Aggabodhi VI. Silāmegha, No. 45 (103).

16. Inscriptions of the 1st and 16th years (according to my calculation therefore 896, 912) of the reign of Kassapa IV., No. 56 (114) in WICKREMASINGHE, EZ. II. 9 ff., I. 200 ff.; II. C. P. Bell, Anurādhapura, 7th Progress Report 1891 (= S. P. XIII. 1896) p. 60.

17. According to Mhvs. 52. 70 ff., Kassapa V. undertakes with the Pāṇḍyas an expedition against the Colas. It is unsuccessful. There is evidently an allusion to this (H. p. 525 f.) in the Udayēndiram inscription of the 15th year of the Cola king Parāntaka I. == 921/2. In it he boasts of his victory over the Pāṇḍyas and over an army come from Laṅkā. In an inscription, discussed by RAI BAHADUR VENKAYYA, of the 12th year of the same king's reign this twofold success is also mentioned.

18. Under Udaya IV. (III.) No. 62 (120), there was an incursion of the Colas into Ceylon who wished to seize the regalia of the Pāṇḍya king deposited there under Dappula IV. (V.) (Mhvs. 53. 9, 40 ff.). Anurādhapura was taken it is true, but the main object was not attained, as Udaya had taken the treasures to Rohaṇa for safety. According to H. 524 f. this event took place in the last year of the reign of Parāntaka I., and R. B. VENKAYYA has proved that it is only in his latest inscriptions of 943/4 to 947/8 that this king calls himself "Conqueror of Ceylon".

19. According to Mhvs. 54. 11 ff. the troops of the Vallahha king made an unsuccessful incursion into Ceylon under Ma-

hind IV. No. 64 (122). CODRINGTON (HC. p. 39, 53) supposes this to be the Cola prince Parāntaka II. whose general was defeated in 960. This date therefore falls in the reign of No. 64 (122).

20. Of Mahinda V. No. 66 (124) it is related in Mbvs. 55. 16 that in the 36th year of his reign the Colas carried off him, his queen and all his treasure to India. II. 522 ff. assumes that this king was Rājendra-Cola who boasts of having captured the crowns of the king and of the queens of Ceylon. He first mentions the conquest of Ceylon in 1017/8 but not in the inscriptions of the foregoing year. The year 1017 is therefore that of Mahinda's capture.

21. The Cola king Rājadhīrājadeva relates (II. 520 f.) in an inscription of the year 1046 that he had deprived 4 kings of Ceylon of their crowns: a) Vikramabāhu, b) Vikramapāṇḍya, c) Virāśalāmegha and d) Śrivallabhamadana-rāja. This clearly refers to events related in Mbvs. 56. Here the following kings are mentioned as being at war with the Colas: 1) Vikkambāhu, No. 67 (125) = a<sup>1</sup>, 2) Kittī, 3) Mahālānakittī, 4) Vikkamapāṇḍu = b, 5) Jagatipāla, 6) Parakkama. Of 3, 5, and 6 it is distinctly stated that they were slain in battle with the Colas, of 3 it is said besides that his crown fell as booty to the Damilas. Nos. 1 and 4 however, whose names are clearly recognizable in Rājadhīrāja's inscription, ended otherwise: No. 1 died of a disease, No. 4 in combat with No. 5. Still their crowns may have been among the booty. At any rate the year 1046 falls in that period; the events may have reached their conclusion about 1050.

22. For Vijayabāhu I. No. 74 (133) to Parakkama-bāhu I. No. 78 (137) I refer the reader to WICKREMASINGHE's excellent treatment of the subject in EZ. I, p. 122 ff. and II. 205 ff.

<sup>1</sup> I should now prefer to read in Mbvs. 56. 6 *Devanagarum* instead of *dō* and translate "he betook himself to Devanagara (Dondra) and entered the company of the gods."

23. For Parakkamabābu's campaign against Rāmañña (Mhvs. 76, 10 ff.) cf. H. C. P. BELL, Rep. on the Kégalla Dist., p. 73 ff. It took place in the 12th year of his reign. The Rāmañña prince Bhuvanāditta named in the Devanagala inscription, is identified by BELL with the king Narabaditsi-tsithu who reigned 1167—1201 (PHAYRE, History of Burma, p. 50, 28t, 289).

24. The coronation day of Sāhasamalla ist the earliest absolutely certain date in Sinhalese history. In the Polonnaruva inscription of this king (EZ. II, p. 219 ff.) the date given for the event is Wednesday (*bādā*), the 12th day of the light half of the month Binera (Angust-Sept.), after the expiration of 1743 y., 3 m. and 27 days of the Buddha era. FLEET (JRAS. 1909, p. 327, 33t) has calculated the date as Wednesday, 23rd August, 1200 A. D.

25. According to the Attanagaluvajṇa Parakkamabāhu II., No. 94 (153), came to the throne in the year 1824 after the Saṃbodhi = 1779 A. B. = 1235/6 A. D., according to S. 155 = 1296 A. D. (reckoned from 483 B. C., not from 544/3 B. C., as the year of the Nirvana).

26. According to Mhvs. 90, 43 ff. the Tooth Relic came in the reign of Bhuvanekabāhu I., No. 96 (155), into the possession of the Pāḍiya king Kulaśekhara. This king reigned (H.) 1268—1308 A. D. Under Bhuvanekabāhu's successor Parakkamabāhu III. the relic is restored by friendly negotiation. COURTINGTON (JRAS. C. B. xxviii, No. 72, 1919, p. 82 ff.) refers to Maqrīzī's account of a Sinhalese embassy to the Egyptian Court in the year 1283 A. D. and identifies the name of the Sinhalese king mentioned in the account with that of Bhuvanekabāhu I.

27. For Bhuvanekabāhu IV., No. 102 (161), the Laṅkātilaka inscription is important. See B. GUNASEKARA, JRAS. C. B. X, No. 34 (1887) p. 83 ff.; H. C. P. BELL, Kégalla Dist., p. 92; WICKR. 29 f. It gives Śaka 1264 = 1342 A. D. as the year of his ascent of the throne. According to Mhvs. 90, 108 (also Ns., Nar.) 1894 A. B. = 1350/1 was the 4th year of his reign,

the beginning of the reign therefore 1346/7. The difference is probably due to the fact that his appointment as *yuvārāja* took place in the y. 1342, this event being often reckoned as the beginning of the reign. According to CODRINGTON (II.C. p. 83) No. 102 (161) reigned at least until 1353/4.

28. Cf. the preceding note also for Parakkamabāhu V., No. 103 (162). According to the *Hapugastenne* inscription (JRAS. C. B. xxii, No. 65, 1912, p. 362) the 11th year of his reign was = Śaka 1281 expired = 1359/60 A. D. The first year of his reign would be accordingly Śaka 1270 = 1348/9 A. D. But at that time No. 102 (161) was reigning and his successor probably *yuvārāja*. In the *Vegiri-devale* inscription (WICKR.) Parakkamabāhu V. in 1351/2 still calls himself *ūpā*.

29. The *Vigulavatta* inscription (H. C. P. BELL, Kégalla Dist., p. 78) gives Śaka 1282 = 1360/1 A. D. as the 4th year of the reign of Vikramabāhu IV., (III.) No. 104 (163). His reign would accordingly have begun in Śaka 1278 = 1356/7 A. D. This agrees with the *Niyangampātāya* inscription (WICKR. 31) which gives the 17th year of his reign as 1916 A. B. = 1373/4 A. D.

30. For Bhuvanekabāhu V., No. 105 (164), we have several dates. Cf. S. 174 f., WICKR. 33 f. The most important are: a) according to Ns. 1929 A. B. = 1385/6 A. D. was the 14th year of his reign which makes 1371/2 that of his coronation. — b) according to Mhv. 91. 13 (Ns. also) he is succeeded after 20 years (thus in 1391) by Vīrabāhu. — c) according to the *Vegiri-devale* inscription, Bh. V. made an endowment in the 30th year of his reign. He must therefore have lived at least 10 years after 1391 and claimed the royal dignity. Mhv. 91. 13 would not agree with this if we were to assume the reading *kaleko* (not *sāleko* with Col. Ed.); for the passage would then state that only after his (i. e. Bhuvanekabāhu's) death (*nībhīte kālc*) Vīrabāhu of the Alakeśvara family, seized the power.

31. Ns. 30<sup>th</sup> Council under the leadership of Dharmakitti 1939 A. B. expired = 1396 A. D.

32. Vijayabāhu VI., No. (166), is not mentioned in the Mhv. The chronicle ignoring the tragic end of the Alagakkonāras,

jumps over to Parakkama VI. I refer the reader to the note to 91. 3 of my translation. Dates according to L. (JRAS. C. B. xxiv, No. 68, 1915-6, p. 96 ff.): 1405, arrival of the Chinese Teheng-houo in Ceylon; 1409 Teheng-houo comes again to Ceylon and carries the king (No. 166) captive to China. The king is set free again in 1411 or 1412, but murdered the night after his return.

33. For Parakkamabāhu VI., No. 107 (168), we have again several dates. The most important are the following: a) ascent of the throne according to Mhv. 91. 15 as well as the inscription of Embekke-devale (H. C. P. BELL, Ceylon Notes and Queries, viii, Dec. 1916, p. cxxxii ff.): 1953 A. B. = 1409/10 A. D.) (according to other sources and to WICKR. 2 years or 5 years later). — b) Chinese accounts (in TENNENT, Ceylon I, p. 670 ff.), that in the year 1459 A. D. a king of Ceylon Pu-la-ko-ma Ba-zac La-ch'a had for the last time sent tribute to China. The king was evidently No. 107 (168). In the years 1416 and 1421 A. D. it is even related that the King of Ceylon brought the tribute in person.

34. With regard to the date for Bhuvanekabāhu VI., No. 109 (170), the Kalyani inscription of King Rāmādhipati of Pegu is important in that it mentions his embassy to King Bhuvanekabāhu, the son of Parakkamabāhu, in the Śaka year 837<sup>1</sup> = 2019 A. B. = 1476 A. D. Cf. CODRINGTON, HC. p. 93; 100; TAW SEIK KO, Indian Antiquary xxii, 1893, p. 11 ff., 29 ff. &c.

35. According to the Kelaniya inscription (AIC. No. 162) Parakkamabāhu IX., No. (173), ascended the throne in 2051 A. B.<sup>2</sup> = 1507/8 A. D. The 12th year of his reign fell according to the Munessaram Sannasa, in 2060 A. B., giving 1504/5 for his ascent of the throne, thus a difference of three years.

36. According to the Dondra inscription (H. C. P. BELL, Kēgalla Dist. p. 85 ff.) the Śaka year 1432 = 1510 A. D. fell in the year after the 4th year of the reign of King Vijayabāhu VI.,

<sup>1</sup> Thus according to the modern Burmese era which begins in March 639 A. D. See C. MABEL DUFF, Chronology of India, p. 51.

<sup>2</sup> WICKR. 42 would prefer to read 2049 (*ekun panas* instead of *ck panas*) This would give 1503/6 A. D.

No. 112 (174), his ascent of the throne would fall accordingly in 1505 A. D.

37. P. E. PERIS, *The Date of Bhuvaneka Bāhū VII.* (JRAS. C. B. xxii, No. 65, 1912, p. 267 ff.) comes to the conclusion that No. 113 (175) reigned 1521–1551 A. D. .

38. Vīravikkama, No. 164 (175 d), came to the throne (according to Mhv. 92. 6) 2083 A. B. = 1541/2 A. D.

39. Māyādhanu (Mayadunne), No. 115 (175 b), died according to Rājalekhana (WICKER.), Śaka 1503 = 1581/2 A. D.; Rājasīha I., No. 116 (177), according to RV. Śaka 1514 = 1592/3 A. D.; Vimaladhammasuriya I., No. 117 (178), according to RV. Śaka 1525 = 1603/1 A. D.; he came to the throne (Mhv. 94. 5) 2135 A. B. = 1591/2 A. D.; Senāratana, No. 118 (179) died according to Rājalekhana (WICKER.) Śaka 1557 = 1635/6 A. D. and Rājasīha II., No. 119 (180), Śaka 1609 = 1687/8 A. D.; Vimaladhammasuriya II., No. 120 (181), Śaka 1629 = 1707/8 A. D.

40. Kittisirirājasīha, No. 123 (184), ascended the throne (Mhv. 99. 2) 2290 A. B. = 1746/7 A. D. He died Śaka 1703 = 1781/2 A. D. He sends embassies to Siam (Mhv. 100. 59 and 91) 2293 and 2296 A. B. = 1749/50 and 1752/3 A. D. Lastly Mhv. 100. 282 gives 2301 A. B. = 1757/8 A. D. as the date for the consecration of the rebuilt Rajata-vihāra.

## Contents of Chapters 73-101

### Chapter 73

Parakkamabāhu I. begins the fulfilment of his task as ruler (v. 1-10). — Benevolence to the poor, reform and conciliation of the Order (v. 11-22). — Buildings such as alms-halls and hospitals (v. 23-39). — Medical care (v. 40-54). — Construction of the city walls (v. 55-60). — The royal palace and neighbouring buildings (v. 61-94). — Laying out of the Nandana and Dipuyyāna gardens with their various buildings (v. 95-123). — Building of the temple of the Tooth Relic by Mahinda and of the Golden thūpa by Queen Rūpavatī (v. 124-147). — Building of streets, of three suburbs with vihāras and of fourteen city gates (v. 148-164).

### Chapter 74

Restoration of Anurādhapura (v. 1-14). — Foundation of Parakkamapura, administrative measures (v. 15-21). — Rebellion in Rohaya (v. 22-39). — Itakkha sent to Rohaya (v. 40-43). — A rising of the mercenaries in Koṭṭhasāra is suppressed (v. 44-49). — Rakkha's campaign (v. 50-66). — Bhūta joins him, the two generals continue the campaign (v. 67-80). — The flank at Lokagalla secured, advance to Uddhanadvāra (v. 81-88). — Expedition against Dīghavāpi (v. 89-98). — Parakkamabāhu issues strict commands to take the sacred reliques, Tooth and Alms-bowl, from the rebels. Their capture after heavy fighting at Uruvelā (v. 99-126). — Sūkarabhātu escapes from prison and flees to Rohaya, Mañju sent in pursuit of him (v. 127-132). — Renewed fighting with the rebels (v. 133-142). — Death of Rakkha (v. 143-152). — The

rebels gather fresh courage, battles in the Guttasālā district (v. 153-157). — At the command of the King the relics are sent to Pulatthinagara; Mañju who negotiates their dispatch, secures the rear of the army by an expedition to the Dīghavāpi district (v. 158-180). — Parakkamabāhu brings the relics with great ceremony to the capital (v. 181-248).

### Chapter 75

Combats in Dīghavāpi-mandala (v. 1-18). — Advance of the Kañcukināyaka Rakkha along the coast by way of Gimhatittha and Mahāvālnagāma as far as Mūlavarathalī (v. 19-68). — Expedition of the Damilādhikārin Rakkha starts from Donivagga (v. 69-97). — Decisive battles, finally at Mahāsenagāma, capture of Mahānāgahula and union with the other Rakkha (v. 98-120). — Fresh combats in Khaṇḍjavagga and Mahāgāma (v. 121-140). — Feigned retreat to Pūgadāṇḍāvāṭa and decisive actions against the rebels (v. 141-148). — Mañju joined in Kumbhāgāma. Rakkha's troops capture Dvādasasahassaka and destroy the rebels there, Mañju's soldiers succeed in taking Queen Singalī prisoner (v. 149-181). — Stern punishment of the guilty, clemency towards those who submit (v. 185-193). — Victorious return of the army to Pulatthinagara (v. 194-204).

### Chapter 76

Risings in Rohinī and Mahātittha (v. 1-9). — Insolence of the ruler of Rāmañña (v. 10-35). — Parakkamabāhu determines to make war on him and prepares for the campaign (v. 36-52). — Victories in Rāmañña and conclusion of peace (v. 53-75). — Succession disputes in Madhurā. Parakkamabāhu petitioned for aid by the Pañḍu king, sends an army under Lañkāpura to Southern India (v. 76-85). — Landing and victorious actions with Kulasekhara's generals, occupation of Rāmissara (v. 86-101). — Restoration of the Ratanavāluka-cetiya in Anurādhapura by captive Damijas; on the completion of the work Parakkamabāhu celebrates a great festival (v. 102-120). — Continuation of the war in Southern India;

combats with Kulasekhara himself at the fortified camp of Parakkamapura opposite Rāmissara and further victorious actions (v. 121-192). — Prince Virapāṇḍu, the lawful heir to the throne, joins Laṅkāpura; capture of Madhurā (v. 193-219). — Fresh combats with Kulasekhara's generals which end with the taking of Semponmāri (v. 220-266). — Continuation of the campaign; Netṭuru the key position of the Sihalas (v. 267-290). — Reinforcements arrive from Laṅkā under Jagadvijaya. The town of Rājinā finally taken by force from Kulasekhara, he himself escapes (v. 291-334).

### Chapter 77

Kulasekhara renews the fight. Laṅkāpura subjugates several of his subordinate leaders and gains a victory at Ponaamarāvati (v. 1-24). — Virapāṇḍu consecrated king in Mudhorā (v. 25-31). — Continuation of the war against Kulasekhara who finally seeks refuge in the Coḷa country (v. 32-70). — Further actions culminate again in a fight for Ponaamarāvati (v. 71-95). — Laṅkāpura sends the booty to Ceylon, Parakkamabāhu founds the village of Pañjuvijaya in memory of the successful campaign (v. 96-106).

### Chapter 78

Second account of Parakkamabāhu's reform of the Church. Malūkkassapa head of the Council (v. 1-30). — The King's ecclesiastical buildings: Jetavana (with Tivānika house, circular temple for the Tooth Relic etc.), Ālāhana pariveṇa (with Laṅkātilaka, Baddhasimāpāsāda etc.) (v. 31-55). — Fixing of the boundaries by the King (v. 56-70). — Pacchimārāma, Uttarārāma, Mahāthūpa (v. 70-78). — Vihāras in the suburbs and the Kapila-vihāra (v. 79-95). — Restoration of the buildings in Anurādhapura (v. 96-109).

### Chapter 79

The laying out of gardens (v. 1-12). — Erection or restoration of thūpas and other sacred buildings in Rājaratṭha

(v. 13-22). — Building or restoration of reservoirs and irrigation canals (v. 23-69). — Similar works in Rohaya (v. 70-84). — Conclusion (v. 85-86).

### Chapter 80

Vijayabāhu II. reigns piously (v. 1-14). — He is murdered by Mahinda VI. who is followed by Kittinissaūka, famed for his pious foundations (v. 15-26). — Brief reigns of Virabāhu, Vikkamabāhu, Cūḍagaṅga, Līlāvatī (with Kitti), Sāhasamalla, Kalyāṇavatī (with Āyasmanta) (v. 27-41). — There follow Dharmāsoka, Anikāṅga, Līlāvatī (with Vikkantacāmīnakka), Lokissara, Līlāvatī (with Parakkama) and Parakkamapāṇḍu II. (v. 42-53). — Tyrannical reign of Māgha (54-80).

### Chapter 81

After a time of great confusion Vijayabāhu III. takes over the government in Jambuddoṭī (v. 1-16). — He fetches the relics of the Tooth and the Alms-bowl which had been hidden by the theras on the Kotthumala mountain and builds for them a safe sanctuary on the Billasela mountain (v. 17-39). — He has sacred texts transcribed, builds vihāras and restores decayed buildings (v. 40-63). — He carefully educates his two sons Parakkamabāhu and Bhuvanekabāhu and appoints the former as his successor (v. 64-80).

### Chapter 82

Parakkamabāhu II. brings the Tooth Relic to Jambuddoṭī, builds a temple for it and makes three urns as receptacles for it (v. 1-14). — Miraculous apparition (v. 15-49). — The setting up of the relic accompanied by a great festival (v. 50-53).

### Chapter 83

Benevolent reign of the King (v. 1-7). — The Damītas conquered and driven out (v. 8-35). — Incursion of the Jāvakas; they are defeated by the King's nephew, Virabāhu (v. 36-52).

### Chapter 84

Restoration of property in the Island according to former conditions (v. 1-6). — Reform of the Order, invitation to foreign theras like Dhanimakitti (v. 7-16). — The King builds monasteries, sees to the better training of the bhikkhus, celebrates great festivals for the Order, honours eminent theras and bestows abundant gifts on the bhikkhus (v. 17-44).

### Chapter 85

Parakkamabāhu II. builds in Sirivadhanā a vihāra and has the two sacred relics brought thither from Jambuddoṇī with great ceremony (v. 1-36). — Offerings to the bhikkhus and a sacrificial festival for the Buddha (v. 37-58). — Building of the Billasela-vihāra and other monasteries and restoration of decayed structures in Kulyāṇī, Hatthavanagalla, Devanagara. Veneration of a relic of Mahākassapa in Bhīmatittha (v. 59-89). — Veneration of the Tooth Relic in the Sirivijayasundara-vihāra and other meritorious works (v. 90-98). — Great kāṭhina offering and sacrificial festival (v. 99-117). — Pilgrimage to the Sumanakūṭa (v. 118-122).

### Chapter 86

The King has all kinds of meritorious works performed by his minister Devapattirāja (v. 1-17). — Making of a road from Gaṅgāśripura to Sumanakūṭa and buildings on the summit (v. 18-36). — Embellishment of the Hatthavanagalla-vihāra and road-building at Bhīmatittha (v. 37-43). — Laying out of a large cocoplantation, building of the village Mahālauhagaccha. Devapattirāja honoured by the King (v. 44-58).

### Chapter 87

A threatened famine prevented by the exhibition of the Tooth Relic (v. 1-13). — The King gathers round him his five sons and his sister's son and gives them advice (v. 14-38). — With the consent of the bhikkhu community he transfers the government to his eldest son, Vijayabāhn (v. 39-74).

### Chapter 88.

Vijayabāhu chooses Virabāhu as his intimate friend (v. 1-9). — He builds a temple for the Tooth Relic (v. 10-17) and divides the protection of the country among his brothers (v. 18-28). — Affection of the people (v. 29-42). — Vijayabāhu's buildings erected during his journeys through the country (v. 43-61). — War with Candabhānu (v. 62-76). — Buildings in Subhagiri and Anurādhapura (v. 77-89). — Restoration of Pulatthinagara (v. 90-121).

### Chapter 89

Parakkamabāhu consecrated king in Pulatthinagara (v. 1-10). — Ceremonial transference of the Tooth and Bowl reliques from Jambuddoṇī to the above town (v. 11-16). — Great Upasampadā ceremony in Sahassatittha (v. 47-63). — Distinction conferred on deserving bhikkhus (v. 64-71).

### Chapter 90

End of Vijayabāhu IV. (v. 1-3). — Bhuvanekabāhu I. escapes from the rebel Mitta to Subhagiri (v. 4-11). — Mitta murdered in Jambuddoṇī by rebel mercenaries who immediately support the King (v. 12-30). — Establishment of his dominion and meritorious works of Bhuvanekabāhu I. (v. 31-42). — Incursion of Āriyacakavattin who carries off the Tooth Relic to the Pañju country (v. 43-47). — Parakkamabāhu III. regains the relic by negotiation (v. 48-55). — He reigns in Pulatthinagara (v. 56-58). — Bhuvanekabāhu II. reigns as pious king (v. 59-63). — Parakkamabāhu IV. builds a temple for the Tooth Relic and celebrates a festival for it (v. 64-79). — Literary activity of the King. His buildings (v. 80-104). — Bhuvanekabāhu III., Vijayabāhu V., Bhuvanekabāhu IV. (v. 105-9).

### Chapter 91

Parakkamabāhu V. and Viikkamabāhu V. Alagakkonāra founds Jayavādīhanakotī (v. 1-8). — Bhuvanekabāhu V., Virabāhu II. (v. 9-14). — Parakkamabāhu VI. His meritorious works (v. 15-36).

### Chapter 92

Jayabāhu II., Bhuvanekabāhu VI., Pandita Parakkamabāhu VII., Vira Parakkamabāhu VIII., Vijayabāhu VI., Bhuvanekabāhu VII. (v. 1-5). — Vīravikkama (in Kandy) earns merit by offerings to the Order. Pilgrimages, festivals etc. (v. 6-31).

### Chapter 93

Mūyādhanu (v. 1-3). — Rājasīha I. (in Sītāvaka) is converted to Hinduism and persecutes the Buddhist priests (v. 4-17).

### Chapter 94

Vimaladhammasuriya I. in Goa (v. 1-6). — He brings the Tooth Relic from the Labujagāma-vihāra to Kandy and builds a temple for it (v. 7-14). — He summons bhikkhus from Arakan and furthers the Order (v. 15-23).

### Chapter 95

Senāratana saves the Tooth Relic from the Portuguese and proceeds to Mahiyangana where a son is born to him, with significant signs (v. 1-16). — Returning to Kandy, he divides the realm by lot among his three sons (v. 17-26).

### Chapter 96

Rājasīha II. dispossesses his brothers and becomes sole king (v. 1-6). — He is distinguished by personal courage (v. 7-10). Successful fights with the Portuguese (v. 11-37). — Vigorous rule in the interior (v. 38-42).

### Chapter 97

Vimaladhammasuriya II. builds a temple for the Tooth Relic and furthers the Order by the admission of monks from Arakan (v. 1-15). — Pilgrimages and other meritorious works (v. 16-22). — Narindasiha lays the Order under obligations, undertakes pilgrimages, performs other pious works and builds the new temple for the Tooth Relic (v. 23-47). — The sāmañera Sarayamkara takes the Tooth Relic under his protection and at the instigation of the King, performs several important works (v. 48-62).

### Chapter 98

Vijayarājasīha marries princesses from Madhurā who embrace Buddhism and are its devoted disciples (v. 1-20). — The King's relations with Sarayamkara (v. 21-24). — Veneration of the Tooth Relic with great festivities (v. 25-57). — Sacrificial festival of lamps (v. 58-64). — The building of vihāras and the embellishment of Sirivaddhana (v. 65-70). — Sermons (v. 71-79). — Banishment of the Parāṇgis, visit to the sacred places (v. 80-86). — Embassy to Ayojjhā in order to fetch bhikkhus. The King's end (v. 87-97).

### Chapter 99

Kittisirirājasīha reigns piously and seeks to spread the Buddhist doctrine (v. 1-24). — Honours conferred on the bhikkhus from Rakkhaṇa and furtherance of the Order (v. 25-35), — Pilgrimage to the sacred places (v. 36-41). — Great festivities in Sirivaddhana, specially in honour of the Tooth Relic (v. 42-74). — Continuation of the Mahāvaipsa (v. 75-80). — Friendly relations of the King and his brothers who like himself, are believing Buddhists (v. 81-107). — Military embroilment with the Olandas who take Sirivaddhana, but suffer a severe defeat (v. 108-139). — The Tooth Relic which had been concealed from the enemy is brought back to the town (v. 140-149). — The Olandas sue for peace (v. 150-167). — The King cares for the welfare of the Order (v. 168-182).

## Chapter 100

Veneration of the Tooth Relic by the King who makes large offerings to it and celebrates festivals (v. 1-43). — Reform of the Order, embassy to Ayojjhā to King Dhammadīka who sends bhikkhus under the leadership of the thera Upāli to Laṅkā where they are received with great festivities (v. 44-90). — The King himself visits the monks from Sāminda in the Pupphārāma where dwellings are assigned them and instigates the holding of an Upasampadā ceremony (v. 91-96). — Furtherance of the newly established Order; the envoys who had accompanied the monks from Sāminda return thither (v. 97-135). — Dhammadīka again sends bhikkhus to Laṅkā. Death of Upāli (v. 136-148). — Envoys whom Kittisiri had sent to Dhammadīka return with rich gifts (v. 149-170). — Efficacy of the Siamese monks in Laṅkā; their return to Siam (v. 171-179). — The making of a Buddha image in Sirivadādhana and ceremony of the Festival of the eyes (v. 180-200). — Rebuilding of the Gaṅgūrāma and furnishing of the monastery (v. 201-215). — Foundation of a monastery in Kuyḍasālā (v. 216-219). — Restoration of the cult on the Sumanakūṭa (v. 220-228). — Restoration of destroyed monasteries and their property, namely of the Rajata-vihāra, which is described in detail (v. 229-292). — Further meritorious works of the King and of his minister Suvaṇṇagāma (v. 293-301).

## Chapter 101.

Sirirājādhirūjasiha reigns piously (v. 1-18). — Sirivakkamarūjasiha at first a pious prince, becomes a tyrannical monster. The people rise against him and banish him to the mainland. The British take possession of the kingdom (v. 19-29).

RAMA VARMA RESEARCH INSTITUTE.  
TRICHUR, COCHIN STATE.

25 JUN 1931

## CHAPTER LXXII

### ACCOUNT OF THE REBUILDING OF PULATTHINAGARA

Now when the Ruler Parakkama had accomplished his 1 consecration as king, he the wise one, best among those who understand what is good (for the people), thought thus: "By 2 those kings of old who turned aside from the trouble of furthering the laity and the Order — who through lust, hatred, fear and delusion went wofully astray<sup>1</sup>, who caused great evil 3 by the gathering of immeasurable taxes and the like — has this people aforetime been grievously harassed. May it henceforth be happy, and may the Order of the great Sage — long sullied by admixture with a hundred false doctrines, rent 5 asunder by the schism of the three fraternities and flooded with numerous unscrupulous bhikkhus whose sole task is the 6 filling of their bellies — (that Order) which though five thousand years have not yet passed, is in a state of decay, once more attain stability. Of those people of noble birth who here and 7 there have been ruined, I would fain by placing them again in their rightful position, become the protector in accordance with tradition. Those in search of help I would fain support 8 by letting like a cloud overspreading the four quarters of the earth<sup>2</sup>, a rich rain of gifts pour continually down upon them.

<sup>1</sup> *Chanda, dosa, bhaya, moha* are called A. II. 18 *cattāri agatigamanāni*. Cf. *chanlāgatiṇī* (*dosāgatiṇī* etc.) *gautamī* D. III 133<sup>21</sup>, *chaudā agatiṇī ga-*  
*cchati* Nett. 44<sup>1</sup> etc.

<sup>2</sup> The Buddhist cosmology recognises four chief continents. Cf. Vv. 20, 10 *catummāṃ mahādīpānāṃ issurāṇī yo'dha kārāye*. S. V. 343<sup>20</sup> *catummāṃ dīpānāṃ pañilābhā*. In contrast to these are the 2000 small dīpas by which they are surrounded (VvCo 104<sup>11</sup>). In the Gal-vihāra inscription

9 All this was (for me) while with arduous struggle I sought  
 10 the royal dignity, the absolutely preconceived result. Now is  
 the time to carry out what I have wished." In consideration  
 of this he bestowed office on those who deserved it<sup>1</sup>.

11 Hereupon he had the drums beaten and those in search  
 of help called together and he allotted them yearly a large  
 12 alms equal in weight to his body. Then the Ruler in order  
 to promote the furtherance of the Order, assembled the great  
 13 community dwelling in the three fraternities. Further he called  
 together many distinguished teachers learned in the methods  
 14 of discriminating between failure and non-failure, and as he  
 himself was the foremost among those versed in the rules of the  
 Order and acquainted with right and wrong, he could distin-  
 15 guish the genuine from the false ascetics. Further being in  
 virtue of his impartiality free from liking and disliking, and  
 as a result of his unweariedness arduously active day and  
 16 night, he cured like a clever, expert physician who distin-  
 17 guishes between curable and incurable disease, those which  
 were curable and set aside those which were incurable by the  
 method prescribed by the rules of the Order, free in his de-  
 18 cisions from error. From the days of King Vattagāmī-  
 Abhaya<sup>2</sup> the three fraternities had lost their unity, despite  
 19 the vast efforts made in every way by former kings down to

the Buddha is compared to a rain-cloud which pours its blessing over the four continents. These continents are: Uttarakuru, Jambū-  
 dīpa, Pubbavideha and Aparagodāna (WICKREMASINGHE, EZ. II,  
 p. 273, n. 3). For the Brahmanic teaching of the Dvīpas see KIRKE,  
 Kosmographie der Inder, p. 110 ff.

<sup>1</sup> Verses 2—10 form one sentence. It is governed by *idāni kālo vi-*  
*dhītum etam sabbam mayū sambhācītum*. What he has aspired to is:  
 1) with regard to the mass of the people that they should be happy  
 (v. 4a); 2) with regard to the Order, that it might attain stability (*yathā*  
*assa adhikariyam* v. 6d); 3) with regard to the nobility, that the king  
 should again become their protector (v. 7d: *pātanamp* must be supple-  
 mented by an *assay* from *assu* in 6d "inay 1 be"); 4) with regard to  
 those in want, that the king may support them (v. 8d).

<sup>2</sup> For the schism in the Order at the time of this prince see  
 Mhv. 33. 95 ff.

the present day. They turned away in their demeanour from one another and took delight in all kinds of strife. But the all-wise Ruler who had already in past existences striven after the purification of the Order as something which must be attained<sup>1</sup>, achieved its union, whereby he had to endure double as much heavy toil as in his efforts for the royal dignity. And he made the Order as uniform as milk and water so that it could last in purity for five thousand years<sup>2</sup>.

Hereupon the best of men had a square hall<sup>3</sup> erected in the middle of the town with four entrances and several large

<sup>1</sup> P. *gahitabbato* is an adverbial formation from *gahitabba* = skr. *grahitavya*. It would correspond to skr. *grahitaryntus*. Cf. WHITNEY, Indische Grammatik § 1028.

<sup>2</sup> Verses 12—22 form one sentence. The principal verb in 22 c il is *akūsi* (*jinasāsanam khitrolakābhūtum*), subject *bhūpati* in 21 d. The gerunds *rāśikatvā* (12 c) and *sampnijātiya* (13 d), as also *sumagganī kñetrā* (21 il) are subordinate. This last is preceded by the pret. and pres. participles: — *paṭīghānumyāgajito* (15 h), *utandito* (15 d), *sampadadhārente* (16 c), *tikicchāuto* and *vivajjayaṇi* (17 a b), as well as *anayūpietasamukkappo* (17 c) and *amubhonto* (21 e). These are all of them attributes of the subject. The object of *sumagganī akūsi* is *mihugnittitayāop* with the three attributes in 19 b cd of which the first has a still closer adverbial definition in 18 and 19 a ("in spite of the great efforts" etc.); *payaṭvā* must be supplemented by *katena*. — The brief account of our chronicle is confirmed by the Gal-vihāra inscription of Parakkamabāhu in Polonnaruva. Cf. Ed. MÜLLER, AIC nr. 54; WICKREMASINGHE, EZ. II. 256 ff. From the contents it is even possible to establish certain connections between the inscription and the account of the Cūlavas., though these are of too vague a character for us to draw far-reaching conclusions from them. Both start with the schism of the church under Vattagāmāyaṇi. Both speak of the intention that the Order should now be secure in its stability for 5000 years. In the Cūlavas. the king is compared to a cloud spreading itself over the four continents just as the inscription uses this comparison of Buddha. See also note to 78. 5. In chap. 78 a second and more detailed account of the reform of the church follows, Rājāvali says (trs. by B. GUÑASEKARA, p. 59) quite briefly: "he reconciled the religious differences which had existed since the reign of Vaṭṭagāma Abū." The account in the Nikāya-saṃgraha is more detailed (p. 22 of WICKREMASINGHE's ed.).

<sup>3</sup> P. *catussālu* = skr. *caturśāla* denotes a square surrounded by buildings. We must imagine therefore a square court surrounded on all sides by halls open to the interior. Cf. Mhv. 37. 15. The word occurs as the name of a particular building in Anurādhapura in Mhv. 15. 47, 50; 35. 88.

24 rooms and instituted a great almsgiving in which everything needful was to be had daily for many hundreds in number  
 25 who had kept the precepts of moral discipline<sup>1</sup>. And every year the Ruler of men had given to each of them according to his age, garments and mantles, (thus) at all times full of  
 26 benevolence. Thereupon he had four almshouses built in the four districts of the town and had them erected in separate  
 27 divisions, and therein he placed many vessels of bronze, cushions  
 28 and pillows, mats, carpets and bedsteads as well as cows by the thousand that gave sweet milk. Then near these (halls)  
 29 at a spot with pure water he laid down charming gardens adorned with trees that bore abundant blossom and fruit, and  
 30 fair as the garden of Nandana<sup>2</sup>. Further generous as he was, he set up in their neighbourhood rich provender houses  
 31 supplied with money and money's worth which contained all necessities such as syrup, sugar, honey and the like. And  
 32 (there) he instituted for many thousands of bhikkhus from all four regions of the earth who practised moral discipline and other virtues, for Brahmans belonging to a mendicant  
 33 order, as well as for many other suppliants and poor travellers daily a great almsgiving, he the wise (prince), untiring, unwearying, with a heart full of love.

34 Hereupon the Ruler of men, filled with pity, had another great hall built for many hundreds of sick people, fitted for  
 35 their sojourn there, and had placed in it in the way above described, a complete collection of all articles of use. There  
 36 also he gave to each sick person a special slave and a female slave to prepare day and night according to need, medicines  
 37 and food, solid and liquid. There too he had many provender houses built in which a quantity of medicine, money and  
 38 money's worth and the like were collected. To discerning and skilful physicians who were quick at distinguishing various (bodily) conditions and who were versed in all the text books,

<sup>1</sup> P. *sīlapālānam* refers as W. assumes, to monks. "Age" in v. 25 (P. *yuthāvudhāmī*) means then the period of belonging to the Order.

<sup>2</sup> The pleasure garden of the god Indra. E. W. HOPKINS, Epic Mythology p. 141.

he gave maintenance according to their deserts, recognising 39 the merits in all of them and made them day and night practise the medical art in the best manner. He himself on 40 the four Uposatha days in the month, having laid aside all his ornaments and having taken upon himself the vow of the sacred day, pure with pure upper garment, surrounded by his 41 dignitaries, was wont to visit that hall, his heart cooled with pity<sup>1</sup>. With an eye that charmed by goodness he gazed at 42 the sick. And as the Ruler of men was himself versed in medical lore<sup>2</sup>, he the all-wise summoned the physicians ap- 43 pointed there, tested in every way their healing activities, and 44 if their medical treatment had been wrongly carried out he met them with the right method, pointed it out to them as the best of teachers and showed them the proper use of the 45 instruments by skilfully treating several people with his own hand. Then he tested the favorable or unfavorable condition 46 of all the sick, let those who were rid of their illness have garments given to them and then rejoicing in good, after he 47 had taken his reward<sup>3</sup> from the hands of the physicians and given them their reward<sup>3</sup>, he returned to his palace. By such 48 means year by year he being (himself) free from disease, freed the sick from all their illnesses.

Yet another miracle never before seen or heard was manifest in him who was rich in the virtue of pity rightly exercised. To that hall there came, tortured by great pain, a crow 50 suffering from an ulcer that had formed in her cheek. As if 51

<sup>1</sup> P. *dayasitalamānasō*. Cf. 78. 141. The heart is hot with passion. Passion is cooled by pity. We Northerners would be more inclined to say it is "warmed".

<sup>2</sup> P. *āyubbe* = skr. *āyurveda*. The Ayurveda "Veda of the (Lengthening of the) Span of Life" was held to be the basis of all medical knowledge and was regarded as an *upāṅga* of the Atharvaveda. See WINTERKIRZ, Gesch. der ind. Literatur, III, p. 542; J. JÖLLY, Medicin, p. 12 f.

<sup>3</sup> Each time the expression *patti* is used. Employed of the king, it means the merit working itself out in the *kamma*. This merit is found in the healing activity of the physicians and is left by them to the king, because he is its spiritual parent. Cf. note 10 to 42. 50. Employed of the doctors, *patti* means the payment for their services.

chained by the strong bands of his pity she sat as if with clipped wings, motionless outside the hall moaning piteously.

52 The physicians who rightly recognised her condition, caught  
53 her and cured her at the Great King's command. Her disease  
cured, the King set her upon an elephant and having made  
her walk round the town, her right side towards it, he set  
54 her free. Where, when and by whom was ere such exceeding  
great mercy even to animals seen or heard?

55 Thereupon King Parakkamabāhu, the hero, to whom all  
right-minded people were devoted, set about the rebuilding in  
grandeur and beauty of the superb city of Pulatthinagara  
56 which had reached such a state that nought but its name  
remained, and which no longer sufficed to make manifest his  
57 superlatively royal glory<sup>1</sup>. The Monarch now had a high  
chain of walls built which on all sides enclosed the fortified  
58 town<sup>2</sup> and was larger than the town wall<sup>3</sup> of former kings  
and gleamed with its coating of lime bright as autumn clouds.  
59 Then after he had built round this three walls<sup>4</sup> each in turn  
60 smaller than the other, he laid down various streets. Then he

<sup>1</sup> For the following description compare above all A. M. HOGART, The Topography of Polonnaruva (ASC. Memoirs II. 1926, p. 8 ff.). H. W. COBRINGTON is certainly right in his assumption that the description in the Cūlavaipsa proceeds from south to north. I refer the reader at once to the second and later account of Parakkamabāhu's building activities in 78. 31 ff.

<sup>2</sup> By *khandāvara* I understand here the inner walled part of the town in contrast to the open parts of the town lying around it. The "chain of walls" refers probably to the rampart of the town still recognisable, stretching for about a mile from north to south and half a mile from east to west. Within this rampart lies the „citadel" with the royal castle. See note to v. 61.

<sup>3</sup> The abl. *parapākāracakkato* shows that we must take the positive *mahantam* in the sense of a comparative, as is often the case. The new structure was thus more extensive than the older one.

<sup>4</sup> The Kauṭaliya lays down that three trenches each narrower than the other, must surround the wall of a castle. The dug out soil may have served for the construction of the "small wall". See Kauṭ. 2. 3. 21 (in JOLLY's ed. p. 31; in J. J. MEYER's translation p. 65<sup>10</sup> in that of SHASTRY, p. 57).

erected around his own palace and around his whole dwelling a second inner wreath of walls<sup>1</sup> and built thereon a palace<sup>2</sup> 61 seven storeys high, furnished with a thousand chambers and adorned with many hundreds of pillars painted in divers hues. It was richly supplied with hundreds of alcoves<sup>3</sup> which were 62 like to the summit of the Kelāsa<sup>4</sup> mountain and were radiant with manifold ornaments of climbing plants and flowers. It 63 had doors and windows of gold large and small, well divided walls and stairs and offered conveniences for every season. It was ever adorned with many thousands of various beds 64 which were made of gold, ivory and the like and had costly

<sup>1</sup> P. *aunpākāramayūlām*, -lit. a secondary circle of walls.

<sup>2</sup> The word for "palace", *pāśūdaya*, first occurs in v. 70. All the verses between contain attributes of which I have made independent sentences. There is no doubt that the palace is recognisable in the ruins which are marked "palace" on the plans. It is enclosed along with a number of subsidiary buildings by a rampart (the *aunpākāra* of the text) "forming an oblong of roughly 440 by 264 yards" (A. M. HOCHST., l. c., p. 3). The enclosed ground is now known by the name of the "citadel", and the palace stands in the southern part of the square. Cf. for the whole H. C. P. BELL, ASC. 1911—12 (= S. P. III, 1916), p. 50ff. When the Cūlavs. speaks of a thousand apartments and many hundreds of pillars that is of course merely the stereotyped exaggeration constantly recurring in such descriptions. At the same time there is a striking number of tiny rooms grouped round the central main part of the building in the groundfloor. There are more than fifty of them. Without doubt there were further apartments in the upper storeys. That the palace at least in its central portions consisted of one or several storeys is proved by the extraordinary strength of the walls enclosing the innermost chamber. These are more than ten feet thick. Then too a broad staircase is still standing which led from the south of this room upwards. Unfortunately our chronicle gives instead of exact figures merely the customary phrases prescribed by poetics.

<sup>3</sup> P. *kūtūgāra*. Rāvaṇa's palace is also described in the Rāmāyaṇa 5. 9. 14 (Bombay ed. 1902) as *kūtagāraih subhāgāraih survataḥ samalām-katām*. The commentary on the passage explains *kūtūgāraih* by *guptasvalpagrhaih*.

<sup>4</sup> Buildings which are high, pointed and white in colour (covered with stucco), especially stupas (78. 77), are frequently compared to the Kelāsa mountain (cf. 68. 41 and note).

65 coverings. The height of its splendour<sup>1</sup> was reached in the royal sleeping apartment which was ever immeasurably re-  
 66 splendent with a thick bunch of pearls<sup>2</sup> suspended at its four corners, white as moonbeams and gleaming so that they  
 67 laughed to scorn the beauty of the divine Gaṅgā. (The sleep-  
 68 ing apartment) was adorned with a wreath of large golden lampstands which breathed out continually the perfume of flowers and incense. With the network of tiny golden bells<sup>3</sup> suspended here and there and giving forth a sound like the  
 69 sound of the five musical instruments, the palace made known, as it were, the rich fulness of the merits of the King. This  
 70 splendid palace, like to a matchless structure of Vissukamman<sup>4</sup>, charming and peerless, he, the first among the protectors of the earth, built and gave it the name of Vejayanta<sup>5</sup>.

71 For the carrying out of the ceremonies of expiation by the Brahmans (he built) the Hemamandira and for the recitation  
 72 of magic incantations the charming Dhārapīghara<sup>6</sup>. For listening to the birth stories of the great Sage which were related by a teacher appointed there for the purpose, (he built)

<sup>1</sup> So I translate *sānāthikatvā* *uttamam* (cf. skr. *sānāthikṛ* as well as below v. 152) in v. 67d. Verses 66b to 67ab contain attributes of *sri-sayana-gabbhena* in 67c, v. 65 attributes of *thūlamuttakalāpenn*.

<sup>2</sup> In Rām. 5. 9. 17 it is said of Rāvaṇa's palace *nistulābhisea muttibhistaleñibhinirājītam*.

<sup>3</sup> The *kinkini(kalājāla* is one of the ornaments of the maplapas (JāCo. I. 32<sup>21</sup>; DbCo. I. 274<sup>2</sup>) and of the pāśudas (D. II. 188<sup>6</sup>; Mhv. 27. 16, 27).

<sup>4</sup> Skr. *Viśvakarman*, the architect of the gods, often associated and confused with Tvaṣṭṛ. Cf. JORKESS, Epic Mythology, p. 201. He is the builder of Varuna's palace (ibid. p. 118) and of the divine hall of assembly (ibid. p. 113).

<sup>5</sup> This is the name of Indra's palace. See 48. 136.

<sup>6</sup> I take *hemamandira* "golden house" and *dhārapīghara* „house of incantation“ as the names of the buildings in question. *Santi* in a is as otherwise *santikamma*, to be understood in the technical sense of skr. *sānti*. Cf. with *parivattana* in c *paricattanamanta* JāCo. I. 200<sup>16</sup>. It is impossible now to say which of the present ruins correspond to the buildings mentioned. We should probably look for them in the various structures in the immediate vicinity of the palace.

the fair Maṇḍalamandira<sup>1</sup>. For the reception of the magic water and of the magic thread given him by the yellow-robed ascetics (he built) the Pañcasattimandira<sup>2</sup>. Lastly he who ever trod the path of the true doctrine, erected a sermon house<sup>3</sup>. It was surrounded by an enclosure of coloured curtains and adorned with costly canopies. By reason of the many-lined, sweet-smelling flowers laid down here and there as offerings it had the semblance of a single nosegay. Its interior was constantly lighted by lamps with scented oil and perfumed by incense of gum resin. It was gaily adorned with many likenesses of the Victor (Buddha) in gold and the like and was resplendent with a garland of pictures of the Omniscient One, which were painted on stuff. When that Prince among kings entered it to place with his own hand a (jewel as) eye<sup>4</sup> upon the statue of the Victor, or to honour by sacrifice the Tathāgata, or to listen to the unsurpassable true doctrine — (then) was it like unto a divine hall of assembly. It was

<sup>1</sup> That is "circle house". Of course the building which was to serve for the narration of the jātakas was first erected and then an ācariya appointed for the purpose. B.E.I. (ASC. 1906, p. 10ff.; cf. M.Z. II, 238ff.) regards the maṇḍalamandira as the so-called Potgal-vehem to the south of Palatthinagara. But I do not believe that he is right.

<sup>2</sup> That is "the house of the seventy-five". The reason for the name is unknown. Obviously the building was meant to serve for the holding of parittā ceremonies. Water and thread play the most important part in these, as the white thread which runs through the hands of all the participating priests starts from a vessel filled with water. At the close the foreheads of the priests are sprinkled with the water.

<sup>3</sup> Again verses 74 to 81 form one sentence. The attributes in 74 to 81b precede the object *dhammāgāra* in 81c. Of these we have made independent sentences. The most important building in the neighbourhood of the palace is the "Rājamāligāra" situated to the east of it. It is an oblong structure on a terrace of three tiers. The walls of the terrace are decorated with beautifully carved reliefs. Whether indeed we may call the building a *dhammāgāra* is doubtful. It looks like a hall of audience or like a council-hall. Cf. ASC. 1905 (= S.P. XX. 1909), p. 3ff.

<sup>4</sup> The eyes of Buddha statues consisted frequently of precious stones (dark blue sapphires). Their insertion took place with specially solemn ceremonies.

graced by a wonderful peacock which drove people out of  
 81 their senses whenever screeching its peacock cry, it began  
 its dance together with the dancing girl who danced there  
 while they struck up a sweet rhythmic song<sup>1</sup>.

82 Further in order to listen to the rhythmic songs of the  
 many musicians and to behold their charming dance, the  
 Monarch had built near the palace the Sarassatimāṇḍapa<sup>2</sup>.  
 83 It glittered in every direction with its golden pillars. It was  
 delightful with paintings relating to his (Parakkamabāhu's)  
 84 deeds. It was embellished by a wishing-tree offering all de-  
 sired things which sparkled with all kinds of ornaments such  
 85 as earrings, bracelets, necklaces and the like, which was re-  
 splendent with garments of linen, silk, Chinese stuff and other  
 86 materials, which gleamed with its golden trunk and a row of  
 branches, and which was adorned by a flock of numerous birds  
 which were painted on it.

87 Further he had the fair māṇḍapa erected which bore the  
 name Rājavesibhujaṅga<sup>3</sup>. It was like unto the hall of the  
 gods, called Sudhammā, which descended to earth, just as if

<sup>1</sup> The peacock was thus a mechanical toy which however existed apparently only in the imagination of the poet. "Rhythmic" is *layānvila* or in v. 82 *layopeta*. The Indians distinguish three *layāḥ* or tempi: *druta*, *mudhya* and *vilambita*.

<sup>2</sup> "Māṇḍapa of Sarasvatī". She is the goddess of eloquence, here of the arts of the muses in general. It is impossible to identify either this building or the one following. The description is unfortunately purely formal. The fact of both buildings being described as māṇḍapas suggests something of the pavilion kind, provisional in character. Verses 82 to 86 and 87 to 91 again form each one sentence, built up in the same way as the sentence in v. 74 to 81.

<sup>3</sup> The name is difficult to explain. A suburb of Pulatthinagara is called thus (73. 153; 78. 79), and this name again seems to be connected with the epithet Rājavesibhujaṅgasilāmegha applied to Ilahiya in 76. 192. The word *vesi* means "harm", "prostitute". *Bhujaṅga* in addition to "snake" means the "lover of a prostitute" (BR. s. v., c). This meaning is here to be assumed in the name owing to the association with *vesi*. In the inscription of Ilala Puliyankulam of the time of Parakkamabāhu I, dealt with by CODRINGTON (JRAS. C. B. XXX, nr. 79, p. 271), he has the surname of *ari-rāja-vesi-bhujaṅga*.

the good deeds of all people were accumulated at one spot. It was three-storeyed, ornamented with coloured pictures, surrounded by lines of fair vedikā<sup>1</sup>, exquisite, adorned with a costly chair beneath a wishing-tree which offered the singers and other people the wished-for objects. It shimmered with its manifold precious stones like the diadem,<sup>2</sup> sparkling in the sun, of that fair lady, the island of Laṅkā, whom he won by the force of his arms<sup>3</sup>; and it was like unto the wreath of tresses of the protector of the world of men<sup>4</sup>. In the same way he built the fair Ekatthambha-pāsāda<sup>5</sup> that ended with a ma-

<sup>1</sup> What *vedikā* means is not easy to determine. Noteworthy is the frequency of the phrase *vedikāyā parikkhitta* „surrounded by a *vedikā*“ as for instance a bathing pond, a *pokkharaṇī* D. II. 179<sup>7</sup> ff. Here most probably it means a railing, since just before the same has been said of a stair case. As a staircase when it is of gold etc. has golden *thambhi* (that is railing gates) and *suciyo* (i. e. cross-bolts), as well as an *uphsa* (cornice) of silver, in the same way the *veilikū* of the pond has it. Cf. further VvCo. 340<sup>b</sup>, where *kañcanaavedimissaya* is explained by *sutavipūmītayāya vedikāya sahitayā purikkhittayā*. A *veilikū* is part of a heavenly pāsāda just as the rooms, the windows, the network of bells (Mhv. 27. 16). The lobapāsāda had a *pavāṇivedikā*, a *veilikū* of coral (Mhv. 27. 26). There was a *nānāratanaavedikā* round the bodhi tree (Mhv. 30. 70). A *vedikū* belongs to a stūpa (Mhv. 32. 4; 34. 41), to an image house (Mhv. 78. 40), to a bathing-house (Mhv. 78. 46). Cf. also note to 76. 118.

<sup>2</sup> I divide *nījabūhubalī* (= instr.) *aruve*. For it is hardly admissible to take the whole as a parallel compound to *laikaiśanāya*.

<sup>3</sup> W. regards this as referring to Śiva. The reference is suitable, since Śiva wears the crescent moon in the hair over his forehead, his tresses are therefore illuminated.

<sup>4</sup> Lit. „one-pillar-palace“. In such a one-pillar-palace, *gehe ekathūnike*, was Cittā the daughter of Pañḍuvāsudeva confined, to prevent her coming into contact with any man. JāCo I. 441<sup>24-25</sup> also mentions an *ekatthambhakapāsāda* which serves as a king's dwelling. For an idea of what such a structure looked like, v. 94a b is important where it is compared to a candelabra. One must therefore oilily enough imagine the pāsāda as something in the form of a dovecote. It should be remembered however, that the rooms both in the royal castle at Polonnaruwa and in the Baddhasīmapāsāda were extremely small, not more than 8×10 ft. In Veherabendigala I saw something like a room just large enough for a man stretched at full length to lie down in.

93 kara<sup>1</sup> and rose aloft as if it had split open the earth. And it was adorned with a superb golden chamber<sup>2</sup> that was  
 94 placed above on a golden column, possessed of the beauty of a cave of gold for this lion among kings, and which glittered like a candelabra on a golden foot.

95 Again the Ruler, the leader of earth protectors, had a private garden laid down in a region close to the kings house.  
 96 As one felt that it showed by its beauty a likeness to the (heavenly) pleasure garden Nandana, and by lavishing charm charmed the eyes of men<sup>3</sup>, it received the name of Nundana<sup>4</sup>.  
 97 Its trees were twined about with jasmin creepers and it was filled with the murmur of the bees drunk with enjoyment of  
 98 the juice of the manifold blossoms. There campaka, asoka and tilaka trees, nāgas, punnāgas and ketakas, sal trees, pū-  
 99 tali and nipa trees, mangos, jambū and kadamba trees, vakulas,  
 100 coco palms, kuṭajas and bimbijālakas, mālatī, mallikā, tamāla and navamālikā shrubs<sup>5</sup> and yet other trees bearing manifold fruits and blossoms rejoiced the heart of the people who went  
 101 thither. Pleasant it was, and with the cry of the peacocks and the gentle twitter (of the birds) it always delighted the  
 102 people. It was furnished with a number of ponds with be-

<sup>1</sup> A dolphin-like mythical animal often employed as ornament especially on balustrades of staircases.

<sup>2</sup> P. jālāvāpaivāsena, with a dwelling-room, a habitation of gold.

<sup>3</sup> I separate thus: . . . : janānāpi nayanā (acc. pl.) nandana-dam naudayati. The fem. nandauā is found also S. I. 6<sup>10</sup>.

<sup>4</sup> Verses 95 to 112 are one sentence: . . . he laid down . . . the private garden . . . by name Nandauā . . . , whose trees . . . and it was filled . . . There follow further attributes of gharuyyānāpi, partly in adjective form, partly as relative sentences (cf. yathā in v. 100, 109, 111; yaue in v. 110).

<sup>5</sup> The botanical names are in the same order 1. michelia champaka, 2. jouscia asoka, 3. unknown (Skr. tilaka), 4. mesua ferrea, 5. rottlera tinctoria, 6. pandanus odoratissimus, 7. shorea robusta, 8. bignonia svaveolens, 9. nauclea cadamba, 10. mangifera indica, 11. eugenia jambolana, 12. nauclea cordifolia, 13. mimunsops elengi, 14. cocos nucifera, 15. wrightia antidyserterica or nericum antidyseutericunt, 16. momordica monadelpha, 17. jasminum grandiflorum, 18. jasminum sambac, 19. xanthochymus pictorius, 20. a variety of jasminum sambac.

autiful banks whose chief decoration were red and blue lotos flowers and which appropriated all that was the loveliest of the lovely. It was adorned too with a large gleaming bath- 103 room<sup>1</sup> supported by pillars resplendent with endless rows of figures in ivory, which was fair and like to a mountain 104 of cloud pouring forth rain by (reason of) the showers of water which flowed constantly from the pipes of the apparatus, and which seemed to be the crown jewel of the beauty of 105 the garden<sup>2</sup> and ravished the eye. The garden was (further) 106 resplendent with an extensive palace<sup>3</sup> adorned with many columns of sandalwood, resembling an ornament on the earth's 107 surface, that glittered, peerless, shimmering, and with an octagonal *māṇḍapa* resembling an ear ornament. It was also 108 adorned with another large, fair, charming *māṇḍapa* that had the charm of a wreath of serpentine windings<sup>4</sup>. There in the 109 garden the *Silāpokkharaṇī*<sup>5</sup> pond continually captivated the King who was highest among rulers of the earth, who had attached the good without number to himself. Still more 110 delightful was the garden by (means of) the *Māngalapokkharaṇī*

<sup>1</sup> P. *dhārāmāṇḍūpa* (v. 105) corresponds to the skr. *dhārāngṛha*. From the description it is clear that a shower bath is meant.

<sup>2</sup> P. *uyyānulakkhiyā*. It must be borne in mind that *lakkhi* is at the same time the name of the goddess of beauty, Laksñī. Thus in the picture the garden is compared with the goddess and the "palace" with an ornament of her diadem.

<sup>3</sup> P. *rimūrem*. Writers are fond of using the term half mythically. By v. is understood mainly the abodes of blessed spirits which hover in the air. In JāCo. I. 328<sup>15</sup> a tree serves as *rimāna* for the devatā dwelling there. Save here and in the following the word occurs but rarely as a name for human habitations.

<sup>4</sup> Is the idea here pillars with baroque spirals such as are found on a structure of the so called quadrangle in Polonnaruva?

<sup>5</sup> I. e. stone pond. Having regard to the two names occurring in v. 110, I prefer to take this as a proper name. W. also understands *māṇḍapokkharaṇī* in v. 111 as such. It is quite possible. We must then join *sugandhiviripūraṇa* with *naalayanti* "which gladdened by the fulness of perfumed water". My translation of vv. 111, 112 was determined by the circumstance that *pūraṇa* and *māṇḍa* occur next to each other.

pond, and provided with the Nandāpokkharāpi pond it looked  
 111 like the divine garden of Nandana. Yet another pond gleamed  
 112 there, filled with a stream of perfumed water, gladdening the  
 royal moon, and it was ever fair with rich beauty and splen-  
 dour, furnished with the cave called Vasanta and with bath-  
 ing ponds<sup>1</sup>.

113 Again on land that resembled an island because the water  
 divided into two arms, the foe-subduer laid down a second  
 114 garden, the Dipuyyāna<sup>2</sup>. There one saw the Dhavalāgāra<sup>3</sup>  
 that like to the summit of the Kelāsa, was made entirely of  
 115 stucco, wonder exciting. The garden was adorned with a  
 Vimāna which bore the name of Vijāmapudapa because it was  
 116 built to show forth the various branches of science. And there  
 too gleamed the beautiful, roomy<sup>4</sup> Dolāmaudapa<sup>5</sup> that was

<sup>1</sup> The *pokkharāpi* ca comes in rather lamely after bathing-ponds have been already mentioned in v. 109 to 111. The question is where must the garden be looked for. In my opinion no weight can be attached to the structures in it mentioned in the text. The description is purely formal, made up according to the recipe for describing a garden. Even the enumeration of the many trees means nothing. The author is merely displaying his botanical knowledge or rather his acquaintance with literary sources like Abhp. 536 ff. Of actual facts which could be utilised little remains but that it was a *gharuyyāna* a house-garden (private garden). We must look for it therefore in the immediate neighbourhood of the royal castle and I believe therefore that it filled the northern half of the citadel. Doubtless it contained pavilions and bathing arrangements. A. M. Hocart is inclined to look for the Naudana garden to the east of the palace and outside of the citadel, mainly on account of the *silāpokkharāpi*, since a bathing pond answering this description does in fact lie under the eastern wall of the citadel.

<sup>2</sup> Opinion is now unanimous, I think, that the "island park" lies on the so-called "promontory" that juts out in the Topaveva west of the citadel and on which are now situated the rest house and the bungalow of the Archaeological Survey. For the ruins of the Promontory see the plan ASC. 1901 (= LII. 1907). For the bathing-house in the Dipuyyāna cf. EZ. II. 143.

<sup>3</sup> I. e. "white house", to be taken as a proper name.

<sup>4</sup> The meaning of *pavitita* is unknown. Skr. *vivita* (cf. Kauṭaliya 2. 2. 1) means a (fenced-in) pasture.

<sup>5</sup> I. e. "swing pavilion".

furnished with a swing hung with tiny pretty golden bells. The garden was further resplendent with the vimāna called 117 Kīlāmaṇḍapa<sup>1</sup> where the king at the head of the sport officials connoisseurs of the merry mood<sup>2</sup>, was wont to amuse himself. And it was for ever embellished by the so-called Sanimāṇḍapa<sup>3</sup> 118 which consisted of ivory, and again by another (maṇḍapa), the superb so-called Moramaṇḍapa<sup>4</sup> and also by the Ādāsa-maṇḍapa<sup>5</sup> 119 whose walls consisted of mirrors. There too the bathing 120 pond Anantapokkharapi<sup>6</sup> with its stones whose layers resembled the coils of (the serpent king) Ananta, continually captivated the people. There the bathing pond Cittapokkharapi<sup>7</sup> with 121 its gay pictures rejoiced the foe-subduer Parakkamabāhu, the royal sage. Resplendent there was a four-storeyed, peerless 122 palace, painted with various pictures and bearing the name Singaravimāna<sup>8</sup>. The garden was adorned with tāla and 123 hīntāla palms, was resplendent with nāga and punnāga trees and was rich in banana, kappikāra and kāyikūra trees<sup>9</sup>.

<sup>1</sup> I. e. "play pavilion" or "games pavilion".

<sup>2</sup> P. *hassarasa* = skr. *hāsyarasa*. On the theory of the rasas s. note to 72. 94.

<sup>3</sup> The name might mean "pavilion of (the planet) Saturn". The Col. Ed. reads against the MSS. *Sānimāṇḍapa* which would mean "carpet pavilion, pavilion of the curtains".

<sup>4</sup> I. e. "peacock pavilion".

<sup>5</sup> I. e. "mirror pavilion".

<sup>6</sup> Anantu is here the name of the world serpent Śeṣa (see HOPKINS, Epic Mythology 23—24). It is also called Anantabhoga, and it would be possible to insert this name also here in *anantabhogaśaṅkāśasasāmyvivesasātī* (instead of "coils of the u"). W. seems to do this. But then it is not clearly indicated in what the comparison consists. In my opinion the steps surrounding the pond were laid somewhat in this form: ~~~~

<sup>7</sup> I. e. "picture pond".

<sup>8</sup> P. *vimānam sīnyārasadilapubbaṁ*, lit. a vimāna in which the word *sīngāra* (Skr. śringāra, "ornament, love, a particular rasa") stands in front (of the name). *Pubba* is used here instead of the customary *ādi* (note to 44. 6).

<sup>9</sup> The botanical names are in the same order: 1. *borassus flabelliformis*, 2. *phoenix paludosa*, 3. *mesua ferrea*, 4. *rottlera tiectorin*, 5. *musa sapientum*, 6. *pterospernum acerifolium*, 7. *premna spinosa* (?). — Verses

124 Now there was in the palace of the Monarch of all races of rulers, among those belonging to the closest of his followers, a man named Mahinda. He was a worshipper of the triad of the Jewels<sup>1</sup>, understood what was blessed and unblessed, was wise, pure in heart, versed in the means of accomplishing many meritorious actions, never went astray through lust, hatred, fear or delusion, was never satiated with the fulness<sup>2</sup> of goodness, as little as the ocean by the (streaming in of) waters. He was gifted with conscientiousness and modesty, attacked ever with brave courage and was a discerning guardian of moral discipline. Now this man with the favour of the sublime Monarch who was ever a helper in all (good) enterprises, caused a pāsāda to be built for the honour of the sacred Tooth Relic which was pure by its suffusion with the nectar of the eighty-four thousand portions of the doctrine. 130 The same (pāsāda) was embellished by a roofing and doors and windows of gold and was resplendent with numerous 131 paintings within and without. It gleamed with canopies of various colours like a golden mountain surrounded by a net 132 of lightning. It was resplendent with curtains which glistened in brilliancy, and with a series of conches covered with costly 133 coverings. It was like to a dwelling of the goddess of beauty, glorious as if all the grace found in each living being were 134 concentrated in one spot<sup>3</sup>. It was resplendent with its vast, charming hall of the moon, which was wonderfully beautiful, white as light, or as pearl ornaments, or as geese, or as snow, 135 or as a cloud. Banners were fixed on it, it was fair, with gilded summit, bright, calling forth delight, beautiful<sup>4</sup>.

113—123 again form one sentence which must be analysed according to note to v. 96. According to the description in this passage, the garden must have been full of buildings. That would fit the “promontory” on which there are many ruins, amongst others those of a bathing-pond.

<sup>1</sup> See note to 46. 17.

<sup>2</sup> P. *oghehi* lit. by the floods.

<sup>3</sup> The sentence must be construed thus: *dvāśam viya Siriyā jolantam sabbasmin dechadhārīnam rāmaṇeyyakun* (what is gracious = grace) *viya ekattha pinditam*.

<sup>4</sup> The verses 124 to 135 are one sentence. The subject is *Ma-*

Further the King, the sole banner of the stem of the nobility, possessed a dear consort who had come forth, rejoicing the eyes of the people, as the moon (rises) from the ocean, from (the house of) the great king Kittisirimēgha<sup>1</sup>, who loved him, the highest of rulers, as Sītī (loved) Rāma. Amongst all the ladies of the harem, many hundreds in number, she was by far his best loved. She loved the triad of the jewels and beyond her own husband who was like to the King of the gods (Indra), she cared for none even as much as grass whoever he might be. She did what the Lord of men wished, had friendly speech, was adorned with the ornament of many virtues such as faith, discipline and the like, was skillful in dance and song, possessed an intelligence (sharp) as the point of the kusa grass, her heart was ever cooled by the practice of the virtue of pity<sup>2</sup>. She, the Queen Rūpavatī, most beauteous of beautiful women, the clever, the virtuous, pure in action, the highly-famed, mindful of the doctrine of the Virtue which teaches of impermanency, had learned many sayings of the great Sage and kept them in her memory, as for instance "Short is the life of the lamentable men; the pious man should live as if his head were in flames; there is no escape from

*hinduvūmaka* (v. 127 c), predicate and object are *kōresi pūsādhy*. Verses 124–127 contain the attributes to the subject, verses 130–134 (after an adverbial in 128, 129) the attributes to the object *pūsādhy*. It is to be noted that nothing is said about the spot where this temple of the Tooth Relic was built. A. M. Hoerdt assumes that it must have stood in the Dīpuyyāna, since the kings used to keep the sacred relic near the palace. He says (Memoirs ASC. II. 4): "Perhaps that puzzling structure called the Mansoleum, without doors or windows may be the temple in question." V. 130 seems on the other hand to contradict this. However the Tooth Relic was in Rohaya in the early times of Parakkama. Its recapture is first described in the following chapter. If then Mahinda's building was to serve for the keeping of it, its recapture was either virtually expected or the structure belongs to the time after the close of the campaign described in Chap. 74. Cf. also 74. 198 ff.

<sup>1</sup> This seems to be the king of that name mentioned in 41. 65. The name of the queen is given in v. 142.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. above v. 41 with the note.

145 death"<sup>1</sup>. Thus as she knew the short-lived nature of beings who wander about the ocean of existences, and as she knew that there was no firm hold there that could compare with 146 meritorious works, so she was unwearied in much well-doing, and as thereby she achieved her speedy escape from the cycle 147 (of rebirths) she built in the midst of the town a vast golden thūpa<sup>2</sup>, as it were a golden ship to reach the saving shore of Nirvana.

148 Further in this beautiful town the all-wise (king) had different kinds of streets laid down, many hundreds in number, adorned with many thousands of dwellings of two, three and 149 more storeys and provided with various bazaars where all wares were to be had and in which day by day there was 150 incessant traffic of elephants, horses and chariots — (streets) which were here and there enlivened by people who were ever indulging in great games.

151 Then he laid down in the vicinity three suburbs called 152 Rājavesibhujaṅga, Rājakulantaka and Vijita, adorned with three three-storeyed pāśādas which possessed every excellence 153 and every beauty, and crowned by three vihāras which were 154 named Vēluvana, Isipatana and Kusinārā<sup>3</sup>. But between the

<sup>1</sup> The strophe is taken from *Samyutta* 4.9.5 (= I.108). It is worth noting that in S. the Sinhalese MSS. have in the same way as here in the Mhv. the reading *hileyyānam*, whereas the parallel to the preceding strophe requires *hileyya nam*, which seems to be the Burmese reading. There can of course be no question of our correcting the passage, since the author without doubt followed the Sinhalese tradition, though erroneous. In its proper form the translation of the quotation runs: . . . "Short is the life of man, the pious man will despise it, he will live as if etc. etc."

<sup>2</sup> H. C. P. Bell (ASC. 1909 = VI. 1914, p. 6) has already identified this with the thūpa of the so-called Pabnlu-vehera, situated within the ramparts, thus in the town itself and in its northeastern part.

<sup>3</sup> In the account 78. 79 ff. the three sākhānagarā are called 1. Rājavesibhujaṅga, 2. Sīhpura (instead of Rājakulantaka) and 3. Vijita and the vihāras built in them are given in order as Isipatana (in 1), Kusinārā (in 2) and Vēluvana (in 3). I believe the designation *Rājakulantaka* ("end i. e. starting-point, of the dynasty") is an allusion to Sīhpura, for this was the name of the town founded by Vijaya's father Sīmbāhu (Mhv. 6. 35) in Lākaraṭṭha. To identify the suburb of Vijita with the

royal palace and the three towns the monarch had built at a distance of a gāvuta<sup>1</sup> from each other, charming sermon houses and image chapels<sup>2</sup> and splendid vihāras adorned with rest-houses for bhikkhus from all four regions of the heavens.

In the town Pulatthi(nagara) by name furnished thus with all accessories and provided with every luxury, like to a garden made beautiful by union with the joy of spring, which he himself enlarged so that it was four gāvutas long and seven gāvutas<sup>3</sup> broad, which bore his name — the beauteous one — which possessed a splendid wreath of walls, which was resplendent with fair dwellings, which contained large as well as small streets, which was an elixir for the eyes — (in this town) the Lord of men who was like to Purimidada (Indra), who was skilled in the preserving of all advantages, those not yet achieved and those already achieved, had fourteen gates erected: the superb King's Gate<sup>4</sup>, the beautiful Lion Gate, the great Elephant Gate, further the Indra Gate, the gate called after Hannmant<sup>5</sup>, the lofty Kuvera Gate, the brightly painted Candī Gate, as well as the Rakkhasa Gate<sup>6</sup>, the high-towering Ser-

town of the same name mentioned in Mhv. 7. 45 is quite unhistorical. But it is not impossible that the suburb was named after that town. The three monasteries were called after especially sacred places: ... Vejuvana after the park near Rūjagaha which was given to Buddha by Aññathapindika; Isipatana after the park in Benares where Buddha preached his first sermon; and Kusinārā after the place where he entered Nirvana. For Vejuvana see below note to 78. 87.

<sup>1</sup> Cf. 78. 91, 85. 20. According to the Kamalīya 2. 20 a *gūrūta* (skr. *gavṛuta* or *goruta*) would be the equivalent of  $\frac{1}{4}$  *yojana* (cf. note to 38. 68 and I, p. 349) that is, if the Indian *yojana* as is likely, is the standard of measurement, a little over two miles (according to the Buddhist *yojana* the half of that).

<sup>2</sup> I. *sāldhammapatiñāghare* = *sāldhammayhare patiñāghare* ea.

<sup>3</sup> If we reckon the *gārūta* as over two miles then what is meant here could not possibly be the city with its ramparts alone which reached nothing like these dimensions, but the outlying open town as well.

<sup>4</sup> For the King's Gate, *rūjadhrāra*, see note to 74. 199.

<sup>5</sup> The monkey king, Rāma's ally in his campaign against Rāvaṇa, king of Lankā.

<sup>6</sup> For Kuvera see note to 37. 106, for the rakkhasas note to 39. 34. Candī (the same in Skr.) is a name of the goddess Durgā, wife of Śiva.

pent Gate and the resplendent Water Gate, further the Garden

163 Gate and the beautiful Māyā Gate<sup>1</sup>, the Mahātīthia Gate<sup>2</sup>, and the splendid Gundhabba Gate<sup>3</sup>.

164 In this manner did King Parakkamabāhu who possessed the firmness of the king of the mountains, whose intelligence was sharp as the thunderbolt, make the aforetime small town of Pulathinagara which had suffered by many wars, splendidly adorned as the city of the Tāvatimsa gods.

Here ends the seventy-third chapter, called «Account of the Rebuilding of Pulathinagara», in the Mahāvīrā, compiled for the serene joy and emotion of the pious.

<sup>1</sup> Māyā is the name of the mother of Gotama Buddha.

<sup>2</sup> Through this gate ran in all probability the road leading to Anurādhapura and from here to the well known port Mahātīthia on the western shore of Ceylon.

<sup>3</sup> P. *gandhabba* = Skr. *gandharvā*, denotes a group of semi-divine beings who are regarded as the heavenly musicians. They are the male counterpart of the *ascharū*, the nymphs.

## CHAPTER LXXIV

## ACCOUNT OF THE FESTIVAL OF THE TOOTH RELIC

With the idea that the original capital<sup>1</sup> Anurādhapura 1 which had been utterly destroyed in every way by the Cōla army, was specially deserving of honour, since its soil was 2 hallowed while he lived<sup>2</sup> by the feet of the Master, distinguished by the wheel with its thousand spikes and its rim, and because it was the place where the southern branch of 3 the sacred Bodhi tree was planted and where a Ropā<sup>3</sup> of relics was preserved — (with this idea) the Lord of men be- 4 gan to take in hand its restoration. Hereupon the discerning 5 Lord of men summoned a high dignitary and instructed him in accordance with his wishes. The latter accepted the charge 6 without disregarding it in any way, with bent head, made obeisance with clasped hands, betook himself to Anurādhapura 7 and himself acquainted with the appropriate action, began to carry out to the uttermost the king's command. Within the 8 compass of the capital of the former kings the skilled one restored within a short time the large and the small walls, 9 the streets, the pāsādas and the gate towers, the charming

<sup>1</sup> P. *mālārājadhāmī*. The word *mālā*<sup>4</sup> has a twofold meaning, that of "original" (as for instance in *mālābhāsā* "primitive language") and that of „first“ (to which everything else goes back, as in *mālāvaca* "first dignitary"), of "important", "pre-eminent".

<sup>2</sup> According to the legend the Buddha also visited the site of the future Anurādhapura during his three sojourns in Īānukā. The picture of the wheel on the sole of the foot is one of the 32 great bodily marks of a *mahāpurisa* (see D. II. 17), who will either become a great world ruler or a Buddha.

<sup>3</sup> A measure of capacity used specially for corn. Skr. *drona*.

bathing-ponds and the delightful gardens as they had been  
 10 formerly; also the cetiyas of the three fraternities, the Mahā-  
 cetiya and the others, as well as the numerous vihāras such  
 11 as the Lohapāsāda and the like, as well as the pāsāda serving  
 him as dwelling, with its gates, bastions and towers, with its  
 12 royal courtyard, and embellished with a charming moon  
 chamber, and brought it about that the whole town furnished  
 13 with these and other marvellous works was as aforetime. Thus  
 14 he had the buildings set up by many former kings repaired  
 in haste by one of his dignitaries. For all wishes are fulfilled  
 for the wise who partake of the harvest of good deeds  
 accumulated in many existences.

15 Hereupon the all-wise (Prince) laid the foundations of the  
 town called Parakkama(pura)<sup>1</sup>. It was furnished with gates  
 16 and towers, with walls, moats, streets, pāsādas and shops and  
 adorned with parks which were embellished with pāsādas,  
 erected there for the shelter of many hundreds of bhikkhus  
 17 who strove after moral discipline and other virtues. It was  
 superb, prosperous and wealthy like Ālakainandā, the town  
 of the gods, and ever crowded with people.

18 Then he issued orders as to the way in which the officials  
 appointed over the various districts of the island of Sīhala  
 19 should collect without loss the taxes levied on each district  
 without oppressing the people in their particular territory.  
 20 Further in every month on the four Uposatha days, in ponds  
 and all other places in the island of Laṅkā for all creatures

<sup>1</sup> A Parakkamapura is mentioned in 72. 151. It must have been situated in Dakkhinadesa. If that is the town meant here, *kārāpēsi* in v. 17 can only refer to its restoration and embellishment. Moreover Pulatthiningara itself bore the name of Parakkamapura. It was according to 73. 157 *attanāmañkita*, just as under Vijayahāhu I. it was called according to the Velakkāra inscr. (EZ, II, 246), Vijayarājapura. I consider it not improbable that verses 15 to 17 also refer to Polatthiningara and its restoration, and that the compiler who found the two names in different sources, referred them erroneously to two different towns. What he tells us of this Parakkamapura is in any case nothing more than the usual customary phrases. Pūjāv. and Rājāv. say nothing about the founding of a town Parakkamapura.

without exception, such as game, fish and the like, living on 21 dry land and in the water he commanded safety (of life), he who was himself threatened by no peril.

Now in the province of Rohaya numerous vassals after 22 the death of the Monarch Mānābharaṇa, deviated from the right way<sup>1</sup>. Not knowing the character of King Parakkama, 23 and harassed in their hearts by fear they did not make their appearance before the Sovereign. As they thought again and again 24 of their own shortcomings their terror was in course of time redoubled. They knew in truth quite well that the great 25 courage of that lion-like King could not be surpassed by others: all they thought of was that not a day's life would remain 26 to them once the union of the kingdom had taken place<sup>2</sup>, but they thought not at all of the further course (of events). With speeches like this: "shall we ever permit a hostile army 27 even to set eyes on our country with its rivers, mountains and ravines?" they brought all the inhabitants of the pro- 28 vince under their influence and betook themselves to the Queen-mother Singalā<sup>3</sup>. "Thy grief, o Queen, called forth by Mānā- 29 bharaya's death, shall not torment thy heart as it pleases. Who then so long as we are in life, shall enter this our land 30 with its many inaccessible fastnesses?" With such like and 31 similar words they persuaded the Queen and all united, they built at each difficult spot as far as the frontier of the 32 country, numerous fortifications, which were immovable even by elephants, had trenches dug everywhere, placed there barri- 33

<sup>1</sup> P. *niggatikā*. The translation is uncertain. In Skr. *nirgati* does not occur in literature. W. "were brought to great distress . . . und had become utterly helpless." I start from the fundamental meaning "to go out of", i. e. the right way.

<sup>2</sup> P. *ratthe samjatasamvadilhe*. I believe that *samvadilha* = Skr. *samvadīḥ* stands here as so often, in place of the abstract, as only in that case is the proper construction of the compound possible. The union of the kingdom consists in the incorporation of Rohaya. The vassals fear that in such an event they will not escape justice.

<sup>3</sup> The consort of Sirivallabha (59. 45) and mother of the younger Mānābharmaya.

ades of briars sharp-pointed as iron, made the roads in-  
 34 accessible with felled and fallen trees. Thereupon all the sol-  
 diers native to the province, thousands in number rebelled  
 35 and took up their place everyone in one of the big strong-  
 holds, girded for fight, well armed with offensive and defensive  
 36 weapons, full of violence, with strong forces<sup>1</sup>. The Queen  
 Sugalā who had not a mind capable of reflection and was  
 37 inclined herself by nature to evil, let the fatal words of those  
 people influence her. She made over to them the great pos-  
 38 sessions of pearls, jewels and the like over which she had  
 control, as well as the rich treasures belonging to the Tooth  
 and Alms-bowl Relics as if she were throwing them into the  
 39 fire, gave them office, ignorant of the right and the wrong  
 occasion, and began herself through them to start the revolt.

40 When the Lord of men Parakkama whose courage was  
 hardly to be surpassed, heard of these events he smiled gaily  
 41 and joyously. He summoned his general Rukkha by name,  
 a war-tried man, told him how matters stood exactly as he  
 42 had heard of them and spoke to him (thus): "Arise in haste,  
 quench thoroughly the forest fire of the hostile army which  
 43 has broken out with a rain shower of arrows, appoint people  
 whom it is necessary to appoint, to keep the country in order  
 and come again quickly." Thereupon he sent him off with  
 strong forces.

44 Now the Sihala and Keraṭa (mercenaries) dwelling in  
 Koṭṭhasāra<sup>2</sup> banded themselves together with the Velakkūrū<sup>3</sup>  
 45 force and took counsel together: "The Lord of men has sent  
 forth many famous warriors together with high dignitaries to

<sup>1</sup> Verses 22—35 form one sentence. The subject is *sāmanta* in 22 which is again repeated by *gṛihī* in 34. The predicate is *visidhīsu*. All the other verbs are gerunds with which are co-ordinated participles referring to the subject, or absolute locatives.

<sup>2</sup> The place lies not far from Pulathinaguru in an easterly (south- or north-easterly) direction (see note to 61. 43). According to our passage, it seems to have been a garrison for mercenaries.

<sup>3</sup> For the Keraṭas see note to 53. 9, for the Velakkūras note to 60. 36. It is plain from our passage that the Velakkūras were a troop of (Dravidian) mercenaries.

take Rohuya; let us meanwhile take possession of Rūjaratṭha." And they all of one accord began the war. King Parakkama-  
bāhu before whom every sovereign bowed, sent some digni-  
ties who were heroes thither with fitting army and train.  
He had those slain who deserved it, granted several villages  
to those inhabitants living under a common selfgovernment,  
had a number of other villages made into such as were de-  
signed for the royal use<sup>1</sup> and free himself from fear<sup>2</sup> of any  
kind, he made an end of fear of the foe.

But after the general Rakku had with bowed head, pro-  
strate, received the command of the Great King he marched,  
the highly-famed hero, from Puluthinagara, betook himself  
to the locality named Barabbala<sup>3</sup> and halted there. When the  
whole of the forces in Rohuya together with the inhabitants  
of the province<sup>4</sup> received news, in accordance with the facts,  
of his gradual approach, they came to the decision: "as long  
as we are in life we shall not permit him to cross the fron-

<sup>1</sup> It is plain from this passage that certain villages had been assigned to the mercenaries for usufruct. In addition to the exertion of their ringbearers (48a1) they are now punished by the withdrawal of such villages which means a decrease in their revenues. Of the villages taken away some are allotted to peasant holders as communal property (*gāya*), others are declared royal property. I do not believe therefore, that W. is right in translating *gāya* by "assemblies of monks". *Gāya* here is rather the technical, administrative term (skr. the same, cf. BR. s. v. *gāya* 3). For medieval village constitution in Ceylon in which this passage throws a side-light, see H. W. COMMISSIONER, II C. p. 46ff.

<sup>2</sup> P. *bhaya* includes the two concepts: fear (subjective) and danger (objective). Cf. above v. 21.

<sup>3</sup> H. W. COMMISSIONER discusses the campaigns described in 74, 50 ff. in his "Notes on Ceylon Topography in the twelfth century" II. Unfortunately the place names mentioned in verses 50—78 cannot be determined. Later details show however, that this part of the campaign took place in the districts on the right bank of the Mahaveliganga, mainly in Bintenne and the adjoining regions. Barabbala, Kaglekavana, Andulala, Sava, Divācamantahātava, Kimsukavithu, Valarakkhathali, Dāthāvadjhana and Sahodara are unknown.

<sup>4</sup> P. *mahitamū* and *ratiñharāsino*: contrast between the regular army and the militia.

54 tier of our kingdom and enter here", and with great fury,  
 recking nothing of their life, they marched to the same place  
 55 intent on the opening of hostilities. Thereupon the general  
 Rakkha gave this army fearful battle, slew many soldiers,  
 56 broke through the trees which they had felled and flung across  
 the road, and with large forces reached the place called  
 57 Kapṭakavāna<sup>1</sup>. He fought with the hostile army that had  
 taken up its position there by the building of a stronghold,  
 58 broke through the fortifications, forced an entrance and after  
 robbing many thousand warriors of their life, he marched  
 59 farther and came to the place called Ambalala. He offered  
 battle to the army stationed there, broke through the strong-  
 60 hold there and made the whole battlefield full of flesh and  
 blood. Then he marched from there farther, broke through  
 61 the strong fortification of Sava and slew many soldiers. Be-  
 yond this lay the forest Divācandantabāṭava hemmed in on  
 62 both sides of the accessible road by high mountains, and where  
 just at its heart the road was endangered and all traffic made  
 impossible by many huge trees which they had felled and  
 63 thrown down. In this forest from one to two gāvutas in extent  
 the hostile army had laid down one behind the other seven  
 very inaccessible fortifications whose stout gates were not to  
 64 be shaken even by rutting elephants. Against this army that  
 had firmly determined: "we shall in no case permit him to  
 enter as he thinks fit into any single stronghold occupied by  
 65 us"<sup>2</sup> he delivered for several months day and night terrible  
 66 battles and while he slaughtered many thousands of warriors  
 together with their leaders, the general Rakkha with large  
 forces took up a position on the spot<sup>3</sup>.

<sup>1</sup> I. e. "Thorn wood". The part. *chiudanto* is parallel with *wāreṇuto* in 55 c, *chinditecā* is subordinate to the part. *pātīte*. Cf. *chiunapātī-*  
*tarkhehi* in 33 c, as also *chinditecā pātītehi* (*rūkkhehi*) in 62 b.

<sup>2</sup> I should prefer here to place the full stop after *sabbathā* and thus take this word in the *oratio recta*. For the position of *iti* see note to 87. 114.

<sup>3</sup> Verses 55—66 form one sentence. Subj. *Rakkhacamūnātho* in 55 a, again repeated by *cāmūnātho* in 66 d; pred. is *nisiḍdītha* in 66 c. The construction in v. 61—65 is as follows: . . . "after he in the

When the hero, the Great King Parakkama, heard during 67 his sojourn in Pulatthinagara from the mouth of the messengers of Rakkha's constant battles, he gave orders to the 68 Adhikarin Bhūta who dwelt in his palace thus: "An indecisive struggle for so long a time with these wretched rebels is fitting neither for me nor for thee; smite in pieces according 69 to these my orders the whole of the fortifications along with their gates, slay the whole of the numerous army and send 70 me then speedily a true report of these doings." He assigned him numbers of soldiers and sent this man experienced in the 71 art of war, to the scene of the fight<sup>1</sup>.

Hereupon Bhūta marched forth from superb Pulatthinagara 72 and joined with strong forces the commander-in-chief Rakkha. Without in any way departing from the orders of the illustrious 73 Lord of men, they both had doublets of buffalo hide made (for their men) for protection against the arrows, made the 74 great army ready for battle, offered a sharp encounter, slew numerous warriors, many hundreds in number, broke through 75 the seven strongholds, laid down as they were one behind the other, started from there again and came to the village of Kimsukavatthuka<sup>2</sup>. Here too they fought a fearful, bitter 76 fight. Then after they had set out from there and had reached Vaṭarakkhatthali, and after they had here destroyed a hostile 77

forest D. (61 d) . . . (there follow the attributes 61 d to 63 a) . . . with the army (65 b), which, after it . . . had set up fortifications (63 b — 64 a), was firmly determined . . . had fought (65 d) . . ."

<sup>1</sup> It is plain that Rakkha's action in the difficult ground of the Divīcundantabāṇava forest had come to a standstill. Bhūta is sent to his aid. Cf. further the note to v. 90.

<sup>2</sup> Here one might assume the end of the sentence, since the part *yātā* may be regarded as a finite verb. But the subject changes in the sentence. In v. 72 the sing. *so* is subject; but *yātā* must be supplemented by an *ubho* (after Bhūta's joining with Rakkha). *Māvento* which is the reading of all the MSS. (= skr. *mārayautaḥ*) must also be taken as plural. In the continuation of the sentence there is again a change of subject. At first as we see by *vattentō*, the plural (*ubho*) remains subject. Then in v. 78 it is the singular *Rakkhacamūnōtho*. The preceding gerundives in verses 76—78 b are to be treated as loc. abs.

army which had approached from various directions, and thereupon offered battle at the village called Dālhāvadjhana and had further fought an action at the village called Sahodara,  
 78 the general Rakkha who had large forces and train with him,  
 79 sent on many thousands of warriors of his own neighbourhood<sup>1</sup>  
 80 to do away with the hostile army at Lokagalla. Then he destroyed a vast hostile army that approached with the intention meanwhile of overwhelming the commander-in-chief (Rakkha), and retired<sup>2</sup>.

81 The great four-membered army that had marched to Lokagalla so utterly destroyed the division there that only the  
 82 tidings thereof remained, took away from it all its possessions<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> I take *śapetrāna* in the sense of "putting aside for a particular purpose." By the removal of a considerable part of Rakkha's troops the foe is emboldened to make fresh attacks. The operations which H. W. Commissiox certainly interprets right i. e., now become topographically intelligible. Events hitherto have taken place along a line east of the Mahaveliganga. Rakkha probably follows the main road leading from Dastola by way of Mahiyāngaya (Anti-novard) to Bibile. With Commissiox we may look for Sahodarangama somewhere in the region of Bibile. Here Rakkha is forced to halt, to screen in the first place his threatened right flank. The name Lokagalla without doubt corresponds to the modern Loggala. There is a small river of this name which rises on the saddle of Passara and flows northwards to the Mahaveliganga which it joins just where the river bends at right angles to the north. I am informed by Mundiyar WAXASUHANA-Badulla that an old short cut led across the saddle of Passara from Bnttala along the Loggala-oya to the Mahaveliganga. The rebels had reckoned with the possibility that the enemy might use this road for their advance and had occupied it. Rakkha however, advances farther east along the main road. A farther penetration southwards lays him open to the risk however, of being attacked in the flank from Loggala or cut off in the rear. Hence the expedition in this direction briefly described here.

<sup>2</sup> All MSS. have *palāyati*. I will not risk altering it. Moreover it makes good sense. Rakkha cannot for the moment advance. He is content to rebase himself from the foe who is pressing hard on him. Too much stress need not be laid upon the mārētra "eat up" in 80 d. It merely expresses the successful defence.

<sup>3</sup> W. translates: . . . "Yet could they not completely cut off their great resources." He has misunderstood *acchinditvā*. What we have to do

and betook itself then to the place where the commander-in-chief was sojourning. The two armies joined forces, advanced 83 to Majjhinagāma<sup>1</sup> and here made the firm resolve: "We shall not permit the commander-in-chief in Lokagalla to seize the 84 sacred Tooth Relic and the precious Alms-bowl Relic<sup>2</sup>." At 85 the village of Kāṇṭakāvalvāravānta<sup>3</sup> they fought a great battle 86 with the hostile army, destroyed the troops of the enemy and then marched to Uḍḍhanadvāra. With the hostile army which 87 after laying down fortifications, had taken up a position there they fought a severe action, blew up the fortifications along 88 with their gates, destroyed many of the enemy and took up a position in that village to equip army and train (mow). Queen Sugalā took the sacred relics, the Tooth and the Alms- 89 bowl, and betook herself to Uravelā<sup>4</sup>.

with here is not the *a* priv. + *chīmīt*<sup>5</sup>, but the frequently used verb *acchīmīti* "to take away by force" (skr. *ā* + *chīd*; cf. PTS. P. D. s. v.) The *dhāraṇījātī* which has been taken away consists of course of elephants, horses, chariots, arms.

<sup>1</sup> Now Mahigamu, 10 miles south of Bibile. It still lies on the highroad leading from Mahigūma in the south to Polonnaruwa. According to H. W. Codrington to the south of Medagama lately a milestone was discovered with a short inscription of Nissanka Malla (letter of 20th Dec. 1927).

<sup>2</sup> *Lokugullūpīthūsenīvīthūlīkūrīno* cannot possibly be the subject of the principal sentence as W. assumes. That must be sought rather in *dvē* seen in 83a. There is no reason either why the generals who had fought at Loggala should be so set upon the gaining of the sacred reliques. In a far greater degree was this the case with Rakkha. The idea is rather this: Parakkama's generals fear that the hostile troops which had been defeated at Lokagalla might withdraw to the main army and there insist above all on safeguarding the reliques, since all was already lost in the field. This Rakkha and his followers were determined at all costs to prevent.

<sup>3</sup> H. W. Codrington compares this with a present Katupelletta. I cannot find the name either in the Census or on the map. Sinh. *pēlella* means "gate" = P. *dvāra*.

<sup>4</sup> For Uḍḍhanadvāra see note to 61. 16. It was situated near Monaragala, thus about 10 to 12 miles SSE. of Medagama. According to 61. 25 it was the capital of that part of Kolaya called Athasahassā which was ruled by Sirivallabha. Here his widow Sugalā lived and the sacred reliques were kept in her neighbourhood. Uravelā whether she

89 But for the purpose of disposing of the hostile army in  
 90 Dīghavāpi<sup>1</sup> the Lord of men Parakkama had sent forth with  
 an army the Adhikārin Kitti and the Jivitapotthakin Kitti and  
 91 yet other dignitaries with a thoroughly equipped army and  
 92 train<sup>2</sup>. They engaged the foe who coming from the direction  
 of Erāhuļu<sup>3</sup>, had taken up a position at the village called  
 93 Givulaba, in a terrible battle, broke through their fortifications  
 there, killed many enemies, started from there again and  
 94 reached Uddhagūma. There they laid down fortifications, carried  
 on war for three months and put the great army to flight.  
 95 With a hostile army that had erected fortifications near the  
 locality called Hihobu, had dug trenches and spread thorn  
 bushes, and which with massed troops had taken up a position  
 96 ready for combat, they then fought a terrible battle. They broke  
 through the whole stronghold together with the gates and  
 entered by force repulsing each attack with a hail of arrows<sup>4</sup>.  
 97 Therupon they advanced farther and scattered as before, a  
 hostile army that at a spot about a gāvuta in extent beside  
 98 the village of Kirindagūma had as before set up fortifications  
 and there taken up a position, and halted with vast forces at  
 the place called Dīghavāpi<sup>5</sup>.

brought them for safety is identified with good reason by CODRINGTON with Etinole which is situated about 5 to 6 miles south-east of Monaragala. What is curious is that Sugalū when she is forced to flee, does not put a greater distance between herself respectively the relics, and the enemy.

<sup>1</sup> PARKER (Ancient Ceylon, p. 396) was the first as far as I know, to identify this and rightly so with Muhakandiyaveva, 25 to 30 miles NE. of Bibile and about the same distance SW. of Batticaloa. The Ratnamahatmya Bibile assured me that the old name Dikveva is still well known among the people.

<sup>2</sup> I do not believe that the expedition is only now set going after the occupation of Uddhanadvāra by Rakha. It is far more likely that it was begun earlier by the two Kittis, probably sent off by Parakkama at the same time with Bhūta. The author is going back in his description.

<sup>3</sup> CODRINGTON is assuredly right in identifying this with the present district Eravur, NW. of Batticaloa.

<sup>4</sup> Lit. They made the combat one where it was difficult for anyone to come near (*turāsadam*).

<sup>5</sup> The single localities mentioned such as Uddhagūma, Hihobu,

The Ruler of men, Parakkama, the best of far-seeing men, 99 sent to his dignitaries who were at that place, the following message: "Shattered<sup>1</sup> in combat the foe is in flight. 100 They have seized the splendid sacred relics of the Alms-bowl and the Tooth and are fain, through fear, to cross the sea. 101 So have I heard. If this is so, then the island of Laṅkā will be desolate. For though here on the Sihala island various 102 jewels and pearls and the like and costly kinds of various precious stones are found, yet of quite incomparable costliness 103 are the two sacred relics of the Lord of truth, the Tooth and the Alms-bowl. At the cost of much valuable property and 104 by the constant amassing of well-tried and armed warriors I have freed this superb island of Laṅkā from every oppression, 105 but all my pains would be fruitless<sup>2</sup>. My head adorned with 106 a costly diadem sparkling with the splendour of various precious stones, would only be consecrated<sup>3</sup> by the longed-for contact 107 with the two sacred relics of the Great Master, the Tooth and the Alms-bowl. Therefore must ye all, with the same 108 end in view, with army and train and without in any way departing from the orders I give, conquer the hostile army 109 and speedily send me the splendid Tooth Relic and the sacred Alms-bowl." The Adbikārin Kittī by name who was in the 110 district of Dighavāpi, received his message with bowed head, and with his division after assembling about him the many 111 leaders, he marched to the place which the commander-in-chief

Kirinda cannot be determined. At any rate this Kirinda is different from the place of the same name on the coast south of Tissamahārāma. Doubtless however, these events took place on a line running from north to south west of Batticaloa. Moreover the object of the whole undertaking is intelligible. By pressure on the right wing of the enemy the thrust against the main position in the centre at Uḍilhāna-dvāra was to be eased. The army columns then unite at Uḍilhānadvāra for the decisive blow (v. 111, 113).

<sup>1</sup> Lit. *bhinditvā* in a passive sense. See Cūlav. ed. I, Introd. p. XV.

<sup>2</sup> Lit. "These by me, the island liberator, male efforts will be perfectly (*kāmam* "at one's own pleasure") fruitless."

<sup>3</sup> P. *parittito* (lit. "purified") with reference to *attamaigam*, because this ("the head") is only a paraphrase for the person ("my head" = "I").

112 (Rakkha) was occupying. A vast army consisting of hostile divisions and inhabitants of the country<sup>1</sup>, advanced with all  
 113 its leaders, plentifully supplied with arms, equipped for combat,  
 brave, a veritable host of heroes, against the village of  
 114 Uddhanadvāra, full of lust for battle. "Of the enemy who  
 have invaded our country we shall not let a single foe escape.  
 115 On the road which would be the line of retreat of the foe  
 we shall place barricades and make the roads to an extent  
 116 of two to three gāvatas impassable and round about the terri-  
 117 tory occupied by the enemy cut off the supply of food. Then  
 when the whole hostile army is weakened we shall fight an  
 118 action with it in which because of our rain of arrows they  
 will have difficulty in approaching us<sup>2</sup>, and destroy them." So thought the army and after it had in the way above described, put up strong barricades it took up a position, 119 keen for battle. Thereupon the Adhikārin Bhūta, the commander-in-chief Rakha and the Adhikārin called Kitti, the 120 heroes, crushers of the hostile army, after equipping their great army on the battle-field advanced thence according to 121 orders all together and destroyed in a terrible combat a great number of soldiers so that nought but their name remained. They broke with large forces through the stronghold called 122 Mahāvara, marched thence farther, assembled all of them at the place Vyalaggamu by name and war-experienced (as they 123 were) took up a position there. The hostile army which was lying opposite in the district called Sumangala they destroyed in the way described above, and after they had in a terrible battle which was fought at the place called Badagupa scattered 124 in desperate battle the entire army of the for which stood here 125 and had also put to flight in combat the whole army which after laying down fortifications in the district called Urnvelā, had 126 taken up their position there, they took possession of the

<sup>1</sup> I read *sapattivaygikā* and believe this adjective belongs to the *mahācaūha* of the following conjoined. We have thus again the distinction between the regular troops and the militia.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. above v. 96 and note.

splendid relics of the sacred Bowl and of the sacred Tooth and halted on the spot at the head of their mighty army<sup>1</sup>.

At that time an officer of King Mānābharaṇa, the general 127 by name Sūkarabhātudeva, the foolish one, who had been placed 128 in chains by King Parakkama, had burst his fetters and had escaped to Rohaya. Then the Ruler of men summoned the 129 Adhikārin Mañju<sup>2</sup> and spake to him (thus): "The general Sūkarabhātū has fled to his country, thou must come up with 130 him before he has gained a hold anywhere." Therewith the Lord of men sent him off. He betook himself from Pu- 131 latthinagarn to the place called Sāpatagamu<sup>3</sup>. There he fought a great battle with the hostile army. He slew many soldiers 132 and after laying down a fortification took up a position himself there at the head of his large army.

Now<sup>4</sup> all the many rebels, each in his division, roused the 133 whole population of the country down to the very boys (in

<sup>1</sup> Herewith one object of the warlike operations has been attained. The actions described in vv. 119-126 must have taken place in a relatively limited territory SE. of the modern Monrāgala. As the sequel shows, Parakkama's generals had obviously not yet advanced as far as Gulta-sīlū (Buttalū) (cf. v. 154, 156).

<sup>2</sup> It is remarkable that the MSS. have the form Maṇdin. Likewise 75, 152, 155. It is however beyond doubt that the same general is meant as the one mentioned in 74, 144, 75, 150 as Mañju.

<sup>3</sup> CORDRINGTON identifies this with the modern Ilapatgamuva. It lies about 8 miles NW. of Badullū in the Viyaluva Korale, on the right bank of the Mahaveliganga at the spot where it flows from west to east. This throws light on the whole episode. Since Sūkarabhātū has crossed the Mahaveliganga, it may be said that he has escaped to Robama. His object was plainly to organise the rebellion in Malaya, in the rear and flank of Rakkha's troops. For that reason Parakkamabābu is forced to send a new division against him. Mañju suppresses the movement in Malaya, Sūkarabhātū himself however, escapes, joins the rebels in position opposite Rakkha, and takes over the leadership here in the sequel (see v. 153). Mañju remains posted for the moment in order to safeguard the flank of the main army.

<sup>4</sup> I believe that v. 132 closes the Sūkarabhātū episode for the moment. The sequel takes place as v. 136 shows, in front of Rakkha's army. A more exact localisation is impossible, since the individual places cannot be identified. The situation only becomes clear again in v. 154.

134 open revolt). With the firm resolve, even at the sacrifice of their life, not to give up the two relics of the Tooth and of 135 the Alms-bowl, they assembled with hostile intent, mastered 136 by insolence, at the village called Bhattasīpa. Thereupon the 137 commander-in-chief Rakkha, as also the Adhikārin Kittī and 138 the Adhikārin Bhūta and many other officers gave terrible battle to the hostile army, and skilled in war as they were, 139 let not two escape by the same way. They took, in loyal devotion to the King, the Tooth Relic and the Bowl Relic with them, instituted a great sacrificial festival and withdrew 140 unthreatened from any quarter. Now the whole hostile army, well equipped, having taken up arms with fury, gathered 141 together from every side<sup>1</sup> at the place called Demaṭavalā and 142 fought a mighty, terrible and horror-raising battle<sup>2</sup>. By the (corpses of the) men slain in the terrible fight and (the mass of) the cast-off weapons the commander (Rakkha) and the 143 other dignitaries, left (the foe) on every side not even room to place their feet, and after taking<sup>3</sup> with them the splendid reliques of the sacred Bowl and of the snared Tooth, they reached the village named Sappanūrukokilla.

143 Carried off by an attack o' dysentery, the commander Rakkha now went thither in accordance with his doing — all 144 living forms are indeed transitory. The two adhikārins Mañju and Kittī by name<sup>4</sup> without omitting any honour due to his

<sup>1</sup> Demaṭavalā according to COMMUNTOX is now even the name for Okkampitiya which lies a few miles E. of Battala. Popular tradition identifies the vihāra of Okkampitiya with the monastery where Saddhūtissa found refuge after his defeat in battle by his brother Duttthagāmanī. See Mhv. 24. 39 ff.

<sup>2</sup> Verse 140 a is hopelessly corrupt. According to the somewhat high-handed emendation of S. and B. W. translates "(the whole army of the enemy) that was at Vāpi".

<sup>3</sup> Note that the line *gahetrā parare dāthāpattadāthābhodantake* is exactly the same as v. 126 a h. Nevertheless *gahetrā* in the two places must be taken in a different sense. As in this passage a śloka of 6 pādas appears in the same way as these appear elsewhere, the line may be a later addition. The intention was to stress that Rakkha took the reties along with him on all his expeditions. Cf. v. 138.

<sup>4</sup> One expects that along with Kittī Bhūta would be mentioned

rank, carried out the ceremonies of the dead<sup>1</sup>. Now that the wise commander was dead and the Ruler of men tarried afar off, they brought together with exceeding energy the whole army of the Sovereign who was endowed with terrible courage, and while these heroes allowed no possibility of any sort for any kind of panic and celebrated a great festival for the two sacred relics, they sent their report to the illustrious Ruler of men and tarried yet a few days on the spot. When the Sovereign Parakkama heard of these events he had erected<sup>2</sup> on the spot where the commander had been burnt, a vast alms-hall with four entrances, and in order to honour (the dead) by sacrifice he sent the (following) order: "Collect for those bhikkhus coming from the four regions of the heavens and for the other bhikkhus a plentiful gift of alms." (Thus) he (commanded), the best among the grateful, the first among those who have attained knowledge. The two experienced commanders joyfully carried out the order in fitting manner and remained on the spot.

The rebels thought, since the commander-in-chief was dead and they (themselves) had gained a leader in Sūkarabhūtu, they would meanwhile try for victory, and all gathered together in the district of Guttasālā<sup>3</sup>. When the vast, foe-crushing army of King Parakkama heard that, it advanced with its leaders, fighting at various places a severe action, from all sides against the district of Guttasālā. Thereupon all

here. Cf. the association in v. 119, 136. Mañju is still in position (v. 166 ff.) in the N. W., in Malaya. He had thus merely to be summoned to the funeral rites.

<sup>1</sup> P. *petaśeṣāni*. According to the Brahmanical view as it is here and often expressed in ceremonial, the deceased before he is admitted to the world of the manes, becomes a *preta* a "roaming soul". The *ekoddīṭaśrāddha* is offered to the preta. HÜLKERANDT, Ritualliteratur p. 90.

<sup>2</sup> I am now of opinion that direct speech begins first at 150 c. The gerund *kāreṭeā* is, as seems clear from 149 c d, to be subordinated to the finite verb *pesesi*.

<sup>3</sup> Now the modern Buttala. See note to 51. 109. The scene of the contests and the further course of the operations is now again perfectly clear.

the rebels gave up this village and withdrew through fear to  
 158 the village (and) district of Mahâgâma<sup>1</sup>. When the Sovereign  
 Parakkama heard of these events he of matchless bravery sent  
 159 a messenger with the order: "That ye fight as chance wills  
 it, while dragging the relics about from village to village  
 160 pleaseth me not. Send ye both reliques at once to me." When  
 161 the commanders of the army received this message they with  
 the intention of sending the sacred reliques, the Tooth and the  
 162 Bowl to Pulathinagara, entrusted an officer with their care,  
 started from the village called Hintâlavanagâma, and after they  
 163 had as before fought a terrible battle with the approaching  
 hostile army at Khiragâma<sup>2</sup> and had put it to flight on all  
 164 sides, they entered Khiragâma, fought here also a severe action  
 and cut down many. Then they marched farther from that  
 place, fighting at Tanagalukka, and Suklagirigâma, at Kata-  
 165 dorâvâda<sup>3</sup> and Ambagalla<sup>4</sup>, as well as at Tapâlupattha like-  
 wise a furious action, and after bringing hither with great  
 pomp both reliques, the Tooth and the Bowl, they sent them  
 166 to the Adhikârin Mañju. This (officer) had at the village  
 called Sâkhâpatta<sup>5</sup> and at Lokagalla cut down many soldiers  
 and brought all the dwellers in (the district of) Dhanumayâkula<sup>6</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Now Magama, the old capital of Rohanî (see note to 45. 42) in  
 the agricultural district of Tissamahârâmm.

<sup>2</sup> Khiragâma is the place where according to 79. 71 (cf. note to  
 the passage) a cetiya was erected to Queen Ratanâvalî who was cremated  
 there. COMMNOTON as he informs me by letter (20th Dec. 1927), has  
 discovered this stûpa in Badalkumburu near Alupota in the Kandukara  
 Korâr, about halfway between Buttalu and Medagama. It is situated  
 not far from the old high road. It is not impossible that we have to  
 do in v. 162 ff. with movements of retreat in a northerly direction from  
 Buttalu, since Bhûta and Kittî were trying to get into touch with  
 Mañju. For Hintâlavanagâma see also note to 75. 7.

<sup>3</sup> Perhaps the same as the Kauñkakadvâravâta mentioned 74. 85. Thus  
 COMMNOTON.

<sup>4</sup> W. separates the compound *Kañidorâvâdambagallake* into *Kañidorâ-  
 râ Dambagallake* which I consider impossible.

<sup>5</sup> According to COMMNOTON the same as Sâpatagamunva; certainly  
 right. The latter form is nearer to the Sinhalese.

<sup>6</sup> The mention of Lokagalla now Loggala (see note to 74. 79) shows

into his power. He was stationed there, went forth to meet 167 the relics of the Tooth and the Bowl, celebrated for them sacrificial festivals day and night, entrusted the Kammanātha 168 Añjana with the care of the relires and sent the two relires to the Great King. Thereupon he set forth, marched to the vil- 169 lage called Bokusala and held counsel, being versed in counsel, with all the dignitaries: "Our foes know their own country. 170 When we come near them they disperse on every side, pene- trate then (agnin) into the territory that we have brought 171 into our power, in order to conquer it, and vex the people. But would our master, the world conqueror, prize as much as 172 a blade of grass, a kingdom even if it were utterly subdued, but by disregard of his commands, he who knows the course of war? Therefore will we honour the command of 173 our illustrious monarch and in order that the foe may not be able to return to the territory<sup>1</sup> already subdued by us, post 174 there at different places a strong force with officers, and when thus our enemies have their roots cut off by us, we will set 175 forth to lay our hands at the foot lotus of our master." Thus he resolved who was wise among those who understand decisions. Thereupon all the dignitaries who agreed with his 176 words, set forth with the vast army, ready for battle, and 177 marched to the village of Vālivāsaragāma in a district where many roads meet. After they had arrived there and deprived many foes of their life, they set forth thence and built a 178 fortification at the place called Balapāsāya. Having posted there the Lañkāpura<sup>2</sup> Kitti and another large army consisting 179

that Mañju was still in position near the place where he had come into contact with Sūkarabhātu (74. 131 and note). From 70. 17 it is clear that Dhanumaydala was a district in Malaya, approximately corresponding to the present Viyaluvā division.

<sup>1</sup> The gen. *vasikatassa phānassu* stands instead of the loc. governed by *parisvuti*. Cf. Cūlav. ed. I, Introd. p. XVI.

<sup>2</sup> W. translates "Kitti and Lañkāpura". He takes the last-named apparently for the general of this name (76. 83) often mentioned in the sequel to whom apparently 70. 218 also refers. According to the last passage this Lañkāpura was the son of the Lañkādhinātha Kitti.

of the four members, all the dignitaries and leaders set forth  
 180 at the head of the main army with large forces to subdue  
 from one strip of country to the other the numerous rebels  
 in the district called Dīghavāpi<sup>1</sup>.

181 Meanwhile the Ruler of the kingdom, King Parakkamabāhu,  
 tarried in beanteous Pulathinagara where there was no war  
 182 trouble. Endowed with the gifts of faith and insight and  
 with the effects of many meritorious works, he the first among  
 183 those versed in art, spent the day in pleasant pastimes. But  
 now when he learned that the reliques were gradually drawing  
 184 nearer, he spake, his heart full of the greatest satisfaction  
 and joy: "In truth a great gain for me! Blessed is my life,  
 the finest fruit of my labours for the peace of the realm is  
 185 mine now that I may behold and reverence these two reliques  
 of the Monarch of sages." With these and the like exclama-  
 186 tions he the virtuous one, went forth well bathed, beautifully  
 clad, well anointed and beautifully adorned at the head of  
 187 the festively arrayed princes and dignitaries, like to the moon  
 in autumn when it is surrounded by the stars, the distance  
 188 of a yojana to meet (the reliques). At the first glimpse he who  
 was honoured by the pious, honoured them with all kinds of  
 ornaments, with the most varied kinds of precious stones and  
 189 pearls, with costly jewels, with all kinds of incense, with lamps  
 190 and sweet-smelling flowers and with many perfumes giving  
 expression to his reverence, as if the Enlightened One were  
 191 still in life. Unceasingly shedding tears of joy and with tiny  
 hairs bristling as if the inward rapture had burst forth,  
 192 beautifying his whole body, and with floods of the highest  
 joy making drunk his soul, as if he possessed limbs which  
 193 were overwhelmed by showers of the finest neetar, the stead-

<sup>1</sup> Mañju's plan was plainly this, to suppress the revolts which were constantly breaking out in the rear of the army stationed at Guttusūlā-Buttala, in the same way as he had until now covered the flank in Dhanuniyadala. Hence he now marched eastwards into the Dīghavāpi district. In Mhv. 75. 8, 4 Balapūṣṇya is likewise associated with Dīghavāpi. Verses 176—180 form one sentence in which the subject *sabbe 'maccā* (v. 176) is once more repeated by *sabbe 'maccā padhānā ca* (v. 179).

fast one, the superb one bore the splendid Tooth Relic on his head, like to the Moon-bearer<sup>1</sup> who bears the crescent moon upon his head. He showed all his companions the two relics 194 while well versed in the sacred writings, he proclaimed their glory, and after he the all-wise had had a great sacrificial 195 festival celebrated by them (his companions) the Ruler of men had the relics laid down on the spot<sup>2</sup>. He who kept a watch 196 over all his senses, set up a strong guard; he commanded that gifts of every kind should be offered, and then his heart filled 197 with the joy of faith, he returned with his dignitaries and his train to his abode like god Brahmā to the Brahma palace.

Thereupon the King had erected in the middle of the 198 town for the Tooth Relic a splendid temple of fine proportions, like to the hall of assembly, Sudhammī<sup>3</sup>. From the King's 199 Gate onward<sup>4</sup> he had the road for the distance of a yojana made perfectly level like the palm of the hand. Then he who 200 had his joy in the welfare of all beings, had erected everywhere triumphal arches with coloured pictures on them that delighted the heart of the people, and beneath these outspread 201

<sup>1</sup> Name of Śiva who is represented with the crescent moon in the hair above his forehead.

<sup>2</sup> P. *tūṭṭh' era*, i. e. just at the spot where he had raised the Tooth Relic to his head and showed it to his train. According to vv. 187, 199 it was about a yojana (that is about nine miles) from the southern door of the town. Here the relics are kept provisionally until their festive entry into the town.

<sup>3</sup> Skr. *sabha sudhammī*, the hall of the god Indra. E. W. HOPKINS, Epic Mythology, p. 58. It is difficult to say which building in Polonnaruva is meant by this *ilāṭhālāṭughara*. According to 73. 124 ff. Mihinda one of the king's followers, had built such a temple. Later on (78. 41) the circular building in Jetavannarāma is mentioned as the temple of the Tooth Relic. This one can however scarcely be meant in this passage, as it would be difficult to compare it with a *sabha*. Probably the relics were changed about from place to place and this is reflected in a certain vagueness of the tradition.

<sup>4</sup> See 73. 160. As the relics were brought hither from the south we may assume that the King's Gate lay in this direction. The loc. *rūjadeśaramhi* in place of the abl. with *pattikuya* is explained by the influence of the metre. Likewise 75. 72.

canopies<sup>1</sup> tied with garlands of all kinds of flowers in gaily-hued succession. The pillars of the triumphal arches he decked singly with different stuffs and the upper part he provided 202 with rows of umbrellas and whisks<sup>2</sup>, with bunches of all kinds of flowers, with fluttering cloths<sup>3</sup> and banners and other costly 203 things fit as votive offerings. The two sides of the street he embellished with fruit-bearing trees, such as saunfras<sup>4</sup>, banana, 204 areka and coco palms and furnished them with vases filled 205 with charming nosegays, with all kinds of banners and pennons, 206 with lamps and incenses and the like, and adorned the road, 207 capable of distinguishing the true from the false way, like the street Suvarṇasana of the lord of the thirty gods<sup>5</sup>. Then after he 208 who understood how to win good people for himself, had speedily furnished the gate court of the temple of the Tooth Relic 209 like to (the town) Alakū<sup>6</sup>, the Monarch had a priceless jewel 210 hollowed out and filled with sweet-smelling powder. Here the 211 Increaser of the realm placed the superb Tooth Relic, then 212 laid the jewel in a casket of precious stones and this again 213 he placed in a costly box of gold. But the Bowl Relic he 214 placed in a costly golden mangūpa that sparkled with the rays of various precious stones, that was wonderful and 215 shimmering like the rainbow, that rested on four wheels, that was indeed lovely and like to a bundle of rays of the rising sun, on a beautifully arranged seat covered with costly carpets 216 in a sweet-smelling layer of flowers. Then he capable of maintaining what has been won, made people of the clan of

<sup>1</sup> P. *vitānānum patānake*, lit. "outspreadings of canopies." *Vicitru-vappasamṛtām* precedes. The stretching out of the canopies is described by the three derivatives of the root *tva* (with *vi*, *pa* and *sma*).

<sup>2</sup> The whisk, *cūmra*, male of the tail of the yak, *bos grunniens*, belongs like the umbrella to the insignia of royalty.

<sup>3</sup> P. *vitūnehi*. The word cannot mean "canopy" again here. The instrumentals in v. 202 & and 203 are governed by *sajjetrā*.

<sup>4</sup> Name of the King's cocopalm.

<sup>5</sup> P. *tridusinlassa*. Indra or Śakra is meant. *Triduṣa* is also in Skr. a general designation for the gods. Suvarṇasana is in epic poetry the name of Indra's palace (E. W. HOPKINS, Epic Mythology, p. 55, 141).

<sup>6</sup> The same as Alakunandā (37. 106), town of the God Krivara.

the Lambakannas with umbrellas, whisks and swords in their hands and other people of noble families place themselves round the *mandapa* for its protection. Round about the *mandapa* he placed splendidly attired dancing girls in many hundreds of (other) costly *mandapas*, each of these being accompanied by people bearing lutes, flutes, drums and the like in their hands and by bands of female musicians who were like to the heavenly musicians<sup>1</sup>, to do honour with their dance, their song and their music (to the relics). With all kinds of flowers, with incense and various perfumes he filled the town with fragrance<sup>2</sup> and delighted the crowd of people. With the light of many thousands of lamps he transformed the heavenly regions and the intermediate regions into pure glory. With rows of umbrellas and whisks, with rows of coloured banners and all kinds of pennons he veiled the whole firmament. With the trumpeting of elephants and the neighing of horses, with the clutter of chariot wheels and the rattle of kettle-drums; with the enrapturing tone of all the festive shell trumpets, with the roll of the great drums and the cries of victory of the bards; with the shouts of acclamation and loud clapping of hands and the jubilant cries (of the people) he filled the regions of the heavens with noise<sup>3</sup>. - The Monarch himself arrayed with all his ornaments, mounted his favourite, beautiful elephant<sup>4</sup> which was hung with coverings of gold, and sur-

<sup>1</sup> P. *gandhabbi*. The *gandhabba*, skr. *gundharcaḥ* are semi-divine beings, the heavenly musicians. They are thought of as males, their feminine counterpart are the Apsaras. A feminine *gandhabbi* could only arise in the Pāli stage after the more general meaning "musician (pure and simple)" had been formed for the masculine alongside of the original meaning.

<sup>2</sup> P. *vāsayitvā* from the denom. *vāsay*. Likewise in Mhv. 5. 139 "His seat after being perfumed, used to be hung up". My translation of that passage was wrong.

<sup>3</sup> P. *sādhukāraninādena*. By the constantly repeated cry of *sādhu* the people are accustomed to give expression to their joy and enthusiasm during festive processions. *Kārente mākhārā dīsā*, lit.: "make the heavens talkative".

<sup>4</sup> P. *pararam nāgam . . . subham*.

225 rounded by many dignitaries, who rode their steeds<sup>1</sup>, he  
 226 went forth with great pomp<sup>2</sup> from the splendid town, betook  
 himself to the sacred Tooth Relic and to the glorious Bowl  
 Relic, reverenced them in worthy fashion with hands folded  
 227 on the brow, and while offering to them with his own hands  
 sweet-smelling flowers he went on his way with both relics<sup>3</sup>.

228 Now at an unusual time a great cloud gathered spreading  
 herself forth<sup>4</sup>. With her hollow rumbling she increased the  
 roll of the drums and with the bright bouquet of the rainbow  
 229 she adorned the space of the heavens. She made lustrous  
 lightning quiver on all sides, an instructress for the dance  
 230 begun by the peacocks. Together with the dust raised by  
 231 the hoof-beat of the horses she made the wreath of the sun's  
 rays disappear and veiled the whole firmament in thick darkness.  
 232 When the dignitaries saw all this they thought again and  
 again: she will pour forth violent rain to distract the high  
 233 festival, and their hearts filled with sore trouble, they betook  
 themselves to the all-wise Ruler and considered what was to  
 234 be done. But the Great King who knew the excess of his  
 own power and the unimaginable majesty of the great Sage,  
 235 spake (thus): "Be ye not troubled; here a marvellous high  
 festival is being celebrated that captivates the hearts of men  
 236 and gods, and I have set forth with unapproachable courage,  
 rich in merit, rich in wisdom, rich in glory, rich in fame.  
 237 What god, what Mūra and Brahmā would be able to hinder  
 238 the magnificent festival taken in hand by me? Harbou'r therefore  
 no fear when ye convey the two reliques, but set forth on

<sup>1</sup> P. *rāhūmārūḍha*. The word *rūhāna* means it is true, not merely riding animals but vehicles of every kind, also chariots.

<sup>2</sup> P. *mūnabhūṭṭeṇa mahucca* seems to be a transposition of *mūhaceṇa mūnabhūṭṭeṇa*. D. I. 49<sup>32</sup>, M. II. 118<sup>14</sup> we have *mūhaceṇa rājānūnabhūṭṭeṇa*. Buddhaghosa says (Samv. I. 148<sup>11</sup>) *mūhaceṇa rājānūnabhūṭṭeṇāti*, *mūhantī ca rājānūnabhūṭṭena*; *mūhaceṇa ti pi pāli*, *mūhantī ti uttho*; *tingripurīyāgāya rsu*.

<sup>3</sup> Verses 198 to 227 form one sentence. The principal verb is *pūti-pūjji*. The preceding verbs are gerunds or present participles.

<sup>4</sup> Lit.: A great untimely cloud came up, spreading itself out (v. 231 c d) increasing . . . decorating . . . etc. making the whole firmament veiled in a mass of darkness.

your way." With these words the discerning (prince) set forth. Then the great cloud while filling all the ponds and rivers outside the range of the festival with floods of rain, as she approached the great procession, moved along before it and rained just enough to lay the dust of the ground<sup>1</sup>. When all the inhabitants of the town who had gathered together and the virtuous sons of the Sage, many hundreds in number, saw this miracle they cried: "In truth of great majesty is this Ruler of men, the foe-subduer; in consequence of his high merit he has appeared in Laikā. Here is merit, here is wisdom, here is pious devotion<sup>2</sup> to the Tathāgata, here is fame and glory and exceeding great sublimity." Proclaiming these and other words of highest wonderment they filled all regions of the heavens with loud songs of praise. While thus the Monarch accomplished such a series of wondrous things as had never been seen or heard of before, he celebrated the high festival in a manner befitting his majesty, and after the wise (prince) had had the two relics brought into the temple of the Tooth Relic, the hero who was a single light for the whole world, celebrated for seven nights long a festival of lamps.

Thus did the King Parakkamabāhu before whom monarchs did obeisance, institute in pious fashion for the glorious relics a great festival that like none other called forth joy, rejoicing, wonder and admiration from all people who beheld it.

Here ends the seventy-fourth chapter, called "Account of the Festival of the Tooth Relic", in the Mahāvūpiṇa, compiled for the serene joy and emotion of the pious.

<sup>1</sup> *Hatrāra parato sayay* must be joined "placing itself at the head". The acc. *dhāra-parāga-mittam* is governed by *pasamay* *anyony* (pres. part. of *neti*) lit.: bringing to rest, stilling.

<sup>2</sup> Notice here the expression *bhatti* = skr. *bhakti* i. e. love, surrender in faith. The *bhaktimīrya* as path to salvation comes in Hinduism as third after *karmamārga*, practice of the ritual, and after *jñānamārga* philosophic knowledge. The use of *bhatti* in this passage shows plainly the influence of Hindu ideas on Buddhism. What Viṣṇu is to Hinduism that Buddha is here — the object of *bhakti* (see H. Jacobi, Die Entwicklung der Gottesidee bei den Indern, p. 28). The word *bhatti* occurs again in the same sense in 85. 38 and 121 and in 93. 9, 10 in *Sivabhatti* which is contrasted with the Buddhist faith.

## CHAPTER LXXV

## THE CONQUEST OF ROHANA

1 Now all the dignitaries and leaders set forth with great  
 2 forces to occupy the district of Dighavīpimāḍalā<sup>1</sup>. After  
 3 fighting a great battle at the place Savanaviyala and utterly  
 4 destroying the stronghold there with its twelve gates, and  
 5 after fighting further at the place Gomuyagūma, at Chaggāma  
 6 and at the stronghold Balapāsāṇa<sup>2</sup> a severe action and shatter-  
 7 ing the hostile army, they halted at the stronghold named  
 8 Balapāsāṇa with army and train. Thereupon the dignitaries  
 9 and leaders set out thence, fought a sharp combat in the  
 10 district of Mālavathmka, and while fighting at various places  
 — at Vadragāmakapāśīṇa, at the village called Mulutta, at  
 11 Senaguttagāma, at Bolagūma, at the place Vānarugūma and at  
 12 Gallambatthikagāma great battles in terrible succession, they  
 13 marched from all sides against the village of Hīntālavanagāma<sup>3</sup>.

<sup>1</sup> The narrative starts immediately after 74. 180 and continues the description of the operations set on foot by Mañjo. Cf. *sabbe 'maccū padhūnū ca mūhabulupurakkhatū* (74. 179 c d) with *sabbe umaccā ca padhūnā ca mahabbalā* (75. 1 a b).

<sup>2</sup> Balapāsāṇa is already mentioned in 74. 178. It must be assumed either that the place had in the meantime been abandoned by Kittī or that vv. 2, 3 are merely a repetition of 74. 176 E. Codrington identifies Chaggāma with the modern Sukamam, situated near the east coast at Tirukovil.

<sup>3</sup> It is, I believe, impossible to determine the places named in vv. 5, 6. But evidently the troops march in broad alignment through the district of Dīghavāpi in a concentric direction — hence *sawantuto* — to Hīntālavanagūma. This must be looked for according to 74. 162 near Khīmgāma, thus somewhat north of Haltala. In this region the troops of Kittī and Bhūta were probably standing. Thus there is evidently a plan for uniting the whole army and striking a decisive blow in the neighbourhood of Gullasāla and Mahāgūma.

With the hostile army that stood here after it had erected 8 on a space of three gāvutas<sup>1</sup>, a strong fortification with many entrenchments, they fought a great battle, slew numbers of 9 soldiers and took up a position on the spot, spreading fear amongst the foe. But now the rebels all set off for Dīgha- 10 vāpiṇṇapālala with the intention of (re-)taking the (already) captured province<sup>2</sup>. When the dignitaries in Hintālavāṇagāma 11 received exact tidings of this undertaking they sent off many soldiers. These covered in two nights a tract of ground of 12 twenty gāvutas<sup>3</sup>, fought a great battle, cut down the foe and 13 so terrified them that they gave up trying to renew the contest. Then they returned victorious to their place<sup>4</sup>. Hereupon 14 all the dignitaries near this village having fought with the foe — who after throwing up an entrenchment at the place 15 named Ādipālapunnāgakhaṇḍa were standing in the district of Guttasālā — a great battle and after likewise fighting at Corambagāma, further at the village of Mūlānagāma and at 16 Kuddālamandala a severe action, set forth from the place called 17 Hintālagāma. They fought an action at Kittirājavālu kagāma, further a terrible battle at the place called Ulndā, at the 18 village named Vāluka and after fighting an action at Iluyala- gāma, they halted, slaying many enemies<sup>5</sup>.

<sup>1</sup> Over six miles. See note on 73. 154.

<sup>2</sup> Thus the revolt breaks out again in the rear and the flank of the army. The pacification of the Dīghavāpi district had not been successful.

<sup>3</sup> More than 40 miles.

<sup>4</sup> I. e. to the headquarters at Hintālagāma.

<sup>5</sup> One must not be misled by the accounts of the success of single actions. It is clearly the case here of guerilla warfare. In open light the rebels offer little resistance. But when the revolt seems to have been suppressed at one place, it at once breaks out anew in another. The accounts of "great battles" (*mahāyuddha*) and the "bitter or severe actions" (*tumula rāya*) in which the hostile army is shattered and countless soldiers slain, are too much of a formula to lay claim in all their details to historical credence. Every encounter whether important or unimportant, is described very nearly in the same way. The capture of the relics was certainly an important moral success. But the main object of the whole enterprise, as it is alleged in 74. 40 ff. was not

19 Now to make the town Mahānāgahula which had been  
 inhabited by former kings, a royal capital<sup>1</sup> by the Great King  
 20 were sent forth the Damiñādhikārin Rakkha and Rakkha the  
 Chief of the chamberlains, and they having equipped a great  
 21 army, set forth full of lust for battle. The Chief of the  
 chamberlains Rakkha herenpon sent off the Kesadhbātu by name  
 22 Devarūja, who dwelt in Pañcayojana, with a great army, and  
 after destroying numbers of foes there, he being experienced  
 23 in the art of war, smote the enemy who after throwing up  
 many entrenchments at the village of Gimhatittha, in order  
 to make it the royal capital, had taken up their stand there,  
 so utterly that nought but the tidings of them remained.  
 24 Then to allow the exhausted army to recover from the combats,  
 the hero tarried a few days on the spot<sup>2</sup>.

25 Therenpon the enemy gathered together and driven by  
 their heavy grief, they took grave counsel (together) as follows:  
 26 "The power of the Ruler of men Parakkama, which is like  
 achieved. Cf. below v. 119 ff. Parakkama's troops were unable to pass  
 the Buttala line. The King realises that and develops an entirely new  
 plan of campaign, an attack from the north-west, with Dakkhīqadesa  
 as base.

<sup>1</sup> A curious expression meaning about the same as "to bring into his power". For the idea must be that Parakkama now risks a direct advance against the capital of Rohaya. But perhaps we have to do with an old corruption of the text? Note that the pūda tato kātum rājadhānam is immediately repeated in 22 c.

<sup>2</sup> The military expeditions of the two Rakkhas dealt with in detail by COBBINGTON in his Notes on Ceylon Topography in the Twelfth Century, II., are quite intelligible as regards their plan and course. That of the Kañcukināyaka Rakkha is first spoken of. His task was to penetrate from Dakkhīqadesa along the south-west and the south coast as far as Muhānūgahula situated at the mouth of the Valaveganga (cf. note to 58. 40). Before he begins the advance he secures his left flank by the expedition which starts from Pañcayojana, now Pasdun-Korale, east of Kalutara (cf. note to 57. 71). The hostilities then begin at Gimhatittha, now Gintota, a few miles west of Galle. Rakkha had apparently penetrated as far as this place from the frontier of Dakkhīqadesa as which we may regard the Kaluganga, without encountering resistance. The rebels who were about to fortify Gimhatittha as a residence for Sngalā were evidently completely surprised.

to the fire at the destruction of the world, is hard to subdue even by the kings in the whole of Jambudīpa. Even the Lord 27 of men Gajabāhn and the Ruler Mūnūbharapa, these two lion-like kings, skilled in war, who prepared a great army and 28 spent much money, though they fought day and night in divers ways, when they heard the sound of his drum of triumph 29 were scattered afar. They became as glowworms at the rising of the sun, and since tortured by fear, they were not even 30 able to stay in their own country, they seeing no other way of escape, sought refuge with (the god of the dead) King Yama. Save the wilderness, there is for us no other protection. In 31 every way our land is furnished with mountain wildernesses and the like. Therefore let us at all inaccessible places throw 32 up many entrenchments, make all the well-known highways impassable, lay down many robbers' paths, and when then our 33 land has been made impassable let us gather ourselves together and open battle." Herewith the rebels being all of one 34 accord, marched to the mouth of the Gālu river<sup>1</sup> full of the lust of battle. When the Chief of the chamberlains 35 heard thereof, he marched thither, fought a great battle with them and put them to flight. The army which had been 36 shattered in the battle joined from all sides with the foe who had his position at Mahāvīlukagāma<sup>2</sup>. The Chief of the 37 chamberlains Rakha gave his army time to breathe; then he marched farther in order to fight the foe at Mahāvīlukagāma. He shattered all the enemy and made the battlefield (bloody) 38 as the womb of the Nāgas<sup>3</sup> when afflicted by the Garudas<sup>4</sup>.

<sup>1</sup> W. is probably right in identifying the Gālmadī with the Ginganga at whose mouth at Gintota the troops of Rakha had according to v. 24 halted. Gālu can scarcely have anything to do with the name of the town of Galle. It is a question, whether we should not keep to the MSS. reading of *gālurajjumukhadēvāray*.

<sup>2</sup> Now Veligama halfway between Galle and Dondra. It appears that the main body of the hostile army had its position at this place. When its vanguard had been beaten by Rakha near the mouth of the Gālu river the whole army concentrated at Veligama.

<sup>3</sup> P. *garula* is the skr. *garuḍa*. This in the singular is in the first place the name of a mythical griffin-like bird which is regarded as Viṣṇu's

39 He drove them thence as a panther many gazelles and the  
 40 victory gained, halted there himself with large forces. Then  
 the Chief of the chamberlains who was himself versed in the  
 consideration of advantage and disadvantage, while he sojourned  
 41 in Vālukagāma, reflected thus: "These foes perish of a truth  
 in great numbers, like moths who know not the danger of  
 42 the fire and are burnt therein. But when they have perished  
 the land will become like to a wilderness. And they know  
 43 not the great-heartedness of our King. From now onwards  
 we must grant the foes who surrender, freedom from punish-  
 44 ment and give them protection". Hereupon he sent to some  
 of the inhabitants of the province the message: "All those who  
 45 would preserve their lives, let them come to me." Now when  
 the merchants who dwelt in the port of Vālukagāma<sup>1</sup> to whom  
 46 their life and their money were dear, heard that, they came  
 in great numbers and (with them) other of the inhabitants  
 from all sides to the Chief of the chamberlains Rakkha and  
 47 presented themselves to him, tortured with fear. Hereupon  
 he sent his soldiers forth and made them several times fight  
 an action with the foe at different places such as Devanagarn  
 48 and at Kammāragāma, at Mahāpanālagāma and at the village  
 of Mānakapīṭhi, at the ford called Nilavāla and at the village  
 49 named Kadaliṭṭha<sup>2</sup>. He remained victor at all these places  
 50 and received graciously all who came to him. Now all the

steed. At the Pāli stage the word in the plural serves as designation of a whole group of such birds. They are the deadly enemies of the serpent spirits called Nāgans. See note to 41. 80.

<sup>1</sup> It is interesting to learn that Veligama was at that time (12th c.) a not unimportant trading-centre, thanks probably to the spacious and sheltered bay on which it lies.

<sup>2</sup> The progress of the Kāñcukināyaka along the coast is easy to follow. Devanagara is the modern Devandura (Dondra) at the southern point of the island. Kammāragāma the village Kambarugamava halfway between Veligama and Matara which just we recognise in Nilavālatittha, since it lies near the mouth of the Nilvalaganga. The name Matara means "great ford". The remaining names can no longer be identified. What is striking is the sequence of the narrative, since Devanagara could only be occupied after the capture of Kammāragāma and Nilavālatittha.

rebels made the resolve: "We shall not permit the all too mighty army of the foe after crossing the river at the place Mahākhetta, to fight (with us)". They set forth and themselves full of fury, reached the bank of the river. When the Chief of the chamberlains heard of this event he sent forth his army to march thither to fight with the foe. Thereupon the best soldiers of the two parties fought a severe action in the middle of the river. Now raged between the two armies a terrible battle like to that of the gods with the Dānavas<sup>1</sup> who rose from the ocean. While now the great warriors stood in battle with the hostile army, they reflected thus: "An indecisive battle with these people is the same as a defeat. If not to speak of our Lord, the Chief of the chamberlains hears such tidings, that means a great humiliation. Let us therefore break in pieces the foe like small sugar canes, fling them into the water of the river and make them food for the fish and the turtle, otherwise it is we who shall still their hunger." They fought an exceeding terrible battle like the monkeys who leapt over the ocean<sup>2</sup> in the combat between Rāma and Rāvaṇa. They caused the swift river to flow with flesh and blood and set forth with strong forces to take Dīghāli<sup>3</sup>. The warriors marched thither and rooted out the host of their foes as elephants a banana grove into which they have broken.

<sup>1</sup> The Dānavas are demon-like creatures, asuras, enemies of the Devas. This passage refers to the fight described in the Mahābhāratā I. 5. 19, in which the gods after getting hold of the amṛta conquer the demons who then withdraw below the ground and into the sea. Cf. HURKINS, Epic Mythology, p. 48; II. JACOBI, Mahābhāratā, p. 5.

<sup>2</sup> Refers to the battle described in the Rāmāyaṇa VI. 24.

<sup>3</sup> It is not easy to establish the locality of these battles. It is clear that Mahākhetta (v. 50) and Dīghāli must be situated close together. CORRINGTON looks for them (cf. note to 72. 63) on the Nilvalaganga north of Matara. But since Rakkha has already taken Devanagara, he must stand on the left bank of this river. We must thus assume that the rebels were trying to turn Rakkha's left flank and that he was therefore forced to give up the advance eastwards and to make a change of front northwards. The identification of Dīghāli with Dikvella is difficult to maintain, since the river is absent upon and at which the fights described must have taken place.

62 There shattered, the enemy gathered together again at the place called Suvappūnala<sup>1</sup> and began the combat anew.  
 63 Then the Chief of the chamberlains also sent thither numbers of soldiers. There hailed down an uninterrupted rain of arrows  
 64 and after ascertaining through spies a passage leading through the forest, they penetrated the path pointed out by them,  
 65 slew many soldiers who had sought shelter in the various entrenchments and cleansed Suvappūnala also from the briers  
 66 (of the rebels). Hereupon the Chief of the chamberlains who was himself on the way to Mālāvaratthālī, sent to the soldiers  
 67 who had marched to Suvappūnala the (following) message: "I am on the march to the village of Mālāvaratthālī; set ye  
 68 forth also on the way thither." When the people heard that, they did so, and he took them all with him and betook himself to Mālāvaratthālī<sup>2</sup>.  
 69 The war-skilled Dāmīḍhikārin Rakkha by name, betook  
 70 himself at the head of a strong force to Donivagga<sup>3</sup>. When

<sup>1</sup> CORRINGTON says: "Suvappūnala is Ranmalikanda situated northwest of Kirimā, or the range which includes this hill and divides West Giruva Puttu from Matara district". Kirimā lies NNE. from Matara about 20 miles distant.

<sup>2</sup> It is clear from the passage that the march to Suvappūnala was only the lateral expedition of a division detached from the main army. I do not believe therefore that Mālāvaratthālī should be looked for in the line of march after Suvappūnala. It lay rather on that followed by the Kañenkināyaka in his advance. As this was directed towards Mahānāgahulū, thus in the direction of the lower course of the Vula-veganga (see note to 58. 39), I should look for Mālāvaratthālī farther south, somewhere between Viraketiya and Tangallī.

<sup>3</sup> We may assume that the narrative here goes back somewhat in time and that the advance of the second Rakkha in Donivagga took place simultaneously with that of the first Rakkha in Gimhatittha or very soon after. Parakkamabāhu's plan of campaign was evidently to advance from two sides against Mahānāgahulū, the capital of Rohaya, from the west and the north-west. Donivagga is the depression at Pelmadulla-Opanake, about twelve miles east of Ratnapura. The name is preserved in that of the small river Denavaka which flows through the depression. As there is considerable rice cultivation in this region it is particularly suited for the gathering of an army.

the numerous rebels heard tidings thereof, they gave true 71  
 tidings of the situation to the Laṅkāpura Rakkha who was  
 in the town called Mahānāgahula and sent an urgent message  
 to come hither immediately. They thought: the road leading 72  
 from Dōpiyagga to Navayojana is very difficult, therefore let  
 us hinder the (direct) passage into our province from there 73  
 at the difficult places<sup>1</sup>, and with great fury they set about  
 beginning hostilities. The war-skilled Damiñādhikārin Rakkha 74  
 wished now before the beginning of the war on the part of  
 the enemy, to strike a decisive blow<sup>2</sup> and in his lust for 75  
 fighting, sent off many soldiers and the Kesadhātu Loka and  
 the Saikhanāyaka Nāthu by name and other officers. These 76  
 fought a great battle and won a great victory. The shattered 77  
 foe flung into confusion by great terrors, gathered again at  
 the place Guralatthakalañcha. Now the Damiñādhikārin Rakkha 78  
 again sent forth his great army to take away this place also<sup>3</sup>.

<sup>1</sup> The passage offers difficulties. What is now called Navadun Korale (= Navayojana; cf. note to 72. 40) is mainly the region of Pelmadulla. Formerly however, Navayojana, as Codrington points out, seems to have been of greater extent. I am inclined to think that it embraced in medieval times the whole region east and south-east of Puslun Korale, i.e. Knkul Korale, Hinimun Puttu, Moravak Korale. It was in this territory that the combats described in 72. 60–64 took place. Kūlagiribhūndu also mentioned there is probably only a part of Navayojana. The purport of our passage seems to me to be this: the rebels have no fear of being threatened from the west, from Navayojana, as in that case Rakkha would first have to cross the Rukkuna mountains. He will, they thought, avoid this difficult line of march, but is more likely to advance along the direct road (*kruthypacesam*). This would be more or less the road leading now from Madampe south-eastward to Ambalantota at the mouth of the Valaveganga. It was here at the places fit for resistance that the rebels believed the defence should be organised. We shall see in the sequel that Rakkha later on nevertheless risked the march over the mountains.

<sup>2</sup> P. *mukkubhinga*, see note to 63. 30.

<sup>3</sup> The name Guralatthakalañcha suggests the Atakanal Korale. With this is designated the name of the district in which Madampe lies. It is quite intelligible that Rakkha wishes to gain a footing here, in order to secure for himself access to the road leading to Mahānāgahula. The Col. Ed. reads *Garuñatthakalañcha* as against the MSS. It is a risky thing however, to change names just in order to get a particular meaning.

79 The brave warriors arose, broke through many entrenchments,  
 even broke through the main fortifications which were provided  
 80 with numerous gates and reached the place which the foe  
 was occupying. They took whom they could alive, sent many  
 81 other foes straight into the jaws of death, put to flight the  
 others who found no further support, and cleansed this place  
 82 also from the briers (of the foe). Then they returned (to  
 Rakkha), and he showed them befitting favours.

83 Now in order to protect the enemy whom the king's  
 majesty had turned to ashes, by the application of kindness,  
 84 even as a cloud (shelters) the forest set on fire by the glow  
 of the summer sun, the prudent Damiḍḍhikūrin returned to  
 85 Donivagga<sup>1</sup>. He appointed to every district that he had  
 captured, the appropriate people, took those who had submitted  
 86 to his dominion<sup>2</sup> under his dominion and purged this  
 district also<sup>3</sup>. The enemy who after throwing up entrench-  
 ments, had taken up their position at Pūgadavālakañvāta<sup>4</sup>,  
 87 renewed the fight with strong forces. The Damiḍḍhikūrin,  
 well skilled in the game of war, thereupon sent thither also  
 88 many soldiers with their officers. The brave warriors went  
 forth and with the rain of arrows which they let rain<sup>5</sup>, with  
 89 the rattle of the drums and the clash of swords they were  
 like to the flushing march of a storm cloud that appears ont

<sup>1</sup> The fact that Rakkha returns to Donivagga and that now like his namesake, (75. 41 ff.) he seeks to win over the rebels by kindness shows that he has not achieved his object. The breach planned along the main road to Mahānāgabula has not succeeded, the advance has been checked at a certain place.

<sup>2</sup> I should expect *vase yante* rather than *vase hante* (cf. 77. 10 and note).

<sup>3</sup> Probably Donivagga. It is to be assumed that the revolt broke out also in Rakkha's rear.

<sup>4</sup> The place cannot be identified with certainty. If what is meant is the place Danilava lying between Kahavatta and Opanake, the rebels had advanced very near to Rakkha's base. Later on Pūgadavālakañvāta becomes Rakkha's headquarters (cf. 75. 143).

<sup>5</sup> *P. vassitā* is instr. sg. for *vassitenā*; in the same way *virattanā* stands in d for *virattanena*.

of season. Through delight in their own heroism<sup>1</sup> chasing away the weariness of combat, they celebrated the goddess 90 of heroes with their drums of victory. When they thereupon heard that numbers of the foe had built a stronghold at the 91 place called Tambagāma and had taken their stand there, the heroes of tried valour were minded to show that nothing but heroic action pleased them, marched by night thither and invaded 92 (the place), through the sound of their war drums challenging the foe to fight. But when the rebels heard the clatter of the 93 drums they thought a thunderbolt had fallen on their heads and in the greatest panic some fled while others perished. 94 But those (victors) burned down the fortification so that nought but ashes remained and returned with strong forces to Pū- 95 gadaṇḍāvāṭa<sup>2</sup>. The Damilādhikārin Rakkaṭa called back his own troops and sent forth to subdue the enemy who lurked 96 here and there in their district, the four-membered army with its officers. This army cut down at Bodhiṇvāṭa, at Bhinnāla- 97 vannagāma<sup>3</sup> and at Atarandāmubābodhikkhandha numbers of the enemy, fought also a night action and returned thence.

Now the Damilādhikārin marched at the head of strong 98 forces to the place called Sūkarālibheripāsāya<sup>4</sup>. Without 99

<sup>1</sup> P. *rārasu-assādā*. Again an allusion to the Indian rasa doctrine. See note to 72. 94.

<sup>2</sup> Again it is the case of a direct attack on Mahānūgahula, but which again did not lead to a break through. Tambagāma is without doubt the village of Tambagomuva lying about 8 miles ESE. of Madampe near the road leading to Ambalantota from which it is separated by the Rakvanaganga. The village gives its name to the district Tambagama Pattuva. (Census Ceylon, 1921, II, p. 490.)

<sup>3</sup> The Col. Ed. reads here *Hintālavanagāma*. In the writing this form is hardly distinguishable from the form which I have adopted. In any case this Hintālavanagāma could have nothing to do with the place of that name mentioned 74. 162; 75. 7, 11, 17, which was situated at Khirugāma not far from Buttala.

<sup>4</sup> In this name are combined two neighbouring places, Sūkarāli and Bheripāsāya. The first is the present Urubokku, the second Berapapanatara. We owe these identifications to COORNGTON. I had them also from the principal of the Dharmasalava in Ratnapura, URAPOLA RATANAJOTI, with whom I discussed the passages of the Mhv. in ques-

disregarding in any way the orders of the Ruler of men (Parakkamabāhu) he restored the people who without being 100 hostile, had hidden themselves here and there, to their district as before. And after he had placed the proper officials in the 101 district (thus) won, he set forth at the head of a fearsome, strong army and reached the village named Simālālatthali<sup>1</sup>. 102 Now the many rebels lurking in various places<sup>2</sup>, summoned 103 hither the army of the inhabitants of the country. Thus in possession of large forces, they then also summoned the Laṅkāpura Rakkhā whom they had themselves made commander-in-chief and who at the head of many hundreds of warriors 104 filled the world with the sound of his drums and kettledrums,

tion. The two places are only about two miles distant from one another in the Moravak Korale south of Pehundulla-Madampē, on the other side of the Rakvana mountain range. I believe Rakkhā's tactics were somewhat like this: The general has realised that a break through along the highway (now Madampē-Tambagomma-Ambalantola) is impossible. He tries it now with an outflanking manoeuvre. With this object he crosses the mountain range to the south of Rakvana in order to attack the enemy from Moravak Korale (= Navayojana) that is just from the side where the rebels thought themselves safeguarded by the difficulty of the ground (see note to v. 73). The passage was without doubt the Bulntota pass which forms a natural saddle between the Galkamla and the Kurnlkanda. It seems to me not improbable that it was already used in mediaeval times. After the crossing of the Bulntota pass Rakkhā had however another parallel chain to traverse. It may be assumed that for this he made use of the deepest depression at Butkamla over which in the future the road will run which is to meet the Bulntota road from the south (Deniyaya). It is here that the footpath now runs which joins Rakvana with Deniyaya. CORRINGTON's comparison of the Mahābodhikkhanda mentioned in v. 97, with Butkanda has now greater significance. It must be assumed that the expedition described in v. 96-97 had the character of a reconnaissance.

<sup>1</sup> RATANAJOTI told me of a village Hintalgoila in Moravak Korale but I cannot find the name either in the list of place names in the Census (vol. II) or on the map.

<sup>2</sup> Evidently as sentries on the look-out. Verses 102 and 103 show what surprise and terror the appearance of Rakkhā in Moravak Korale caused among the rebels. First the militia are called out to help and then the commander-in-chief himself who according to v. 70, was at that time in Mahānāgahula.

and so advanced to Nadibhaṇḍagāma<sup>1</sup>. When the Damiḍhā- 105  
 kārin heard of this undertaking, the prudent one summoned  
 his soldiers and held with them the following speech: "Here 106  
 shall ye now show your devotion to your Lord (the king)  
 and I shall be witness to your heroism. Think not: this is 107  
 bad ground, the foe are very dauntless, but believe without  
 doubting in the winning of the victory on the battlefield 108  
 through the majesty of our Lord and Master. But go first  
 and occupy the right place for the battle." Thereupon these 109  
 set forth with great determination and occupied full of daring,  
 a position near Mahāsenagāma<sup>2</sup> in order to fight. Now the 110  
 warriors on both sides flung themselves on to the battlefield.  
 With the sparks born of their arms as they beat against each  
 other, staving the whole firmament as it were by day, and 111  
 with the outpouring of their rain of arrows filling all regions  
 of the heavens, they began the battle, letting their battle-cry  
 sound forth. But the Damiḍhikārin, the mighty one, won 112  
 the head of the Laṅkāpura Rakkha together with his heroism.  
 Then did the rebels melt away irretrievably as the tide of 113  
 the waters of the ocean when it has passed its shores<sup>3</sup>. The 114  
 battlefield there was full of crows, vultures and the like, but  
 the Damiḍhikūrin who had won the victory by combat held 115  
 high festival and surrounded by the divisions of his army,  
 he the lightly-lamed took possession of the town of Mahān-  
 gāhula<sup>4</sup>.

Now the Chief of the chamberlains Rakkha marched forth 116  
 from Mālavaratthali<sup>5</sup> and befook himself in haste to the town

<sup>1</sup> CODRINGTON has recognised this in the present Obada (Sinh. තොඳ, *oya* is always rendered by *nadi*). As Obada lies below Urubokka, about nine miles distant as the crow flies, on the river of that name in West Giruvu, it proves that Rakkha in his advance followed the valley of the Urubokka-oya.

<sup>2</sup> We may assume that the place where the decisive battle took place was not far from Obada.

<sup>3</sup> The rebels dispersed as the surf of the sea disperses on the shore.

<sup>4</sup> In this section the MSS. give the name as *Mahāmigakula*, otherwise *-hula* or *-sula*.

<sup>5</sup> See above v. 68.

117 Mahānāgahula. He sought out the Damiḍhikārin and the latter discerning and aware of the favorable as of the un-  
 118 favorable occasion, took counsel with him as follows: "In accordance with the commands of our Lord we have taken the town of Mahānūgahula, yet still there are many foes left  
 119 alive. These robbed of all resources, have withdrawn to Khaṇḍavagga. But that our soldiers just after they have  
 120 gained the victory, should march in haste thither pleaseth me not. Where our Lord sets his foot there is our refuge." For  
 121 that ransom they remained on the spot<sup>1</sup>, and while they let the people who without being enemies had hidden themselves here and there, come to them and appointed each to his own district again, they spent the time even there in the town of  
 122 Mahānāgahula. But the many rebels who had betaken themselves to Khaṇḍavagga, stirred up the inhabitants of the  
 123 district with the wish to renew the war. They gathered themselves all together at the place called Khaṇḍavagga. The  
 124 Damiḍhikārin thought that now was the right time for the contest, he advanced from the town of Mahānāgahula and began  
 125 a fearful battle in Bakagalla<sup>2</sup>-Uddhavāpi. The skilful (general) beat them all and then returned. Several of the enemy came  
 126 hereupon to Sampihabheelakagāma; but the general Sūkara-bhātideva took his soldiers and came thirsting for the fight to

<sup>1</sup> The word *ettha* here is curious, especially in conjunction with *tathā era* in 121 c. The final words of Rakka's speech are also obscure. Possibly we have to do with a corruption of the text. I believe that the words *tasmā etthu misidiya* belonged originally to the oration recta and that after that something with which the speech ended and which made the foregoing sentence more intelligible has been lost.

<sup>2</sup> Chinnaratna successfully identifies Bakagalla with the present Koggala (sinh. *koka* "crane" is rendered by p. *haka* which has the same meaning) which is situated only 5 miles North of Ambalumota, that is about the same distance NE. of the ancient Mahānāgahula. This proves the fact that even the capture of the capital does not discourage the rebels. They withdraw just so far as to place the Velaveganga between themselves and the enemy and renew hostilities. The actions which follow (vv. 125—140) are only so many attempts on Mahānāgahula. Though in single skirmishes Parakkama's troops are victorious, no lasting success is achieved.

Mahāgāma<sup>1</sup>. Now the Damiļādhihikārin himself called his soldiers 127 together and sent them first to Saŋghabhedakagāma. The 128 brave heroes betook<sup>2</sup> themselves now to the battlefield and after they had in the fire of the majesty of the illustrious Ruler 129 of men destroyed numbers of the foe, they returned to the 129 town of Mahānāgahula and held there in fitting manner high festival. But in order also to get the general (Sūkarabhūtu) 130 into his power, the Damiļādhihikārin sent off the Laukāpura Deva and many other soldiers to fight against him. They 131 betook themselves to the battlefield and with arrows sent non- ceasingly covering the whole heaven and raising their thunder- 132 ing<sup>3</sup> battle-cry they dashed forward to the battlefield, slew the general and shattered the foe. Then these brave warriors 133 too came to Mahāgāma<sup>4</sup> with the sound of their victorious drums making joyful the Damiļādhihikārin. Thereupon an elder 134 brother of the Laukāpura Rakkha who had seized the leader- ship of the army, gathered together the many foes whom 135 death had spared and marched for a combat such a rebels fight<sup>5</sup>, to the town of Mahānāgaluva<sup>6</sup>. The Damiļādhihikārin 136 now also sent soldiers thither, they shattered him after slay- ing many of the enemy. The shattered soldiers came to a 137 place called Kuruvakugalla. The Damiļādhihikārin Rakkha march- ed from the town Mahānāgahula, shattered them all and re- 138 turned. Now there came together from all sides to Mahāgāma the Lokagalī Vikkuma by name and many other foes in order 139 to fight with the Mūlapotthakin Māna. But in this fight 140

<sup>1</sup> For Sūkarabhūtu see 74, 127 ff. Where Saŋghabhedagāma lies is uncertain. Mahāgāma is doubtless Magama in the territory of Tis-samabārāma.

<sup>2</sup> P. *yajjanta*. The comparison which it is impossible for us to render sufficiently exactly, is borrowed from the storm. The mass of the arrows are the cloud darkening the heavens, the battle-cry is the thunder.

<sup>3</sup> One expects here Mahānāgahula instead of Mahāgāma and on the other hand in v. 135 instead of Mahānāgahula rather Mahāgāma. Have we not to do here with a mistake of the compiler's?

<sup>4</sup> P. *corayuddhāya*, corresponding more or less to our guerilla warfare.

<sup>5</sup> Cf. above note to v. 133.

along with the life of the foe the Mūlapoththakin Māna by name speedily won the victory.

141 Now the Dāmilādhikārin took counsel with the dignitaries: "When we see the destruction of the foe in every single fight 142 and the panic of those fleeing hither and thither, then we think the enemy has lost the courage for renewing the war and yet one does not perceive that they are wholly rooted 143 out. Let us give up the middle of the province and when here and there hidden (rebels) have come into the middle of the province, defeat them<sup>1</sup>." With that the prudent one, the 144 highly-famed returned to Pūgadāṇḍāvāṭa. But the rebels who had not seen through his plan, streamed together from everywhere out of the wilderness into the middle of the province. 145 When the Dāmilādhikārin received true tidings of these events, he started thence at the head of his men, fought with the 146 numbers of foes at the village of Bodhiūvāṭaka, as well as with the foe everywhere else — at the place called Sūkarālibheri- 147 pāsāṇa and at the stronghold called Madhutthala — great battles 148 and robbed them of their life. Then he penetrated to the middle of the province, sent his army also thither in various 149 directions and rooted them out all and sundry. Hereupon he received a message which came to him from the leaders stand-

<sup>1</sup> In consideration of the sequel I should assume that *cujitrītu* is subordinate to the principal verb *hanissāma* rather than to the part *uitnesa*. Rukku's plan is clear and proves successful. By *rattamajjhā* is meant the agricultural country on the right bank of the Valuveganga with Mahānāgalula. That is it is true, in his power, but the rebels have withdrawn into the inaccessible wilderness surrounding it on all sides. In order now to entice them into the open country where he hopes to defeat them decisively, he ostensibly abandons the captured territory and withdraws to his original base near Doyivagga. For it is here we must look for Pūgadāṇḍāvāṭa (cf. above v. 86, 95). This explains also why in the following combats with the rebels we are in fact taken in by Rukku's manoeuvre, the former names Bodhiūvāṭa (v. 97) and Sūkarālibheripāsāṇa (v. 98) recur. The Madhutthala named along with them must also be situated near Sūkarāli = Urubokka. All these places are situated on the border of the *rattamajjhā* into which he finally penetrates to annihilate the enemy.

ing in Huyalagāma and marched to Kumbngāma<sup>1</sup>. Thereupon the general stationed in Huyalagāma by name Mañju, and the two generals called Kitti and Bhūta came surrounded by numbers of heroic officers, to the same place, holding high festival of joy. The general by name Mañju<sup>2</sup>, hereupon, showing honour to the Damiñālhikūrin Rakkha, spake the following words: "So long as the many foes which have broken away from your country and are hidden in the various inaccessible places have not got a footing, let us slay them all, while the enemy who has sought refuge in the wilderness of Aññhasahassaka and the Queen Sugalā we will take captive<sup>3</sup>. But if the many foes who sojourn in the wilderness are hard for you to overcome, we shall send off soldiers." The Damiñālhikūrin agreed with these words. He advanced in haste with his army into the region of the Vananadī<sup>4</sup> and soon came near to the foe who in order to reach the mountain wilderness, had speedily betaken themselves to Mālāvaratthali. When they heard that Rakkha was on the march<sup>5</sup>, they withdrew, tor-

<sup>1</sup> We have seen above in v. 19 that the generals Mañju, Kitti and Bhūta after vain attempts to reach Mahāgāma by Guttasālī, halt at Huyalagāma. Now they try to get into touch with Rakkha. As Huyalagāma cannot have lain far from Butihala, we may look for Kumbngāma somewhere on the road leading along the southern base of the mountains.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. note to 73. 129.

<sup>3</sup> Aññhasahassaka (cf. note to 61. 24) is the territory east of the Valaveganga. Thus Mañju and his generals undertake the operations in eastern Rohaṇa, Rakkha those in the western part of the province.

<sup>4</sup> There is scarcely a doubt that with Vananadī is meant the Valaveganga. The ger. *pavessa* must be = *pucissu*. A causative form is impossible since the object belonging to it is wanting. *Suhā senayā* agrees only with a *parisutī*. But perhaps we might render *vananadī-pissam pucessa* by: "he advanced along the V." That would make excellent sense. The rebels have evidently occupied Mahānāgahala after Rakkha's withdrawal. In order now to cut them off from communication with eastern Rohaṇa, Rakkha marches from Kumbngāma down the Vananadī. His plan succeeds. The rebels turn westward by way of Mālāvaratthali (see note to v. 66) to the mountains of Dvādasahassaka, the present district of Giruva (note to 61. 22).

<sup>5</sup> That is in further pursuit of them.

tured by fear, into the great forest and sought refuge on the  
 159 Mahāpabbata. The Damiṭādhikārin surrounded the mountain,  
 fought a great battle with them and utterly destroyed them.  
 160 Then after occupying Dvādasasahassaka thus set free from the  
 briars (of the rebels), he considered what should be done with  
 161 the many foes taken alive and had many hundreds of the  
 162 enemy impaled in villages and market-towns. Likewise round  
 about the village of Mahānūgahula the mighty one had num-  
 163 bers of the foe impaled, several too hanged on the gallows  
 and burnt to ashes and after taking up his abode in the vil-  
 164 lage of Mahānūgahula, he had under a favorable constellation  
 the drums of government of the illustrious Ruler of men  
 165 beaten in villages and market-towns. After sending a messenger  
 announcing these events to the Ruler of men and receiving  
 166 from the Great King a mark of honour, he took up his abode,  
 the discerning, the highly-famed (general), in that same Dvā-  
 dasasahassaku, pondering over the useful measures.

167 All the chief dignitaries<sup>1</sup> in Kumbugāma reflected (thus):  
 168 "From the time that we set forth to war in Rohana the sol-  
 diers sent forth by us have here and there in great battles  
 169 covered the earth with the bones of the foe, and even all the  
 brave warriors who dwell in Jambudipa would not be able to  
 170 withstand these soldiers. Why then should we henceforward  
 think to carry on war with the foe hidden here and there  
 171 through fear? Queen Sugalā is the cause of these people  
 172 becoming rebels and has led them into the wilderness<sup>2</sup>. There-  
 fore we must get the Queen alive into our power." With such  
 resolve the discerning (generals) marched from Kumbugāma  
 173 and came to Haritakivāta. After they had there in various  
 places posted good soldiers, known as courageous people, in  
 174 the necessary numbers, they advanced thence fully armed to  
 Kapavāta and when at the place called Vanagāma, they

<sup>1</sup> The narrative now deals with the operations in eastern Rohana which we may imagine as taking place simultaneously with the events related in vv. 156—166.

<sup>2</sup> Owing to the presence of the obj. *te* the part. pres. *pavisantī* must be taken in a causative sense (see Cūlav. ed. I, Introduction p. XIV).

caught sight of the hostile army with whom was the Queen, 175  
 they fought there a great (and) fearful battle. With the sound  
 of their drums of victory cleaving open, as it were, the earth,  
 they seized the Queen and all her treasures of many a kind<sup>1</sup>. 176  
 Having appointed for the guarding of the treasure the necessary  
 chamberlains, they brought the war game begun there to an 177  
 end and after covering the earth with the hands and feet and  
 heads of the foe and taking those alive to whom this had to 178  
 happen, they made the province of Rohana everywhere free  
 from the briers (of the rebels).

Now by some kind of wile, taking with them a few sol- 179  
 diers, the three Phālakālas who were near the end of their  
 life, and the two Laṅkūparas by name Tuddhigāma and Pabbata, 180  
 had escaped out of the hand of the foe<sup>2</sup> and were in flight  
 tortured by fear. But the two brothers, the generals<sup>3</sup> and 181  
 the Laṅkipura known by the name of Kaḍakkuḍa, as well as  
 many other officers with their soldiers, having reached Ud- 182  
 dhanadvāragāma<sup>4</sup>, shattered them in a great battle and then  
 reached Nigrodhamāragalla<sup>5</sup>. Hereupon the great dignitaries 183  
 with their officers pursued the enemy, sent the head of the  
 Phālakāla to the highest dignitaries<sup>6</sup>, captured the Laṅkipura 184

<sup>1</sup> The place where the capture of Sugalā took place is not yet determined. The name Valgāma or Valagama to which the 1<sup>o</sup>. *Vannagāma* would correspond, occurs frequently in Ceylon. A Valagama is situated in the Bimenna Patta. It is however very doubtful if this can be the one meant.

<sup>2</sup> The enemies from whom Phālakāla and the others had escaped were of course the troops of Parakkamabāhu.

<sup>3</sup> For the *deśa bhūtāv ḍapḍuṇīthā* see note to 70. 279. They are mentioned here for the last time.

<sup>4</sup> See note to 61. 16. Uḍdhanadvāragāma was the capital of eastern Rohana (Alṭhasuhassaka).

<sup>5</sup> Verses 179—182 form one sentence. The subjects are in v. 181. The principal verb is *npāgāmā* to whirl the gerunds *samāgantvā*, *pabbimītrīvā* are subordinate. The accusatives in v. 180 are governed by *pabbimītrīvā* as objects. As attribute they have the pres. part. *palāyante* to which *mucchitrā* and *gahetvā* are again subordinate.

<sup>6</sup> That is Mañju together with Bhūla and Kittī who had not personally taken part in the pursuit of the Phālakālas.

Pabbata by name, alive and destroyed the foe so utterly that nought but the tidings of them remained<sup>1</sup>.

185 Thereupon the clever Adhikārin Mañju<sup>2</sup> made the following proposal: "From the time when we began to conquer this 186 Rohāya we have never — apart from<sup>3</sup> the boundless terror-inspiring destruction of our enemies in battle through the 187 majesty of our Lord — treated the foe with sternness so as to teach the people what evil results treason to the king brings 188 about. Therefore those deserving of harshness let us treat harshly and let us be ever kind to those who deserve kindness, 189 and in this way in accord with the commands of our Lord and Master, win them over to ourselves." All agreed with 190 zeal to his proposal. They caused many foes to whom severity was due, to be brought before them, and at villages and market-towns they had numbers of stakes set up on which they impaled many hundreds of the enemy. Many other foes they 191 had hanged on the gallows and burnt and showed forth in every way the majesty — hard to subdue, scarcely to be surpassed, arousing astonishment — of the Ruler of men Pa- 192 rakkamabāhn. Then while they showed due grace to those 193 who were accessible to kindness and were worthy of being treated with kindness, they brought peace to the province, as clouds in the rainy season to a forest burnt by fire.

194 When the Ruler of men Parakkama heard tidings of these events he sent an exceeding gracious message of the following 195 content: "In the first place send hither all the dignitaries 196 taken alive and the Queen Sngalā. The burden of the whole administration there is to be given over to the Adhikārin Bhūta. Then along with the whole of the four-membered army 197 sent forth from here, preceded by the numerous bhikkhu community dwelling there, after leaving the necessary garrison 198 in the various districts, under a constellation regarded as fa-

<sup>1</sup> I prefer to join the two pādas *kariyūsu* as far as *sapattake* with v. 184 instead of with v. 185. *Sabbam* is to be taken in an adverbial sense as emphasising *sabbathā*.

<sup>2</sup> See note to 74. 129.

<sup>3</sup> I take the ger. *hitrāna* in this sense in this passage.

vorable, the whole of the dignitaries shall assemble and present themselves before me."

The dignitaries all carried out his orders without omitting anything. They marched from Rohaya and reached at the head of their large army, Pulatthinagara. Accompanied by the dwellers in Pulatthinagara, who played music, shouted with joy, clapped their hands in applause, waved cloths a thousandfold again and again and let their cries of victory resound — they drew near to the superb royal palace and cleansed their heads with the blossom dust of the foot-lotus of the illustrious King of kings enthroned (there) in splendour.

Thus had this Ruler of men, pursuing the path of political wisdom and of virtue, with exceeding terrible majesty<sup>1</sup>, more powerful than a forest conflagration, of keen understanding, together with his heroes made Rohaya free from the briers of the foe.

Here ends the seventy-fifth chapter, called «The Conquest of Rohaya», in the *Mahāvamsa*, compiled for the serene joy and emotion of the pious.

<sup>1</sup> The word that I here translate by "majesty" is the P. *tejo*. As this has the original meaning of "glow", the comparison with the forest conflagration has also a linguistic connection. The compound must be separated thus: *dara-dahana-uggatara-atibhima-tejo*.

## Chapter LXXVI

## ACCOUNT OF THE CAPTURE OF THE TOWN OF RĀJINĀ

- 1 While now the Monarch gifted with insight, day and night strove unweariedly for the furtherance of the laity and of the Order, there banded together in the eighth year of the reign of the illustrious Ruler of men all the inhabitants of the province of Rohaya and stirred up by an all too foolhardy villain<sup>1</sup>, they revolted anew, to cruel destruction foredoomed.
- 2 When King Parakkamabāhu heard of these events he sent once more a great army with dignitaries thither; and as he fought at all the villages and market-towns named aforetime ever renewed battles and made the enemy as fuel for the fire of his own majesty, he shortly freed the whole province of Rohaya from the briers (of the rebels).
- 3 In the sixteenth year of this King of kings, in the province immediately bordering on Mahātiththa<sup>2</sup> several people dwelling in that province, who were near the end of their life<sup>3</sup>, stirred up a revolt and began the war which seemed to them the better (lot)<sup>4</sup>. Thither also the (prince) gifted with discernment, sent a four-membered army and destroyed the foe so that they became as dust.
- 5 Between the countries of Lankā and Rāmañña<sup>5</sup> there had never been a dissension since they were inhabited by people

<sup>1</sup> I incline to take *kenapi pāpahamma* as referring to a person, *pāpahamwa* thus to be taken like the skr. *pāpakaṭman* (cf. BR. s. v. as a bahuvrīhi compound).

<sup>2</sup> See note to 48. 81.

<sup>3</sup> The fate to which they are doomed tempts them to the foolish revolt.

<sup>4</sup> Better (*rara*) than subjection to Parakkamabāhu's dominion.

<sup>5</sup> That is Pegn in Lower Burma.

who held the true faith. The rulers of the island of Lāṅkā 11 and the monarchs of Rāmañña were both in like manner true disciples of the Sugata<sup>1</sup>. Hence all former monarchs in both 12 countries in deeply-rooted trust, filled with friendly feeling<sup>2</sup> were wont to send each other many costly gifts and in this 13 way for a long time to maintain intercourse without dissension. Also with King Parakkamabāhu the Monarch of Rāmañña 14 kept up friendly relations even as former rulers who had for a long time held firmly to him. But once upon a time the 15 deluded one hearkened to the words of slanderers, of certain messengers who came back from our land, and deprived the 16 envoys of the Sovereign of Lāṅkā who came into his own country, of the maintenance formerly granted. Furthermore 17 he issued the order that elephants which had (hitherto) been sold by many (traders) to foreign countries<sup>3</sup> were no longer to be sold. Further with evil intent he made the restriction 18 that elephants which had formerly been sold there for a hundred or a thousand silver nikhalas<sup>4</sup> must (henceforth) be 19 sold for two or three thousand<sup>5</sup>. He also did away with the 20 age-old custom of presenting an elephant to every vessel in which gifts<sup>6</sup> were conveyed. When he caught sight of a letter 21

<sup>1</sup> P. *parṇasogata*. Cf. skr. *sugata* from *sugata*, a frequent name of the Buddha which designates him as the guide on the path of salvation. R. O. FRANKE in his translation of the Dīghanikāya renders *sugata* by "he who completes the path".

<sup>2</sup> *Dulhasamrāthavivassanāhā* and *sahitā* are attributes of *bhāpālā*, and the instr. *citrna hitā* (this last for *hitena*) belongs to *sahitā*.

<sup>3</sup> We see thus that Burma in the Middle Ages traded in elephants with foreign countries.

<sup>4</sup> An unknown coin. The word is without doubt connected with the P. *nikkha* or *nekha* = skr. *mīṣka* which likewise denotes a weight and a coin.

<sup>5</sup> VV. 18, 19 seem to be in contradiction to v. 17. I think however that in v. 17 the emphasis is to be placed on *nekattha nekchi*. It is the free trade in elephants that according to v. 17 the king makes an end of, putting in its place a royal monopoly. This is immediately followed by an enormous rise in prices.

<sup>6</sup> Evidently from foreign sovereigns, in the first place the king of Lāṅkā with whom according to v. 13 such exchange of gifts had fre-

written on gold, addressed to himself, he under the pretext  
 22 that they were envoys sent to Kamboja<sup>1</sup>, or saying something  
 of that kind, had the envoys of the Sovereign of Laṅkā after  
 taking from them all their goods and chattels, thrown into a  
 23 fortress in the Malaya country<sup>2</sup>. And although he learned  
 exactly how his own envoy Tapassin by name, had had every  
 24 distinction conferred on him by the Ruler of Laṅkā, he ne-  
 vertheless bereft of all political wisdom, took everything away  
 25 from the envoys of the Monarch of Laṅkā: their money, their  
 elephants and their vessels, had blocks of wood fastened to  
 their feet to their greatest torture, and employed them in the  
 26 work of sprinkling water in the prisons. When once upon a  
 time a prince of Jambudipa Kassapa by name, sent costly gifts  
 27 along with a letter on gold, he forbade his people to land and  
 in an insulting manner made them take the letter back to their  
 28 town. One day he had the Sihala envoys summoned to him  
 and declared to them: "Henceforth no vessel from the Sihala  
 29 country shall be sent to my kingdom. Give us now in writ-  
 ing the declaration that if (messengers) from there are again  
 sent to us, in case we should slay the envoys who have come  
 30 here, no blame of any kind will attach to us<sup>3</sup>. If ye give  
 not the declaration ye shall not have permission to return  
 31 home." After he had made them sign this, so that in the  
 event of a transgression they should not return again to their  
 32 country<sup>4</sup>, he took the paper from their hand. The teacher

quently taken place. The King of Rūmañña does not put an end to the intercourse but alters it in a way which shows unfriendliness.

<sup>1</sup> Name of Western Siam.

<sup>2</sup> Malaya denotes as in Ceylon and in Southern India (see 76. 195) the mountainous regions of the country.

<sup>3</sup> In the original direct discourse: "if... are sent here... in case ye slay... no blame will attach to you".

<sup>4</sup> The passage is doubtful. I believe that *sa-rajha-anāgamāya* is meant to express the intended result. The prince wishes by means of the signature to have the possibility of ridding himself of all undesirable people from Laṅkā. W's translation fails because it assumes *āgama* instead of *anāgama*.

Vāgissara and the scholar Dharmakitti<sup>1</sup> he sent off in a leaky vessel into the open sea. Once upon a time he took from 33 the hands of the messengers the gifts and goods which the Ruler of Laṅkā had sent in order to buy elephants, with the 34 promise that he would give them fourteen elephants and silver money<sup>2</sup>, but he told merely lies and gave them nothing. Further they seized by force a princess whom the Ruler of 35 Laṅkā had sent to Kambuja land.

When King Parakkamabāhu heard of these many insults 36 committed by that (prince), he thought with the greatest indignation: "Where in the whole of Jambudipa is there a king 37 who would be capable of treating my envoys in such a manner?" He summoned his ministers and spake: "Either the capture 38 or the slaying of the king of Arimaddana<sup>3</sup> must be effected." Hereupon there spake a distinguished official of the public 39 accounts, the Damiṭṭībhikārī by name Ādicca, with clasped bands — he wished himself to undertake the enterprise — to 40 the King thus: "It is not necessary to entrust<sup>4</sup> the chief dignitaries with this task. If I do not stray a single step from 41 the path of thy order it will be for me, if I undertake the task even should I be quite alone — in very truth not difficult to carry out in successful fashion the commands of my lord whose commands are hardly to be transgressed." When the 43 King heard that he was content. He placed under him the troop leaders who were to be sent and commanded him to depart speedily. Then the highly-famed one gave the order 44 without delay to make ready ships of various kinds, many hundreds in number. Now all the country round about the 45

<sup>1</sup> These were evidently the envoys from which the written declaration had been wrung. They reached home in spite of the leaky ship, otherwise their death would without doubt have been mentioned. They escaped it as by a miracle.

<sup>2</sup> In the original again the or. reeta: "We shall give you &c." The goods are therefore paid partly in cash partly with elephants.

<sup>3</sup> For this capital of Burma see M. BODE, *Sāsanavijaya*, Dissertation, p. 20 and *passim*.

<sup>4</sup> P. *yajetvālāpi* stands for *yajeta(n) alāpi*.

coast was one great workshop fully occupied with the building of the ships taken in hand. When within five months he had had all the ships well built, he assembled them in haste at the port of Pallavavaṅka. Then endowed with vast royal power<sup>1</sup>, he had provisions supplied<sup>2</sup> for a whole year such as rice and the like and abundant weapons of war, such as armour and the like; further gokappaka arrows<sup>3</sup> of iron with sharp points, many hundred thousand in number for defence against elephants, also different kinds of medicines, preserved in cow horns for the healing of venomous wounds caused by poisoned arrows, as well as all kinds of remedies for curing the poison of infected water in the many swampy stretches of country; also iron pincers for extracting arrow-heads which are difficult to move when they have pierced deeply and the shaft has broken, lastly also skilful physicians and serving women — everything in complete fashion<sup>4</sup>. After he versed as none other in the right measures, had made a strong force — numbering many hundreds of thousands — embark, the Ruler sent all the ships off on one day loaded with all kinds of arms and filled with capable soldiers. Now when this assemblage of ships all at the same time<sup>5</sup> sailed forth in the midst of the ocean it looked like a swimming island. Subdued by adverse winds some of these ships went down, some drifted on to foreign shores. Numbers of trusty warriors who had embarked in one of the vessels landed on the Crows' island<sup>6</sup>. They fought a battle there, captured several of the inhabitants

<sup>1</sup> I. *mahārūjīchchisamyata* in v. 52 d.

<sup>2</sup> I. *pūtipādesi* in v. 52 c.

<sup>3</sup> *Gokarṇa* in Skr. also means a particular type of arrow. The elephants (*vārapū*) against which they are to serve as defence (*rūpa*) are of course the war elephants of the enemy. The MSS. are more favorable to the form of the word *yoknṛtak* which might easily be a synonym for *gokarpaka*.

<sup>4</sup> *Anūnayi* is associated as adverb with *pūtipādesi* and refers to everything that has gone before.

<sup>5</sup> So I understand the P. *samay*.

<sup>6</sup> P. *Kākmlīpa*. Perhaps the name of one of the Andaman Islands?

of the island alive, brought them then to the King of Lañkā and presented them to him. Warriors of great fighting strength who sailed on five vessels landed on the territory of Rāmañña in the port called Knsumi<sup>1</sup>. These doughty soldiers with the Nagarakiri Kitti at the head, equipped with armour and weapons, slew from their landing-place the troops belonging to the Rāmañña country, many thousands of them in terrible combat and while they, like to rutting elephants, hewed down around many coco palms and other trees and set fire to the villages, they laid waste a great part of the kingdom. But the ship on which the Damiñḍhikārin Ādicea commanded, landed in the territory (of Rāmañña) at the port of Pupphālamu, and while at once the people with the Damiñḍhikārin at the head, fought a gruesome, fear'l, loe-destroying battle and captured alive many people living in the country, they plunged the Rāmañña kingdom into sore confusion. Thereupon the Sihalas with terrible courage, fearful with their swords, burst into the town of Ukkama and slew the Monarch of the Rāmaññas. When they had subdued the Rāmaññas and brought their country into their power, the great heroes<sup>2</sup> mounted a splendid white elephant. They rode round the town free from all fear turning the right side towards it and thereupon made known by beat of drum the supremacy of the Sovereign of Lañkā<sup>3</sup>.

<sup>1</sup> Equivalently the Kusīma(tittha) frequently mentioned in the Sāsana-vāṇī.

<sup>2</sup> Probably Ādicea and Kitti are meant.

<sup>3</sup> The Burmese chronicles have nothing to say about such a catastrophe having overtaken their country. The description in the Mahāvāṇī is without doubt very much exaggerated. The fact of a successful campaign against Rāmañña is, however, confirmed by the important inscription of Devanagala in the Kegalla district, Galboda Korale, Meda Pathiya, whose significance H. C. P. Bell was the first to recognise (Report on the Kegalla District, ASC. 1892, p. 73 ff.). According to this inscription — one of Parakkamabāhu I. — the war against Aramanya was determined on in the 12th year of the King's reign. The reigning king of Aramanya at that time is called Bhuvanāditta. The inscription also mentions the town of Kusumi (cf. v. 59) and tells finally of the granting of land to Kit-Nuvaragiri (= Kittinagaragiri v. 60) evidently

69 Then overwhelmed by fear the people in the Rāmañña land, seeing no other protection, gathered together and held 70 counsel. With the instructions: "Year by year must we from now onwards send elephants to any amount as tribute from 71 our property — in order that the Monarch of Laṅkā may not 72 lay on us intolerable (burdens), ye must influence him<sup>1</sup> and 73 thereby at all times full of pity, have mercy on us all" — they sent in haste their messengers with letters in their hand to the bhikkhu community<sup>2</sup> dwelling in the island of Laṅkā.

74 Through the friendly words of the community living in the three fraternities, the Ruler of Laṅkā was moved to kindness, 75 and while the Ramayās sent him yearly numbers of elephants, they made anew with the Laṅkā Ruler who kept his treaties faithfully, a pact of friendship.

76 Now the Paṇḍu king by name Purakkama, in the town of Mañhurī<sup>3</sup>, when his capital was besieged by the war-loving, 77 hostile king named Kulasekhara who had come thither with an army, had found in the territory of Jambudipa no king 78 with whom he might have taken refuge. He sent messengers to the Monarch of Laṅkā with the message: "O Thon with 79 whom I may take refuge, thy two feet shall be for me who

as reward for his services. The Dūmīśādhikārin Ālieca is not mentioned. He appears to have died soon after the campaign, as he does not occur again in the Cālavapsa.

<sup>1</sup> Thus I translate the phrase *anusañcāriṇī vaid*.

<sup>2</sup> The sense of the passage is on the whole clear. The Ramayās try through the medium of the Church to obtain favourable terms of peace from Parakkamabāhu. The details offer difficulties. Line 71 a b is hopelessly corrupt. Since the MSS. all agree, the corruption must be traced to the archetype. The emendation tried by S. and B. is hardly successful. Three words *ucchidam*, *amhākāyi*, . . . *ñikāni* seem certain. Verses 71 c to 72 d if translated literally would be rendered by: "we all must be taken pity on (*dhyitabbā*) by you, reverent masters (*bhañuntehi*), in that ye so persuade (*rndantehi tassa anusāñcāriṇī*) the King that he does not have done (to us) (*kūreti*) what is heavy to be borne."

<sup>3</sup> For the South Indian people called Paṇḍu and their capital of Mañhurī (now Madura in the south of the province of Madras), see 50. 12 and note. V. A. Smith, Early Hist. of India, p. 336.

am a moth in the fire of the majesty of my foe, a cage of diamond". When the sovereign of Lañkā heard their speech, he spake thus: "If the distress of him who has placed himself under my protection be not removed, how would my name of Parakkamabūlu<sup>1</sup> be fitting? He who trusts in me is hard to vanquish by a foe, be he who he may. From what foe among the brutes is the hare in peril who has fled to the moon<sup>2</sup>? General Lañkāpura, slay Kulasekhara, establish the Pañdu king in his realm and then return." The general by name Lañkāpura, a very courageous man, versed in the means of war, a forest fire for the wide-spreading wilderness of the foe, received with the words "Be it so!" the King's command like a wreath upon his head and accompanied by many war-skilled officers, he marched at the head of an army invincible in battle and came to Mahātittha.

King Kulasekhara had (in the meantime) slain the Pañdu king with his wife and children and captured the town Madhurā by name. Lañkāpura received from the Great king who had heard of these events, anew the order to conquer the kingdom and make it over to a scion of the house of Parakkama<sup>3</sup>. He set forth for the port Taladilla<sup>4</sup> by name on the opposite coast. He embarked his great army on many hundreds of

<sup>1</sup> The name means "arm of courage, possessed of courageous arms". Parakkamabūlu's campaign against Southern India is confirmed by Cola inscriptions (Inscr. of Arpakkam near Kāñcī) according to which the result for the Sihala troops was not so brilliant as the Mhv. would have us believe. After initial successes they were forced to retire. Cf. for further details V. A. SMITH, Early History of India, p. 340; H. W. CODRINGTON, Short History of Ceylon, p. 62, 74. To the name Kulasekhara corresponds Kulottunga in Indian inscriptions (EI, VII, p. 170 ff.).

<sup>2</sup> The Hindu thinks he sees the picture of a hare in the disk of the full moon, just as we speak of a "mau in the moon". The moon is therefore called in t. *sasīn* = skr. *śaśin*, from *sasa* = *śaśa* "hare".

<sup>3</sup> Instead of the names Lañkāpura and Parakkama the original has pronouns.

<sup>4</sup> The MSS. have all *Taladilla* or *Talañdilla*, in v. 92 only the first form. The Col. Ed. reads *Talabbilla* with the variant *Talaevilla*, I do not know with what authority.

ships, started off and sailed a day and a night on the back  
 89 of the ocean. When he caught sight of the coast, since a  
 hostile army was standing there, he made all his troops put  
 90 on their armour on board. As the ships had to lie in deep  
 water<sup>1</sup> and because with a landing just at this spot, the  
 91 armour of the whole army would have been wet through, he  
 made the troops get into hundreds of boats of small size<sup>2</sup>.

Then when the rain of arrows from the Damīlas standing on  
 92 the coast, came flying, he had shields fashioned of leather set  
 up in front of the people (as protection) against the arrows  
 and so landed in the Pāṇḍu kingdom at the port called Ta-  
 93 lajilla. After putting to flight the Damīlas at the port and  
 capturing the harbour, he took up a position there and fought  
 94 with vast forces four battles. When the five officers, Vaij-  
 valattirukka-nāṭṭālāvāra<sup>3</sup>, Kupūṇyamutta-rāyaru, Villava-rāyaru<sup>4</sup>,  
 95 Añenkoṭṭa-nāṭṭālāvāra and Narasihaileva by name, advanced to  
 96 fight<sup>5</sup>, he fought also with these, slew many Damīlas, took  
 97 away their horses, put to flight the great army and occupied  
 Rāmīssara<sup>6</sup>. He fought with them while he was posted there,

<sup>1</sup> P. *ngādhe saṇṇicuttuṇnabhūcuto*. The meaning is this. The coast  
 was so flat that the ships could not lie close to the shore. They had  
 to turn (*saṇṇi-vū-cutt*) at some distance in deep water (*agādhū*) and embark  
 the troops in boats (see the following note).

<sup>2</sup> P. *ekadōṇimītrā*. *Dōṇi* must be taken here in the sense of a parti-  
 cular measure of volume, otherwise *eka* would be unintelligible. Skr.  
*īcayī* means "boat" as also a measure of volume.

<sup>3</sup> According to O. SENNADEER (private letter 22. XII 23) *nāṭṭālāvāra* is  
 derived from the popular Dravidian *nāṭṭu* "land, district" and *āṭṭi* "man"  
 (Canarese *āṭṭu* "soldier"). A *Nāṭṭālāvāra* would thus be the leader of the  
 troops of a particular district.

<sup>4</sup> *Rāyura* is a title which according to O. SENNADEER corresponds to  
 skr. *rājūṣaḥ*. Canarese *rāgarn*.

<sup>5</sup> Of the five officers four are also mentioned several times later on;  
 (Kupūṇyamutta, 76. 177; Villava 76. 163 ff.; Añenkoṭṭa 76. 98,  
 191, 239, 247, 300; Narasihaileva, 76. 174). Only the first mentioned  
 does not occur again. It is significant that Añenkoṭṭa occurs as a  
 place name in 76. 235, the *Nāṭṭālāvāra* probably taking his name from  
 the locality. See also note to v. 180.

<sup>6</sup> Skr. *Rāmeśvara*, situated on a sandy island which joins the Indian  
 mainland with Adam's Bridge, with a famous temple often described;  
 but belonging to a later period (15th to 16th cent.).

five combats and after fighting nine battles<sup>1</sup> he fought<sup>2</sup> in the tenth against the six officers Silūmegha, Naratnāgabrahma- 98 mahārāja, Ilākiyā-rāyara, Añenkoṭṭa-rāyara, Phaludhiya-rāyara by name and him called Panasiyārāja<sup>3</sup>, as well as the five 100 officers named above who had advanced with great forces. He bore away the victory, seized many horses<sup>4</sup>, slew the Damiļas 101 and penetrated from Rāmissara a distance of four gāvutas<sup>5</sup> to Kandukāla which lies between the two seas. The many 102 Damiļas who had fled through fear, took refuge in the forest; he captured several of them and had them impaled there. Some of these, at the command of the Ruler of Laṅkā who 103 thought to have all the cetiyas formerly destroyed by the Damiļas rebuilt by them, he had brought to Laṅkā and the 104 work of restoration begun on the Ratanavīluka-cetiya<sup>6</sup>. The 105 Sovereign of Laṅkā had the thūpa which had been destroyed by the Damiļas restored, and in order at the close to celebrate the festival of the crowning ornament<sup>7</sup>, he betook himself 106 with his ministers and the court to Anurādhapura and assembled

<sup>1</sup> That is besides the five combats the four mentioned in v. 93.

<sup>2</sup> The verb governing the accusative in vv. 99–100 is *yuddham kutra* in v. 100 c which is treated as in 38. 36, as a transitive verb.

<sup>3</sup> In the Col. Ed. the names *Narutnāgabrahmamahārājahrhaya* in 98 and *Pāṇasigurārāhaya* are changed contrary to all the MSS. into *Naratnāgabrahmā rāyarakhaya* and *Pāṇasiyārāyarakhaya*. Apparently the editors wanted to avoid the wrong close of the verse <sup>o</sup>*rājahrhaya*, but in v. 95 we have just as wrong a <sup>o</sup>*decarhaya* which is not corrected in Col. Ed. Mentioned again later are *Silūmegha(ra)* 76. 238, 299; 77, 90 and *Ilākiyā* 76. 191 f. For Añenkoṭṭa see above.

<sup>4</sup> The organization of the Damiļi army evidently differed materially from that of the Sibhalas in the greater number of its cavalry. In all accounts of victories gained (see already above v. 916) horses are always mentioned as the principal booty.

<sup>5</sup> That is about 8 miles. Kandukāla was situated on the tongue of land jutting out from the continent to the island of Rāmesvara.

<sup>6</sup> Name of the Mahāthūpa in Anurādhapura corresponding to what is now known as the Ruwanwēli. It is used here for the first time. The allied designation *Hrmacūlukacetiya* occurs already in 51. 82.

<sup>7</sup> P. *thāpihūmīha*. By *thāpihū* is understood the pointed cone resting on the cube-like structure which forms the apex or finial of the thūpa.

107 the great bhikkhu community on the island of Lankā. He provided the community with the four articles of use and when the fourteenth day<sup>1</sup> had arrived he had made known in  
 108 the town by beat of drum: "The town shall be decorated; and provided with perfumes, flowers and other offerings shall the people come to the place of the Mabāthūpa." After he had then on the day of the full moon performed in right  
 109 manner all the old customs, he himself came as the shadows grew longer, from the royal palace<sup>2</sup>. In divine beauty he was adorned with costly ornaments, with crown, necklace<sup>3</sup>, bracelets  
 110 and the like, (all) richly set with jewels. In front of him went the ladies of the court many hundreds in number, with the  
 111 grace of heavenly nymphs, their bodies decorated, and there followed him<sup>4</sup> numbers of distinguished officers with richly  
 112 decorated garments and resplendent in bright clothing. With the mass of the elephants and horses gleaming with their golden harness, doing reverence<sup>5</sup> to the cetiya with a gift of  
 113 lamps distributed over their bodies, and with the burden of the mass of human beings he pressed as it were, the earth together. With umbrellas, whisks and banners he veiled in  
 114 a sense the countenance of the lirmament. With the sound of the manifold instruments of music he cleft asunder the mountain ravines, with the splendour of his majesty he comple-  
 115 tely bewitched the eyes of the laity<sup>6</sup> and with the beams of

<sup>1</sup> That is the full-moon day.

<sup>2</sup> This is the final sentence, taken up from v. 116 a b. In 116 d we have the finite verb *atthāsi* of the whole sentence beginning with v. 107 which I have split up into its component parts, translating the participles and gerunds by principal verbs.

<sup>3</sup> P. *mālā* means like skr. *mālā* also necklace, neck-chain.

<sup>4</sup> In v. 110 and 111 *parakkhito* and *meita* are in opposition.

<sup>5</sup> W. seems not to have taken account of the feminine form *pūjentīhi*. It proves that the part. must be referred to *hathiyassaghaṭāhi*. It is thus the elephants and the horses not "worshippers" who wore the lamps. These were probably fastened to the bodies of the animals (*sabbahyadipa*) by means of ribbons or by a framework.

<sup>6</sup> Of "tears of joy" there is nothing in the text; *harampharayi* is a duplication of intensity.

the golden utensils, chests, banners, vessels, fans, jars and the like he steeped the place in radiant glory<sup>1</sup>. Thus on he came 116 and took his place with the splendour of the King of the gods in the court of the cetiya. Many hundreds of bhikkus who 117 had come hither, surrounded the cetiya, closing it round, as it were, with a railing of coral<sup>2</sup>. The King then had the 118 golden point placed on the thūpa and showed the world there-with the beauty of the Kelāsa mountain with the sun on its summit. On this day too there reigned in the town also dur- 119 ing the night great brightness with the lamp festival of the King and because of the point placed upon the thūpa. When 120 thus the Monarch Parakkamabahu had celebrated the great festival of the sacred thūpa, he betook himself again to Pulatthinagara.

But the general (Laṅkāpura) had a strong camp called 121 Parakkamapura built at Kuudukāla, and as he wished to make it last long, he erected three high walls of stone, two thou- 122 sand, four hundred cubits long<sup>3</sup> and twelve gate towers, and a 123 building with a hall square<sup>4</sup> and three trenches in such a way that the waters flowed from ocean to ocean<sup>5</sup>. While he tarried 124 in this stronghold he subdne officers like Kañcakuliyarāja<sup>6</sup> by name, Cojaganga and others. Since in this way the power 125 of the Sibalas waxed from day to day, King Kulasekhara sent again Sundarapāṇḍurāja<sup>7</sup> and Pañdurāja by name and 126

<sup>1</sup> P. *pīkāraṇi kuruṇi* "making ruddy, light-coloured".

<sup>2</sup> P. *parāṭaredikāya*. Here *redikā* has again clearly the meaning of railing. Cf. note to 73. 88. The coral colour is supplied by the reddish yellow colour of the monks' robes.

<sup>3</sup> As *intuu* means the same as *hattha* (see 37. 172) that is roughly about 1½ ft. thus the wall was 3600 ft. in extent.

<sup>4</sup> See note to 73. 23. Here there were evidently as W. supposes, barracks for the soldiers.

<sup>5</sup> The fortifications were spread right across the whole of the peninsula and thus safeguarded it and the camp from the mainland. *Tathā* belongs of course to *kūretrā patikhātayaṇi* and *yathā* (*gacchanti*) refers to *tākā*.

<sup>6</sup> We have to read here and in v. 130 *Sv Kuñcakuliyā*; so refers each time to Laṅkāpura. Cf. note to 76. 170.

<sup>7</sup> Is mentioned again 76. 174.

127 many other officers with troops to drive them thence. Lañkāpura fought with them three combats, put them to flight and  
 128 took the village called Carukkatta. And he set out from there  
     and fought with these same officers as well as with the Damila  
 129 Ālavandapperūmāla<sup>1</sup> a great battle, carried away the victory  
     and captured the villages by name Koļuvura and Maruthūpa.  
 130 In the district Kañcakuliya and in the district named Koļīru  
 131 the general subdued the soldiers called Maravara<sup>2</sup>. In the  
     district of Viragañga the mighty (general) plundered many vil-  
     lages and market towns such as Kūṇappanallura and others,  
 132 and after subduing the powerful officer called Māļava-rāyara<sup>3</sup>  
     and thousands of Damilas, he took up his abode there.  
 133 Thereupon he returned and betook himself to Parakkamapura  
 134 to satisfy his troops by the distribution of food and pay<sup>4</sup>. On  
     the march thither he gave battle to Ālavanda who had his  
     position at the village called Vađali and slew him.

135 Since now the powerful king Kulasekhara — who possess-  
     ed the courage of a lion, whose great army was war-tried,  
 136 who well understood the expedients of war — although he  
     had sent forth his great dignitaries with big army and train  
     had not been able to win the victory, he himself set forth  
 137 to fight. Māļava-cakkavattiu, Māļava-rāyara by name, Pa-  
 138 rittikkunḍiyāra<sup>5</sup> and Tonḍamānūraya by name; Tuvarōdhipati-

<sup>1</sup> Is mentioned again 76, 131, 145, 223, 232.

<sup>2</sup> This is probably the caste or rather tribe of the Marāvur living  
     in the district of Mailura (See Imperial Gazetteer of India s. v. Maduru),  
     where with the Vellalar and the Kalla (= Kallara in 76, 246) they are  
     characteristic. They seem to be descended from the aborigines and were  
     known in early times as fearless soldiers.

<sup>3</sup> Cf. below in v. 137 Māļava-cakkavattiu and Miļura-rayara. The first  
     name again in 76, 235, 265, 274, 284; 77, 27, the second 76, 210, 267 f.  
     Māļava is the name of a tribe. See Epigraphia Indica VII, Appendix,  
     nr. 10, 64, 409.

<sup>4</sup> A veiled allusion to certain difficulties with which Lañkāpura was  
     faced during his advance. Note too that the place Vađali named in  
     v. 134 is later on again occupied by him (see v. 169) and that only after  
     severe fighting.

<sup>5</sup> For Māļava see note to 76, 132. Parittikkunḍiyāra is again mention-

vejāra, Virapperaya-rāyara, Señkunḍjiya-rāyara and Nigajadha-rāyara by name, Karummaṭalṭa-rāyara and Nakula-rāyara, 139 Pañkona-nāṭṭalvāra and Karamba-rāyara by name, Knḍiyūrū 140 and Athalayūru-nāṭṭalvīra<sup>1</sup> by name, Kaṅgayara, the two Viṛagāṅgas, Muva-rāyara, Alṭṭilūru-nāṭṭalvīra, the three Maṇḍya- 141 ya-rāyaras, Kaṭavapḍiya-nāṭṭalvīra and Keraṭasihamuttara - these and other officers, as well as those named above he 142 took with him, further the remaining troops in the province of the Pañḍu King Purakkama, the whole forces of his mother's 143 brothers in the two Koṅgu districts and the whole of his own forces in the kingdom of Tiripaveli<sup>2</sup>. Also Niccevinodavāḍava- 144 rāyara<sup>3</sup>, Puṭṭi-rāyara, Taṅkutṭari-rāyara and Tompiya-rāyara by name, Ālavandappērūmāṭla, him called Coṭakonāṭra as well 145 as Tāṅgipperūmāṭla and Alakhiya-rāyara by name, him called 146 Māṇibharoṇgamahārāja, Avundiya-rāyara, Muṇḍayadhu<sup>4</sup>-rāyara by name and the Damiṭa Viṭṭārū; also these officers with vast 147 army and train he took with him and marched near to Pa-

ed in 76. 221. As regards the other names mentioned in 137—141, Toṇḍamānūrāya occurs again in 76. 315, 77. 1 ff., Toṇḍādhipati again in 76. 315, 77. 67; Viṛaperaya again in 76. 316, 77. 6 ff., Señkunḍiyū 76. 221, 77. 7, 85; Nigajadha again 77. 16 ff.; Karummaṭalṭa again 76. 216; Pañ-  
kona again 76. 240, 273 ff., 77. 57, 92; Athalayūru again 76. 260, 77. 27; Kaṅgyara again 76. 260, 316, 77. 15; Viṛagāṅga again 76. 131, 179 ff.; Muva again 76. 216; Alṭṭilūru again 76. 184, 214 ff., 305; Maṇḍaya again 77. 7, 85 (cf. note to 76. 220); Kaṭavapḍiya again 76. 267, 316, 77. 10 ff.; Keraṭasihamuttara again 77. 7. Nakula, Karamba and Kuṇḍiyūrū do not occur again.

<sup>1</sup> The Col. Ed. has contrary to the MSS. °tha'apḍīrū.

<sup>2</sup> Now Tinnevelli, the district filling out the extreme south-east corner of the Indian peninsula. The correct form of the name is Tirunelvēli. See Imp. Gazetteer of India s. v.; W.'s note to the passage. The two Koṅgu districts are according to 76. 288, Teṅkoṅgu and Vaḍakoṅgu.

<sup>3</sup> Of the officers named here Niccevinodavāḍava occurs again in 77. 76. For Ālavandappērūmāṭla see note to 76. 128; a Coṭakonāṭra is mentioned again 76. 163, 181, 188, 77. 77, 86. Tāṅgipperūmāṭla 76. 190; Muṇḍyālha 77. 40. The other names are only mentioned here.

<sup>4</sup> Again the Col. Ed. changes the name, contrary to the MSS. into Mundiyūn.

148 rakkamapura. "Only when I shall have cut off the heads of the Sihalas shall this time my sacrifice to the gods in holy  
 149 Rāmissara take place!" Letting such lion-like cry sound forth, he occupied a strong encampment at the village of Erukāṭṭa  
 150 and Idagalissura. Now in order to destroy the strong encampment of Parakkamapura, Kulasekhara sent forth a great army from the land side and another embarked in numbers of ships  
 151 from the ocean. When thus the mighty force coming from different sides began the fight it was as if two seas overflowed their  
 152 shores. Laṅkāpura made his great army put on their armour, advanced from his strong encampment and began the battle  
 153 with the others. But the army of the Damijas suffered fighting in the battle (heavy loss by) sword blows and arrow shots.  
 154 It weakened, turned tail and withdrew to its own stronghold. In this way it fought in the offensive three and fifty actions.  
 155 But when King Kulasekhara saw this disaster in every combat,  
 156 he himself set forth and sent out his troops to fight. Laṅkāpura had all the gates opened and placing his army like a  
 157 great mountain in front of him, he came forth. He slew in combat numbers of Damijas<sup>1</sup>, took away their horses, gained the victory and pressed forward in pursuit as far as Kurmm-  
 158 bāyjanakaṭṭi. While he was beginning here to build a strong encampment<sup>2</sup>, Kulasekhara gathered together his great army  
 159 which had been shattered in the fight, took also his picked troops<sup>3</sup> whom he cherished as his life, marched hither himself  
 160 and opened right awaking terror among the foe. With thousands of fish, namely the (glittering) swords, with hundreds of waves, namely the horses, with the mass of the waters, namely the infantry, with the lines of surf namely the umbrellas<sup>4</sup>, with the flowing of the streams<sup>5</sup>, namely the arrows,

<sup>1</sup> Of course we must read *Damile 'neke*.

<sup>2</sup> I.e., abs. It must be supplemented by *tēna*. "When by him (Laṅkāpura) was begun the building of a strong encampment."

<sup>3</sup> P. *sūrabhātāpi mahāsēnam*. By *sāra* is meant the duramen (heart-wood) of a tree.

<sup>4</sup> The white umbrellas are the badges of the officers.

<sup>5</sup> P. *ñpagūnipātēna*. What is meant are the streams flowing into

with the clamorous din, namely the drums, the whole battle-field was terror-striking like the ocean. When thus the great 162 battle was fought, the Sihalas endowed with great courage, stilled the twitching in their arms<sup>1</sup>. They slew Villava-rāyara 163 by name and Coṇakonūra and the mighty officer, Yādhava<sup>2</sup>-rāyara, many hundreds of soldiers and officers of the king; 164 also they wounded the horse on which King Kulasekhara was riding. Kulasekhara with his army turned to flee in order 165 therewith to give the Sihalas, as it were, occasion for yet more furious sword strokes. When in fight he fled, he not 166 only surrendered his courage but also his throne, his umbrella, his ornaments and all else. Laṅkāpura marched to the fortress 167 called Erukkāvūra where his enemy King Kulasekhara had resided, burned it down and then after erecting a new strong- 168 hold, Laṅkāpura<sup>3</sup> tarried there some time. Then he set forth and marched to Vaḍali<sup>4</sup>. Thence he advanced farther and 169 hereupon took Deviyāpattana by force. Then he betook him- 170 self to Siriyavala and after completely vanquishing in bitter combat the well-armed Khudlakañcakupūla-rāyara<sup>5</sup> commanding 171 the stronghold named Koṇuvukkotta, he put to flight in battle numbers of dignitaries of King Kulasekhara, captured also 172 this strong place and burned down seven and twenty large villages in (the district) Dantika. Hereupon he fought with

the ocean. The comparison of the combat to the ringing sea is described exactly in accordance with the rules of Indian poeties.

<sup>1</sup> They had abundant opportunity of satisfying their thirst for fighting.

<sup>2</sup> The first two names occur already in 76. 94, 115, but are also mentioned again later on (Villava 76. 178, 185; a Coṇakonūra 76. 173, 181 and 188, 77. 77 and 86, also a Yādhava 76. 178, 177). Cf. note to 76. 180. Yādavu is a South Indian clan name. See Kl. vii. Appendix, nr. 331, 332, 334 etc.

<sup>3</sup> All the MSS. have here *lapkāridū* which should be adopted on principle in the text. W. supposes it might be a corruption of *kālāridū*. Not impossible.

<sup>4</sup> See above note to v. 133.

<sup>5</sup> The same as *Cullukuñcakupūda* "the small Kañcikapūda" in 76. 185 ff. 217 ff. The name is most closely connected with that of the district *Kañcakupūya* 76. 130. This again with the proper name *Kañcikupūyanūj*, 76. 121.

173 the Damiṭa Paṇḍiyāḍḍāra<sup>1</sup> dwelling in Koṭuvukkoṭṭa who was  
 of terrible courage, with both Coṭakonāras, with the officer  
 174 Yādhava-rāyara and with Villava-rāyara, with the Damiṭa  
 Kālinga-rāyara with Sundarapāṇī-rāyara, with Narasiḥadevara  
 175 and with Paṇḍiya-rāyara as well as with the (officers) in the  
 village of the brūhmapas, shattered them and slew many  
 176 Damiṭas. He took (as booty) many horses and armed with  
 troop and train, took up a position at the place named  
 177 Kuṇḍayaipkoṭṭa. He brought into his power the three Damiṭa  
 officers, Kuṇḍayamutta-rāyara, Kaṭiliya-rāyara and Yādhava-  
 178 rāyara and took up a position at that place, well understand-  
 ing eight places. Further the great hero brought into his  
 179 power Paṇḍiya-rāyara in the fortress of Viṭṭakmucōḍappera  
 180 and the three, Paṇḍimamūḍala-nāḍḍalvārā, Viṭṭagaṅga-rāyara and  
 Kuṇḍakondāḍipperayara, who were in Kāmuṇākkkoṭṭa and advanced  
 to Marthunkuṭṭa with the object of fighting a decisive battle<sup>2</sup>.

<sup>1</sup> Only occurs here. For Coṭakonāra see note to 76. 144, for Yādhava note to 76. 163, for Villava ibidem; for Sundarapāṇī note to 76. 126. Kālinga is mentioned again 76. 214 ff., 77. 40.

<sup>2</sup> Verses 170-180 form one sentence. The principal verb is *pūyāsi* (180 a), subordinate to it are the gerunds in 170-172 and the gerunds and pres. part. in 175-6 as well as those in 178 and 180 a. The nominatives in 172 c-174 d, in 177 a-e and in 178 c-179 e are independent of the construction of the sentence and are summed up with *iti* (ice-etc) 178 a, *iti sāmunte tuyā* 177 e d, ice-etc tuyā 179 d). Note how in the account of the contests in Southern India the names of the Damiṭa officers repeat themselves. Only once in this passage are Kaṭiliya, Paṇḍiyamūḍala and Paṇḍiyāḍḍāra mentioned, as well as Kuṇḍa-  
 kondāḍipperayara, with which Kuṇḍakondāḍipperayara 77. 75 may be compared. Paṇḍiya-rāyara is mentioned twice in this passage but not otherwise. Yādhava here in v. 173 and 177, before in v. 163. In v. 163 a Coṭakonāra, a Villava and a Yādhava are mentioned as having fallen. Possibly these may often be place names as above in the case of Aññikotṭa (see v. 235) rather than names of persons. Villava-rāyara meaning for instance, the rāyara of Villava (see note to 77. 9). Kuṇḍayamutta and Narasiḥadeva occur already in 76. 94-95, Viṭṭagaṅga already in 76. 131, 140 and later repeatedly (76. 181 ff.). Sundarapāṇī 76. 126. It is expressly stated that there are two Coṭakonāras (76. 173). It is the same below with Tombriya (181). The same with Ajattūr-nāḍḍalvārā (184, 214) and with Viṭṭagaṅga (140). In v. 141 three Maṇṇaya-  
 rāyaras are mentioned.

There he gave the Coļakonāra, the other Tondriya, the officer 181 Suttāpūra, the Damiļa Viragaṅgara, Kuttāpūra and others a 182 severe combat. He robbed Tondriya of his life, took his horses 183 away from him, slew many Damiļas and occupied besides the 184 fortress known by the name of Kaṅgakonūpāna. Then he set 185 from there, took up a position at the place named Paṇiva, 186 fought there with the two Aḥattūru-nūḍūlāvāras, with Pandriya- 187 rāyara, Villava-rāyara and Cullakañcakunūla-rāyara<sup>1</sup> a great 188 battle, shattered them and captured Paṇivakkotṭa. Then he 189 turned and betook himself to Kaṅgakonūpāna<sup>2</sup> where he had 190 stood formerly. Hereupon he marched to Vālakkotṭa<sup>3</sup> to fight 191 there, fought there against Kaṇḍadevamālava-rāyara, against the 192 two Viragaṅgaras and the Damiļa Coļakonāra a great battle, 193 shattered them all and slew numbers of Damiļas, seized from 194 them many horses and captured with this fortress (Vālakkotṭa) 195 also (the fortress) Neṭṭūru<sup>4</sup>. He himself took up a position 196 there, brought Kuttāpūdā(r)a<sup>5</sup>, Viragaṅga and Tāngipperūmāla 197 and the Damiļas dependent in him, many hundreds in number, 198 as well as Ilaikiya and Aīcukotṭa-rāyara under his influence, 199 gave them earrings and other ornaments. But on Ilaikiya- 200 rāyara he conferred the well-known and coveted title of Rā- 201 javesibhujaṅga-Silāmegha<sup>6</sup>.

Meanwhile Laṅkāpura learned that the very youngest son of 193 the Paṇju King Parakkama, Prince Virapāṇu by name, at the 194 murderer of his unhappy royal father — who had fallen with wife 195 and child into the power of the enemy — by some wile or other

<sup>1</sup> See above v. 170 and note.

<sup>2</sup> W. translates *paccārutto* wrongly by "he proceeded to . . ." Its meaning is far rather "he returned to . . ." Cf. skr. *prati-ā-vart*. Evidently the attack on Paṇiva had not the wished-for success.

<sup>3</sup> The text here is very corrupt, but the name Vālakkotṭa is assured

<sup>4</sup> W. suggests, though doubtfully, Nellore. That is quite impossible. Nellore lies north of Madras. The scene of the combats described lay between Ramisserām and Madhurū. Cf. v. 197.

<sup>5</sup> Cf. above v. 182.

<sup>6</sup> The gerund *datēā* in 192 b shows that the sentence here is not finished. The principal verb is *pesesi* in 196 a. For the title Rājavesi-bhujaṅga see note to 73. 91 c d (p. 10, n. 8).

had been saved from the hands of the foe and now, since through fear he dared not come near, was sojourning in the province of 196 Malaya<sup>1</sup>. He (Lañkāpura) sent a messenger to him: "I have here in war again and again completely vanquished Kulasekhara 197 together with his dignitaries and am now standing, after capturing a part of the realm, not far from Madhurā at a distance 198 of two or three gāvutas<sup>2</sup>. But my Master who had in view the protection of thy royal father, has since the murder of 199 this Ruler by his foes, at the tidings of this, given me the following charge: 'he has placed himself under my protection, if now he has been slain by the hostile king, ye shall now 200 slay the latter and make over the realm of the Pandu King 201 Parakkama to a scion of his house, if such there be'. Therefore come without fear in haste hither, and take over the dominion in thy father's kingdom." Thus ran the friendly 202 message in accord with the truth<sup>3</sup>. When the Prince heard of this matter in the right manner, he betook himself to him 203 without delay. Hereupon Lañkāpura sent a letter to Laukū 204 to the Great king with the news that the prince had arrived destitute. When the Great king had attentively heard this report, he sent joyfully many golden and silver vessels worthy 205 to eat from, as well as many gold and silver lump-stands and exquisite garments from his own stock, worthy to clothe 206 himself with, earrings and chains and bangles set with jewels 207 and the like as a gladdening gift. And the Prince accepted the whole of the heart-ravishing gift reverently making obeisance in the direction in which the King was.

208 Hereupon Lañkāpura fought with great might against Kāṇḍadevamālava-rūyara in Muṇḍikkāra, drove him from this 209 place and brought the Damilas into his power in the two

<sup>1</sup> As in Ceylon and Pegg (76. 22) also in Southern India name for the mountainous country. Cf. the name of the Malayālis who live in the districts of Arcot and Salem, that is in the mountains west of Pondicherry.

<sup>2</sup> About four to six miles. See note to 73. 154.

<sup>3</sup> The words *ti vatrā saccamp rao mudu* in v. 201 d refer to *dulam peseti* in v. 96, comprehending the contents of the message.

districts Kīlamangala and Melamangala<sup>1</sup> while he tarried there. Then by restoring Muṇḍikāra to Mālava-rāyara — whose heart was overwhelmed with fear and who bereft of all defiance, had placed himself under his protection — he placed him in his (old) position and appointed him chief of the two districts of Mangala. When then Laṅkāpura, while tarrying in Anivalakoṭṭa, had appointed the colonel Gokappanāḍa who was in Muṇḍannānamkoṭṭa as chief<sup>2</sup>, he set forth from there and surprised Neṭṭūru<sup>3</sup>. He fought with the officers quartered in Mānavirāmadrā, with the two Ajattūru-nāḍālāvāras, with Kāliṅga-rāyara<sup>4</sup> and Kalikāla-rāyara a great battle. The mighty one slew many Damiṭas, as well as Kalikāla-rāyara and brought Madhurū into his possession. He brought upon many Damiṭas, as well as Muvaraya and Kurnimbhālātā-rāyara<sup>5</sup> into his power, marched then with his troops to the castle of Alattūru-nāḍālāvāra, fought hard to subdue, with Kāliṅga-rāyara and Cullakāñcakupuḍa-rāyara a great battle, drove them with terrible courage from this place, and after he had then burnt down many well-known villages, the great hero betook himself again to Neṭṭūru<sup>6</sup>. Now there came from the south hither Cullakāñcakupuḍa-rāyara, the two Ajattūru-nāḍālāvāras, Maṇīrāya-rāyara<sup>7</sup>, further Parittikupuḍiyāra 221

<sup>1</sup> Upper and Lower Mangala (W.).

<sup>2</sup> The loc. *Anienhkkutte* (cf. below note to v. 235) belongs equally to *rusay* and to (*mīyakam*) *kutru*. The supplementing of the word *nāyakam* is to be inferred from *gokappanāḍāvāyakam* and *nāyakam vihūru* in v. 211. W. has quite a different rendering but hardly a correct one: "had made him (the Mālava-rāyara) chief of Gokappanāḍa in Muṇḍannānamkoṭṭa."

<sup>3</sup> Mentioned already in v. 189, a proof that the fighting went on with alternate vicissitudes round about Madhurā.

<sup>4</sup> For this name see 76. 174.

<sup>5</sup> Cf. for these names 76. 140 and 189.

<sup>6</sup> Verses 208—219 form one sentence. They show how rapidly one event followed another. Neṭṭūru formed, as is shown also by verses 285-7, 294, 303 ff., henceforth a main centre for Laṅkāpura's operations.

<sup>7</sup> Perhaps the same as the Maṇīrāya-rāyara mentioned in 76. 141, 77. 7 and 35. For the other names in 221—223 see note to 76. 170 (Cullak<sup>8</sup>); n. to 76. 180, 184 (A-*n*), 76. 137 (Par. and Seik).

and Señkundi-rāyara and many other war-skilled Damiṭas, officers from the immediate retinue of King Kulasekhara: 222 Kāliṅga-rāyara, Tennavanappalla-rāyara and Ājavandapperūmāla<sup>1</sup>, all people hard to vanquish who after equipping their army, 223 came to the place Pātapatu by name, their heart full of fury 224 and firmly determined this time to conquer the foe. When Laṅkāpura heard of the matter he, the expert, sent officers 225 thither with a big army and train. They marched thither, invested the fortress from all sides, burned down a score of 226 large villages near the stronghold and after making their report, sent a messenger to Laṅkāpura to ask if they were 227 to take the fortress or not. At such tidings Laṅkāpura once more sent forth a great army and gave the charge to capture 228 the fortress. When now they received the command sent to 229 them, they began all of them to open a fearful fight. There raged between the two armies a battle — hardly bearable, 230 awful, exasperating — like to the raging of the storm at 231 the destruction of the world. Damiṭas thousands in number they deprived of life, besides that the Tennavanapalla-rāyara 232 from the immediate retinue of the King. When Ājavandapperūmāla after receiving a wound, took flight, they slew the horse he had mounted and seized this and many other steeds, 233 and while they brought joyous laughter to the lotus countenance of the goddess of fortune of heroes, the Silalas shattered 234 with a lion's courage the army of the Damiṭas. After Laṅkāpura had taken possession of Pātapatu he later on brought the troops standing there over to his side.

235 Laṅkāpura betook himself thereupon to Anivalukkikotta<sup>2</sup> 236 and subdued Mālava-eakkavattin in Añcukotṭa. After he had in like manner captured Tonḍi and Pāsa<sup>3</sup>, he advanced to Kurundaikupdiya to clear the region lying northwards of the

<sup>1</sup> Kāliṅga above 76. 173 note; Ājavandapperūmāla 76. 128, 232, Tennavanappalla falls in battle according to v. 231.

<sup>2</sup> Probably the same as above in v. 212, Anivalukkikotta. The place is repeatedly mentioned below v. 276 ff. Cf. note to v. 238.

<sup>3</sup> The two places must have lain very near together since their names 77. 81 are formed into the compound Tonḍipāsa.

enemy. After he had there subdued Valuṭṭhi-rāyara, he 237 bestowed on him as a gift of favour, a golden bracelet and the like. Then he marched thence and betook himself to 238 Tirivekambama<sup>1</sup>. Here he subdued Silāmeghara, Kanasiya-rāyara and Añcukoṭṭa-nāḍālāvāra<sup>2</sup> and showed them all 239 marks of favour as before (to Valuṭṭhi). Thereupon the great 240 hero whose word was to be trusted<sup>3</sup>, sent a message to Puṇ-konḍa-nāḍālāvāra<sup>4</sup> in order to bring him under his influence. But when the latter without showing himself, went to 241 Semponmāri, Lankāpura betook himself thither in order to capture Semponmāri. To capture this fortress a Cola army 242 had once upon a time marched hither and could not take it in spite of a four days' fight. This inaccessible stronghold 243 the Sihalas with their lion-like courage, captured<sup>5</sup> without allowing more time than half a day to pass. After they had 244 broken through two outerwalls and 'four gate-towers', they penetrated like singly marching elephants<sup>6</sup> into the interior of the fortress, slew there the Damiṭas, many thousands in 245 number, and conquered thus in a moment the stronghold Semponmāri. Thereupon (came) the troop of the Kallaras, the 246 Maravaras<sup>7</sup>, as also the Golihalas and the Kuntavaras, the army 247 of Vallakkuttūra and the troop of Ucena, as also the mighty army in the district of Añcukoṭṭa: these exceeding brave, hot- 248

<sup>1</sup> Is also mentioned in v. 266 and 276 in close connection with Kunḍanakuppiya or Anivulukki.

<sup>2</sup> Kanasiya is only mentioned here. For the two others see above notes to v. 95 and 99.

<sup>3</sup> P. *saceasamūḍha*. This is specially stressed. Evidently Lankāpura's bail guaranteed Puṇkonḍa's safety. Puṇkonḍa nevertheless does not risk presenting himself to Lankāpura, as he distrusts his promises.

<sup>4</sup> See note to 76. 137.

<sup>5</sup> *Duggam* must be supplemented by the verb *gahesum* from v. 245 c.

<sup>6</sup> W. "one by one like unto so many elephants." I think however, that we must take *paccekahottino* in the same sense as 72. 248 ("solitary elephants, rogue elephants"). Cf. the note.

<sup>7</sup> Cf. above note to 76. 130. The troops mentioned in v. 246-7 are those belonging to particular tribes or those drawn from the men of certain districts who are capable of bearing arms.

headed forces of the Damiļas, numbering some fifty to sixty thousand, surrounded thereupon the fortress occupied by the Sihalas and opened at once a most embittered fight. Then the Laīkāpura Deva<sup>1</sup> and the Laīkāgiri Sora opened the gate by the southern tower, accompanied by their troops (and) with a courage scarcely to be surpassed, robbed Damiļas thousands of them, of their life, shattered with lion-like courage the unruly Damiļa army come from that direction hitherward, as lions a herd of elephants. From the southern door there broke forth at this moment the general Gokūṇya and the Kesadhātu Loka by name, slew many soldiers of the enemy on the battlefield and shattered to the last man the hostile forces which remained over from the slaughter. From the northern tower-gate came the mighty Kesalhātu Kitti and the officer named Jagadvijaya for which scarce any man was a match. The heroes shattered in no time the Damiļa army after robbing many Damiļa warriors of their life. Thus the Sihalas destroyed at once in a moment the whole forces of the Damiļas, put them to flight, captured many steeds and found themselves — the victory gained, famous by reason of many deeds of heroism — again together in the fortress famed under the name of Semponmāri. Thereupon he subdued<sup>2</sup> the Kuuntavaras, the soldiery of the Kullaras, the army of the Gojihālas and the troop of the Maravaras, the army of Valkakkuttāra and the following of Ueena, the Athalayūru-nūļālvāra and Kaūgayara<sup>3</sup> and their shattered army, the dwellers in Tālāyūru-nūļu, the army in Kalahayinūļu and the dwellers of Athalayunnāļu and those of Kākannāļu<sup>4</sup>: all these Damiļa forces all that lay (in a line) from the village of Cellāru up to the frontier of the Coju region he brought into his power and bestowed on them favours as before. He accepted the gifts which were brought him by the Vessas and

<sup>1</sup> Already mentioned in 75. 130. Cf. further 76. 310 ff.

<sup>2</sup> I anticipate here the finite verb *vasam ānesi* occurring in v. 263 b.

<sup>3</sup> For these two names see note to 76. 137.

<sup>4</sup> The names of districts (*nādu*) in v. 261, 262 do not occur otherwise.

the Yavanas<sup>1</sup> and distinguished these people also by countless marks of favour. To Mālava-cakkavattin who placed himself under his protection he restored Sempomāri and appointed him to his (former) post. Then he set forth from there and came again to Tirivekambama and starting hence he reached Kurundaūkuṇḍi<sup>2</sup>.

Now Kaļavāṇḍi-nādālīyāra had in battle with great forces wrested Muṇḍikkāra<sup>3</sup> from Mālava-rāyara. Then seeing no other aid, Mālava-rāyara approached Laṅkāpura: "be thou my protection". Laṅkāpura at once summoned his best officers, the two Kesadhātus, known to the people as Kitti and Loka, and the general Gokauya and charged them as their commander, to open hostilities and restore Muṇḍikkāra to Mālava-rāyara. These betook themselves to the spot, began a combat hard to withstand, drove the foe from Muṇḍikkāra, slew many Damijas and after they had placed Mālava-rāyara once more in his former position, they returned thence to Laṅkāpura.

Another officer, Puṇkopuṇja-nādālīyāra<sup>4</sup> by name, betook himself to the place called Siriayala, fought while there a great battle with Mūlava-cakkavattin, put him to flight and took the village known by the name of Jayākōṇḍūna and immediately after that Sempomāri itself. When the hero Laṅkāpura, best of steadfast men, heard of this event, he set forth himself at once from the fortress Anivalakki and advanced, in order to take Sempomāri, to Tirivekambama<sup>5</sup>. When Puṇkopuṇja-nādālīyāra learned of this event, he left Sempomāri and betook himself from there to Siriayala. Thereupon the hero

<sup>1</sup> P. *vassa* = skr. *vaiśya* is the name of the third caste. *Yarana* does not necessarily mean the Greeks (Ionians) but all westerns living in India, more especially those of Arabian origin. See E. R. AYRTON, Ceylon Notes and Queries, I, 1913, p. VIII.

<sup>2</sup> See note to 76. 238.

<sup>3</sup> Cf. 76. 210—211. For Kaļavāṇḍi note to 76. 137.

<sup>4</sup> See above note to 76. 137.

<sup>5</sup> The continued recurrence of place names previously mentioned (cf. 76. 170; 76. 241, 258; 76. 212, 235; 76. 238, 266) shows again that all these contests were waged within a fairly circumscribed area.

Laṅkāpura marched to Semponmāri and when now Puṇikongda-  
 279 nāḍālvāra came thither with the intent to surrender, but  
 without presenting himself, betook himself again to the place  
 Siriayala, Laṅkāpura also marched to the village of Siriayala  
 280 and began from all sides an embittered combat. Now Puṇikongda-  
 281 nāḍālvāra sent the following message: "I will submit to thee,  
 if safety is vouchsafed me, since I am mastered by great fear;  
 282 if not, I dare not come." At the tidings of this Laṅkāpura  
 who was himself free from fear, sent a return message with  
 283 the purport that he should come. At the message of the  
 hero Laṅkāpura whose word was to be relied on, the former  
 284 free of all dread, betook himself to him. Thereupon Laṅkā-  
 pūra bestowed on him many favours, summoned also Māla-  
 285 va-cakkavattin to him, reconciled the two and after he had  
 placed them both in their former positions, the great hero  
 286 betook himself to Netṭūrn. The two villages which had been  
 laid waste, Rājasihāmāhāla and Vēlugāma by name he rebnilt  
 287 and after he had dammed up two tanks in Siriayala and  
 two tanks also in Perumpalaya, he had the tilling of the fields  
 taken in hand.

288 The Ruler Kulasekhura took the troops in Tiripaveli<sup>1</sup>, as  
 well as the troops of the two brothers of his mother in Ten-  
 289 kongu and Vaḍakongu<sup>2</sup>, and versed in the various expedients  
 of statecraft, such as the distribution of honours and the like,  
 he made deserters of many Damiḷas who had already been  
 290 subdued and began now, eqnipped with forces to march forth  
 to battle. When the prudent Laṅkāpura heard trustworthy  
 291 tidings of this he destroyed the traitorous Damiḷas root and  
 branch, true to the command of his Lord whose task it was  
 to subdue the miscreants.

292 Thereupon there came sent by the Great king to cover  
 his rear, the hero Jagadvijaya<sup>3</sup> by name whose courage ex-  
 293 ceeded that of the whole world, accompanied by many foot

<sup>1</sup> See 76. 143 with the note.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. 77. 43.

<sup>3</sup> As he is already mentioned in v. 255 in the struggle for Sempon-  
 māri, it may be assumed that Laṅkāpura had sent him to Laṅkā for  
 reinforcements.

soldiers and steeds to Anivalakki after crossing the ocean. The far-famed Laṅkāpura likewise left Neṭṭūru and betook himself to Anivalakki. He sought out the newly-arrived (Jagadvijaya), embraced him and having conversed with him in heartfelt and friendly manner, the foe-crusher returned to Neṭṭūru. Setting forth from there, he came, having knowledge of the right places, to the place known by the name of Mundramaddhāna and took up far-fained for his courage, his position there. At the place called Kīlakotṭa and at the place by name Maṅgalama<sup>1</sup> he fought with the Damiḷas, slew many soldiers, took such foes as one was obliged to seize, alive and captured many horses which had been left on the battlefield. Then he set forth from there, came to Orittiyūrutmōbama and endowed with a surplus of invincible courage, he fought with Puṇḍuṇḍa-naḍāvāra, Silāmeghara and Añcukotṭa-naḍāvāra<sup>2</sup> a great (and) terrible battle. After cutting down many Damiḷas he betook himself to Siriyavala, burned down the two-storeyed palace of Puṇḍuṇḍa-naḍāvāra who had not submitted to him and marched from the place Tirikkānappera farther. The general Jagadvijaya now advanced from Anivalakki to Neṭṭūru, set forth from there and shattered, himself unapproachable<sup>3</sup>, the fortresses called Madhurammāṇavāra, Pāttanallūru and Soraṇḍakkoṭta. Returned to Neṭṭūru he tarried there and brought the two Ajattūru-naḍāvāras and Cullakaśīca-kunḍa-rāyara<sup>4</sup> to submission. When once the hero with great forces came to Pāttanallūru, he sent to Laṅkāpura the following message: "Thou must come with greatest haste to the river called Vayiga; I must needs see thee, there is something to report." When the hero Laṅkāpura received these tidings, he set off with all speed thence and began the march with large forces. The hostile army which was standing at

<sup>1</sup> Cf. below note to 77. 38.

<sup>2</sup> The three named here belonged to those chieftains who having submitted to Laṅkāpura (v. 280 ff., v. 238) had since deserted (v. 289).

<sup>3</sup> Pun on *dugge—duggamo*, the latter referring to the subject. The skr. *durgama* is an epithet of Śiva.

<sup>4</sup> See above v. 220 and note.

310 the place called Tirippāluru, saddled its numerous horses, came hither and half-way began to fight a terrible combat with the Laṅkāpura Deva and the other heroes who were present  
 311 in the battle. Thereupon the heroes dispersed the great army even as the beams of the sun spreading forth (disperse)  
 312 the mass of the darkness. Thus did Laṅkāpura whose bravery was as the fire of the last day, capture in a moment  
 313 Tirippāluru and took up his abode there. The officer by name Jagadvijaya, versed in good counsel, shattered the great army  
 314 of Damiṭas dwelling in Pannatṭānkoṭṭa, capable of starting a battle on the battlefield, brought the fortress into his power and halted there.

315 King Kulasekhara in his exceeding fury took Tuvarādhi-  
 316 pativelāra, as well as Topyāmānara, Vīrappera-yara and Nigaya-rāyara, Kalavandhiya-nāṭṭāvāra and the other Kaṅga-  
 317 yara<sup>1</sup>, made his many soldiers ready for battle and betook  
 318 himself, his loins girt for battle, to Rājinā. The great general of terrible courage charged his terrible army to give battle  
 319 to Laṅkāpura. The hero Laṅkāpura therenpon, expert in  
 320 affairs, explained the affair to Jagadvijaya: "In order together with me to put to flight the Monarch Kulasekhara, thou must so as to attack from the one side, make thy troops ready for  
 321 battle and come hither with all haste." After he had sent him a message of such purport and had at the same time  
 322 equipped his own strong army, he set forth from there and fought a great battle with the Damiṭas. They were van-  
 323 quished, withdrew at once to Rājinā, closed the tower-gates with the small and the great gates and the Damiṭas now with their Monarch kept to the centre of the town.  
 324 Thereupon the heroes at the head, the general Gokāṇya, the  
 325 Kesadhātu named Loka and the Laṅkāpura Deva, who had arrived at the west gate, began to tear down the walls and  
 326 to blow up the tower-gates. The Laṅkāpura Deva and the general Gokāṇya after shattering walls and tower-gates, pene-

<sup>1</sup> Nigaya is mentioned again in the sequel (77. 69). As regards the other names see note to 76. 137.

trated within. But the haughty Kesadhātu, the mighty Loka 327 by name, thought: by the way the others went I go not; he slew numbers of heroic warriors, brought down many steeds, 328 blew up the southern gate and, at once penetrated within. Thereupon Kūlasekhara fled, his heart overwhelmed with fear, 329 no longer even master of the clothes he wore, by the postern of the eastern tower-gate<sup>1</sup> which he had had opened, and 330 by a lucky chance he escaped out of the hands of his foes. These all cut down numbers of soldiers of the Damijas, took 331 away many horses and much treasure of many a kind, and 332 shaking their garments, dancing around, clapping their hands and rejoicing, they celebrated the festival of victory. There- 333 upon Lankāpura and the general Jagadvijaya entered Rājinā along with the other heroes.

Thus thrives ever more and more the state of those who 334 have done good, who are endowed with a keen understanding, who understand statecraft and moral discipline, whose riches are their terrible majesty, whose manliness fails not, even as the moon in the light half of the month (waxes) from day to day.

Here ends the seventy-sixth chapter, called «Account of the Capture of the Town of Rājinā», in the Mahāvaṇīsa, compiled for the serene joy and emotion of the pions.

<sup>1</sup> The loc. *gopure* stands for the gen. *gapurassa*; *pācīnadvārā gopure* means the same as *pācīnagopuradvārā*.

## CHAPTER LXXVII

## THE CONQUEST OF THE PANDU KINGDOM

1      The Monarch Kulasekhara who had fled thence through fear  
 found again a firm footing in Tonjamiāna's<sup>1</sup> mountain fortress.  
 2      The forces of Viranukkara and other (soldiers) from Kakkola,  
 3      the forces of Madhuraddhamakkāra<sup>2</sup> came to Rājinā, related  
 4      the whole story of King Kulasekhara and persuaded Lañkā-  
 5      pura to betake himself at once to Madhurā. Thereupon Lañkā-  
 6      pura and the general Jagadvijaya equipped with great luck,  
 7      set forth for the town of Madhurā, gave over to the Prince  
 8      Vīrapañju the dwelling of his royal father, which was his  
 9      birthplace, and took up their abode in the town. They had  
 summoned to them the three Vīrapperaiyaras: him called  
 10     Sirivallabha, Rājā Nārāyaṇa, and him called Parakkamapāṇḍu,  
 (further) the officer Mañṇaya-rāyara and Señkuṇḍi-rāyara, the  
 other Vīrapperaiyara Keralasihamuttara<sup>3</sup> and bestowed on them  
 ornaments and the like. To Coñagangara who had submitted,  
 they made over the supreme direction of the district Parittik-  
 kūṇḍi<sup>4</sup> formerly administered by him, and restored him to his  
 former position. Kalavañḍiya-nādālāvāra<sup>5</sup> came indeed with the  
 intention of submitting<sup>6</sup>, but when he had entered Madhurā,

<sup>1</sup> Cf. above 76. 137.

<sup>2</sup> Evidently local troops which had voluntarily submitted to the victor.

<sup>3</sup> Vīrapperaiyara is clearly a title here. Cf. 76. 138 and 316. Of the other names Mañṇaya is mentioned 76. 141, 77. 35, Señkuṇḍi 76. 138 (q. v.) and Keralasihamuttara 76. 141.

<sup>4</sup> Coñagangara(ra) is mentioned 76. 124. The place name Parittikkūṇḍi is met with in Parittikkūṇḍiyāra 76. 137 and 221.

<sup>5</sup> See 76. 141.

<sup>6</sup> P. *vase hessayi* as or. *recta*. Cf. a similar phrase 75. 85.

he thought: I fear to let myself be seen, and returned without presenting himself, to his place. Thereupon Laṅkāpura marched into his district to take it. The unrivalled one, equipped with great power and courage, offered him battle, defeated him and captured Alagvānagiri. Kalavāṇḍiya-nāḍalvāra and another named Sūradeva submitted and besought the general for (the restoration of) his district; at his request Laṅkāpura handed over to him the district. Then the far-famed betook himself to the district of Kurumba-rāyara and after he had also subdued Kurumba-rāyara and likewise brought Kaṅgayara in Niyama into his power, the hero betook himself later to the place called Tirippattūru in order to make subject to himself also Nigaladhu-rāyara<sup>1</sup>.

Niguladhu-rāyara gathered together his own army, took with him also the Cōla officers, Akalaṅka-nāḍalvāra and Kañcamba-rāyara, Malayappa-rāyara and Kiccārattarayara<sup>2</sup> as well as their numerous troops and the many horses in their possession, marched thence and began a combat hard to withstand. But the army of the Sihalas transformed the hostile host together with steeds and infantry — stretching three gāvutas wide<sup>3</sup> from Tirippattūru to Ponaamarāvatī, along the highway between the two places — into a single mass of flesh. After it had shattered these vast forces it came to Ponaamarāvatī, burned down the three-storeyed palace built there, and after setting fire to many other houses and well-filled granaries of rice, the hero (Laṅkāpura) in order to rob the inhabitants of their fear, had the drums beaten, took the people who were settled in the district under his own dominion and returned to Madhurā<sup>4</sup>.

<sup>1</sup> Of the names mentioned in vv. 18—16 those of Sūradeva and Kurumba do not otherwise occur. For Kalavāṇḍiya see 76. 141, for Kaṅgayara see 76. 140, for Nigaladhu 76. 138.

<sup>2</sup> Akalaṅka, Mayalappa and Kiccārattarayara are mentioned again later (77. 55 ff.)

<sup>3</sup> The front extended thus over a distance of something like six miles (cf. 73. 15 f. and note).

<sup>4</sup> The subject changes in this sentence. In the principal sentence

25 Now the Monarch (Parakkamabāhu) whose commands stand firm, sent the order to hold the festival of the coronation for  
 26 Prince Virapuṇḍu. When Laṅkāpura heard of this command of the King's which could not be gainsaid, he set about making the preparations for the consecration. He then charged the  
 28 Lambakāṇas Mālava-eakkavattin, Mālava-rāyara and Athala-yūra-nūḍīlvāra to carry out the duties of the Lambakāṇas<sup>1</sup>, had then as one whose commands are scarcely to be evaded,  
 29 the drums beaten in the kingdom and gathered together all the officers in the Pāṇḍu realm at the head of their own  
 30 troops and adorned with all their ornaments. Then in a temple of the deities to the north of the palace of former kings,  
 31 adorned with the drums of victory captured aforetime, the highly-famed one carried out the consecration of the Prince and made him in accord with tradition, walk round the town, his right side turned towards it.

32 Meanwhile the Ruler Kulasekhara who had fled to the mountain fortress of Toglamāna, had brought Toglamāna  
 33 round to his side. He took his army as well as his own troops, and together with Anujivisamiddha, a man of terrible  
 34 courage, he set forth from that hill fortress and reached the important stronghold called Mangalamā into which he entered.  
 35 With Muṇḍaya-rāyara and Seikunḍiya-rāyara who had submitted to the Sihalas<sup>2</sup> he fought a great battle; he captured their fortress and took up a position there. When Laṅkāpura heard of the matter and how it had happened, he thought:  
 37 "Only when I shall have driven the hostile Ruler from this

(v. 24) *rīro* is the subject and *āgañchi* the finite verb. The gerunds occurring in vv. 21–23 have as subject *senā* *Sihalādhanā*. They are thus again treated as absolute locatives. Cūlava, ed. 1. Introd., p. XVI.

<sup>1</sup> We learn two things from this passage: that a Lambakāṇa clan existed also in Southern India and that the members of this clan performed particular functions at the festival of the king's consecration. For the three names see notes to 76. 182 and 137.

<sup>2</sup> Thus according to 77. 7. It must be assumed that the Toglamāna named in v. 32 who figures in 76. 315 as one of Kulasekhara's followers, had submitted to the Sihalas, but under Kulasekhara's influence had again deserted them.

place and cleansed this district so rich in mountain and forest strongholds shall I return." He left the town of Madhurū, 38 put up a stronghold near Maṅgalamkoṭṭa<sup>1</sup> and took up his position there. With mighty forces they fought a great battle 39 with the three brothers of the wife of Topḍamāna: Kallakka- 40 velāra, Mnyayadha-rūyara and Kālinga-rūyara<sup>2</sup>; captured the 41 fortress, slew many Damiḷas and after later on taking Sivali- 42 pūttūr also the highly-famed ones<sup>3</sup> took up a position there. 43 Thereupon the hostile Monarch Kulasekhara gathered together the troops standing in Tiriyavely<sup>4</sup>, sent also to the two brothers 44 of his mother a message and took the troops in Tenkōugu and Vajakoṇgu<sup>5</sup> and after the great general had brought 45 this whole army together, he gave the order to halt at the fortress called Sāntaneri. Now Laṅkāpura and the general 46 Jagadvijaya immediately set forth on the way to take this strong- 47 hold. To bar the way to the enemy Kulasekhara versed in the 48 right-expedients, had the great tank pierced. When the hero 49 Laṅkāpura heard tidings of this he said: "When one goes forth to fight a decisive battle with the foe the sight of a pierced 48 tank on the way is not good." So the mighty one immediately had it dammed up again. Thereupon he advanced with great 49 forces and courage against yonder strong fortress, fought a bitter fight, broke quickly into it, slew him called Kallakka- 50 velāra and many other Damiḷas and captured numbers of horses 51 of the Damiḷas. Then they pressed forward into the two vil- 51 lages belonging to Topḍamāna, called Tirimalakke and Kattal, 52 burned down the village called Tirimalakke so that nought

<sup>1</sup> Of course the same as the fortress Maṅgalama mentioned in v. 84, and which also occurs in 76. 297.

<sup>2</sup> For the two last names cf. 76. 146 and 76. 174 ff. The first occurs again 77. 50.

<sup>3</sup> Instead of the sing. (*Laṅkāpura* v. 36 c) the new sentence (from v. 39 a b) has the plur. What is meant are Laṅkāpura and his generals. Sīvalipūttūr is the present Srivillipatur (cf. also W.) in the Tinnevelly District not far from the borders of Travancore.

<sup>4</sup> See 76. 143 and 288 and notes.

<sup>5</sup> See 76. 288.

but its name remained, because it was there that the Pañju  
 53 king Parakkama had been murdered<sup>1</sup>. Then he set forth from  
 there and after reaching the village Colakulantaka the highly-  
 54 famed one tarried there for some time<sup>2</sup>. King Kulasekhara  
 now took the two brothers of his mother, also the troops of  
 55 the twain and their many horses, further Akalañka-nūlālvāra,  
 56 and Pallava-rāyara, Malayappa-rāyara, Kāñḍamba-rāyara and  
 Kiceūrattorayara who was endowed with great power and  
 courage, and with all these Coḷa officers and their numerons  
 57 army as also with Kalavāṇḍiya-nūlālvāra and his troops and  
 58 with Puñkona-nūlālvāra<sup>3</sup> at the head of his army, the mighty  
 one came himself to the place called Palañkotṭa and ordered  
 59 his great army to Pundunāḍukottāna and the place called  
 Uriyeri<sup>4</sup>, this time firmly determined on the vanquishing of  
 60 the foe. Thereupon Laikāpura and the general Jagadvijaya  
 61 went forth from the village of Colakulantaka to battle. They  
 so planned it that the hostile army which had occupied the two  
 62 great fortresses<sup>5</sup>, were disinclined for giving battle in the open  
 field, had then a great entrenchment made at the village of  
 Uriyeri above the tank and took up a position there during  
 63 the night. But the hostile army which had occupied the two  
 fortresses, dispersed and went thither where the Ruler Ku-

<sup>1</sup> W.'s happy suggestion of *ettha hato* is certainly correct. I may remark that all the MSS. have *ethā gato*; *ethāgato* as read by the Col. Ed. occurs nowhere.

<sup>2</sup> There is a change again in number, this time from the plur. (*paññāthā*) in v. 51 c to the sing. (*nīśidhāttha*) in 53 c.

<sup>3</sup> For Akalañka see 77. 17, for Malayappa 77. 18, for Kalavāṇḍiya 76. 141 and Puñkona 76. 139. All these names occur again later. The same with Pallava and Kāñḍamba who have so far not been mentioned.

<sup>4</sup> The locatives *Pundunāḍukottāne* and *Uriyerikaye thāne* are directly dependent on *niyojeti*. The skr. *niyojyati* is also used with the locative of that to which anyone is determined or commanded. In 72. 207 we have the same as in this passage *Kyānagāne niyojetvā*. Cf. further 77. 82. It is therefore quite unnecessary to change *thāne* into *thātuṇi* as is done by the Col. Ed. — Palañkotṭa (see also W.) is the present Palam-kotta in the Tinnevelly District.

<sup>5</sup> That is *Pundunāḍukottāna* and *Uriyeri*.

lasekhara was standing. Now Lañkāpura and the general 64 Jagadvijaya well discriminating between favorable and unfavorable places, marched to Pulañkoṭṭa. The heroes fought 65 a terrible battle with the hostile sovereign, slew many warriors captured many steeds, put the Monarch Kulasekhara at once 66 to flight and took Palañkoṭṭa. Then they set forth from there, came into the domain of him called Tuvarāñdhiputivelūra and 67 received the horses and elephants supplied by him<sup>1</sup>. But when 68 they heard; the Monarch Kulasekhara has come to Mālhurū<sup>2</sup>, they in order to drive him from this place, hereupon marched 69 to Adharat̄teri, subdued there Nigaya-rāyara and showed him many marks of favour. Now when they again set forth from 70 this place the Ruler Kulasekhara smitten with fear, betook himself to the Coḷa country. Hereupon Lañkāpura charged 71 the dignitary by name Jagadvijaya, to take up a position at the place called Pūttanallīrū. He himself went at the head 72 of his troops to Tirikkāñnoppiera. But King Kulasekhara had meanwhile by various entreaties won over the Coḷa King to 73 his side and at the command of this king he took the army and the many horses of him called Pallava-rāyara, also 74 him called Innadapadu together with Tewāmāna, the rāyara called Rājarājakalappa, further Kañgakonālakulappa-rāyara, as 75 well as the Nakārānibilupa-rāyara, the hero Niccavindavāñavava- 76 rāyara, Narasihaqudmara and Sekirapadma-rāyara, Rūjinda- 77 bralumamahārāja and Mālhava-rāyara . . . as also Coñakonūra, Janāhrahmamahārāja and Coñutirikka-rāyara -- these troop 78 leaders in Uccañkuṭṭha he took with him, with these he took also 79 Niyarūya and Kappiñcimpekula, further Mālhava-rāyara and Kapduveṭṭi, further Koñgamañgala-nāḍāñvāra, Akalañka-nāḍāñ- 80 vāra and Kañlamba-rāyara, as also Kiñamañgala-nāḍāñvārā, Visālamutta-rāyara<sup>3</sup> and their many horses and sent them to 81

<sup>1</sup> The context shows that Tuvarāñdhiputivelāra (for whom see 76. 188, 315) had submitted voluntarily.

<sup>2</sup> The fact that Kulasekhara can dare to attack Mālhurū which was formerly (see v. 38) in Lañkāpura's hands, shows that so far he had suffered no overwhelming defeat. He even succeeds in enlisting the Coḷas in his cause.

<sup>3</sup> Of the numerous names mentioned here six occur earlier: Pallava

82 Tondī and Pāsa<sup>1</sup>. When Lañkāpura heard of the matter he was minded to so destroy them that only their name should remain. The hero ordered the general Jagadvijaya by name to Madhurā, he himself then set forth from Tirikkānappera 83 and marched to the town of Kilenilaya situated on the borders of Madhurā. Now the mighty Coḷa army opened the great 84 combat. For a distance of four gāvutas<sup>2</sup> he filled the road with corpses, he also slew many soldiers who had flung themselves into the sea and dyed the water of the ocean ruddy with the blood of the foe<sup>3</sup>. He took (as booty) many horses 85 and captured many Damiṭas alive — Rūjindabrahmamahārāja and Nandipadmara<sup>4</sup>, Narasiha padinara and Coļakonāra — and again 86 with great forces, burned to the ground Vaḍamaṭamekkuyili, 87 Mayamekkuyili and Muṇeakkuyili. Then having laid waste by 88 fire a strip of the Coḷa country seven gāvutas in extent<sup>5</sup> and 89 thus quelled the Coḷas, he returned thence, and when he came to the village called Velañkuṇḍi under the dominion of Nigaladha-rāyara<sup>6</sup>, he sent to him the message to appear 90 before him. But as Nigaladha-rāyara was at that time under the sovereignty of King Kulasekhara he took the Monarch 91 Kulasekhara, as well as Silameghara, and Akalañku-nāñjālvāra and Kaḍalamba-rāyara, Malayappa-rāyara and Visālamutta-

77.55, Tondamāna 76.137, Niccavuodavāyavu 76.144, Coļakonāra 76.145, Akulañka 77.17, Kaṇḍambā 77.55. Cf. the accompanying notes. The name Mādhūva-rāyara is twice mentioned. Three occur later: Narasiha padinara 77.86, Rūjindabrahma 77.86, and Visālamutta 77.91. Cf. with Kuṅgakonḍakalappa, Kaṅgakonḍapperayara 76.180 note; with Kīlāmañgulu-nāñjālvāra, the name of the district Kīlāmañgala in 76.209; and with Kuṇḍuveṭṭi the name of Narasiha's capital Kapiluveṭṭi in 47.7.

<sup>1</sup> P. *Tondipāsam*. Cf. note to 76.236.

<sup>2</sup> About 8 miles.

<sup>3</sup> The description is extraordinary. From what has gone before the battle must have taken place in the neighbourhood of Madhurā, therefore not near the sea.

<sup>4</sup> Nandipadmara is not mentioned in the list given in v. 73 ff.

<sup>5</sup> About 14 miles.

<sup>6</sup> For Nigaladha cf. 76.138, 77.16 f.

rāyara, Kālavaṇḍi-nāḍālvāra and the troops of Tiripaveli, and 92 Puṇikōḍa-nāḍālvāra, and with mighty forces he came to Ponaamarāvati<sup>1</sup> to fight a decisive battle. When Laṅkāpura 93 received tidings of these events he set forth with great forces from Velaṅkuḍi to vanquish the hostile ruler. The hostile 94 army which advancing from five sides<sup>2</sup>, began the battle he shattered in a moment with fearsome courage, slew Damiṭas 95 thousands in number, took (as booty) many horses and put the Ruler Kulasekhara to flight. Nigāḍha-rāyara thereupon sent 96 in his terror the message: "Thon shalt have the whole of my treasures and my many horses, and shalt pardon my of- 97 fenee, but thou must by no means prepare my destruction<sup>3</sup>." When Laṅkāpura heard that he sent a return message: "Thy 98 treasures and thy horses are of no use to me, fear not and 99 come in person and present thyself". When he heard that, he came to seek out Laṅkāpura. When the latter saw him 100 he showed him favour, assigned him the province and gave him abundant money with which to rebuild his palace which had been burned down. Then the far-famed one started forth, 101 came to Niyama and freed the whole province from the briars (of the enemy). He introduced into the country everywhere 102 for trade kāhāpāyas which were stamped with the name of the Ruler Parakkama. To Prince Virapāṇu he made over 103

<sup>1</sup> According to 77. 20 ff., Laṅkāpura had already fought with Nigāḍha for Ponaamarāvati. In the list enumerated in v. 73 ff. the following of Nigāḍha's allies are not mentioned: Silāmeghra (cf. note to 76. 99), Mahiyappa (77. 18, 55), Kālavaṇḍi (76. 141) and Puṇikōḍa (76. 139). For Tiripaveli see 76. 143. — Vv. 84—92 form in the original one sentence. The subject however, changes. The subject belonging to all the gerunds in 84-89 (up to *pahinitrūṇa*) is *Laṅkāpura*, from v. 90 onwards it is *so* (*Niyālaiha-rāyaro*). We must therefore again assume that the preceding gerunds are treated as locative absolutes (Cūlava. ed. I. Introd., p. XVI) S. and B. try to overcome the difficulty by emendation, they change *pahinitrūṇa* (v. 89 c) into *pahinittha*.

<sup>2</sup> W. refers āyamma to the subject (*Laṅkāpura*) *bhimarikkamo* but it is really subordinate to *parallita* in *parattitamahāharayatattuseuam*.

<sup>3</sup> The text is corrupt. I have tried to help matters by a conjectural rendering (*vināśanāpi*) which seems to me not quite so far-fetched as the emendations of the Col. Ed.

the government and sent with speed to Sihala the many horses, men and elephants captured from the Cola country and from the Pañju land<sup>1</sup>.

104 Now King Parakkamabāhu that lion among royal princes, founded in memory of the conquest of the Pañju country the 105 splendid village Pañjuvijaya by name, which prospered through all time. But to the Brahmans he whose joy was in giving, gave an alms.

106 Parakkamabāhu, the first in the race of rulers of the earth, whose mind was endowed with discrimination between what was statesmanlike and what was unstatesmanlike, who was an abode of every virtue, gifted with the gracious beauty of the god of love ruled a long time alone over the ocean-bounded earth.

Here ends the seventy-seventh chapter, called "The Conquest of the Pañju Kingdom", in the *Mahāvamsa*, compiled for the serene joy and emotion of the pious.

<sup>1</sup> The narrative ends abruptly. One is faced by a series of questions which remain unanswered. What becomes of Kulasekhara? What of the great coalition of South Indian princes Colas and Pañjas described in v. 72 of whom at the most only a few individuals were conquered? Does Virapayu succeed in maintaining his power? Since Kulasekhara did not fall in battle he will scarcely have left his rival in peace. What is Laṅkāpura's after fate? It is curious that his return to Ceylon is never mentioned and that there is no word of the distinctions bestowed on him by Parakkamabāhu. It is pretty clear that the chronicler has concealed the failure which overtook the expedition after its initial success. The ideal figure of Parakkama which he has in mind, must not be dimmed by association with any misfortune. South Indian inscriptions relate that Laṅkāpura was defeated and that his head with those of his officers was nailed to the gates of Malhurā. In the 4th year of Kulottunga Coja III (1181-2) Virapayu was driven out and the Sinhalese troops finally defeated. H. W. CODRINGTON, HC., p. 62. See also note to 76. 60.

## CHAPTER LXXVIII

## THE BUILDING OF VIHĀRAS

Now after the sovereign of Laṅkā, Parakkamabāhu who 1 had received consecration as king, who was experienced in statecraft, had thns made peaceful the land of Laṅkā, he 2 cherished, full of zeal, the wish to further the advancement of the Order of the Master for which he had striven when attaining the royal dignity, since it was a most excellent merit. Since he perceived that the few loyal bhikkhus — apart 3 from the maintenance of wives and children and so forth by the community in the villages belonging to the community, in 4 which they saw their sole duty, beyond which there was none — did not wish to have ceremonies in common, nor even to see one another<sup>1</sup>, he desired even before the purification of 5

<sup>1</sup> The sentence is difficult. I think the meaning is this that the attitude of the few loyal bhikkhus (*susile keci bhikkhavo*) who would not hear of intercourse and of common action with the others, shows the evil conditions existing in the Saṅgha. The *dussilā bhikkhavo* were in the majority, the *susilā* were isolated. As regards the construction of the sentence, I believe that *puttadārādiposanam* is governed by *thapetrā* (4 a) and *ekukammādi* *dassitum pi* by *nākaūkhante*. By *saṅghagāma* are meant the villages in which the men were active as ārāmikā. Wives and children of the ārāmikū were supported by the monastery and this was the only duty from which the *susilā bhikkhuro* did not absolve themselves and the one which brought them into contact with the others. W's version according to which the priests had only thought of the feeding of their (former) wives and children I consider impossible. The text reads: *saṅghassa puttadārādiposanam*. But one cannot say that the Saṅgha has children and wives. Only the individual bhikkhn has these. Thus the gen. *saṅghassa* does not belong to *puttadārādi* but to *posanam*. Note too the *ādi*. This refers to sick

the Order<sup>1</sup>, for the purpose of furthering the Order of the Victor, to achieve unity<sup>2</sup> among the bhikkhus of the three fraternities. Even as the Ruler of men Dhammāsoka (with) Moggaliputtatissa, so he entrusted the Grand thera Mahākassapa by name, with the task — an experienced man who knew the Tipiṭaka and was exceedingly well versed in the Vinaya, a light of the race of theras, conciliatory, long since consecrated. He made the thera Nāgapāla in Anurādhapura together with his pupils and the bhikkhus in the province of Sapara<sup>3</sup> come to Pulathinagara, further together with the thera Moggallāna, the thera Nāgindapalliya and all the other bhikkhus in the province of the Yuvarāja<sup>4</sup>, as well as those belonging to the three fraternities in Rohaya after he had placed at their head the distinguished thera Nandu who dwelt

people and those incapable of work who must of course also be looked after in the *sanghagāma* of the monastery.

<sup>1</sup> P. *ādo* is used as a preposition and governs the following accusative.

<sup>2</sup> An account of the church reforms of Parakkamabāhu is found already in 73. 12-22. That this should be followed by a second detailed account is probably due to the fact that the compiler of the Cūlavimśa had two different sources both of which he employed for his narrative. In a similar way the building activities of the king are dealt with twice over (in 73. 23 ff. and 78. 28 ff.). As regards the reform of the Order I have already referred in the note to 73. 22 to the Gal-vihāra inscription of Parakkama and to certain similarities in form between it and the account of the Cūlavimśa. A further similarity occurs in the second narrative (78. 2 ff.). The name of the Grand thera Mahākassapa is mentioned as spokesman in the negotiations in which capacity he is also mentioned in the inscription. Then too in both sources a parallel is drawn between King Dhammāsoka and the head of the Third Council, Moggallāna (Mhv. 5. 228 ff.) on the one hand, and Parakkamabāhu and Mahākassapa on the other. According to the inscription, Mahākassapa was an inmate of the Udumbaragiri-vihāra, that is Dimbulīgala, now Gunner's Quoin Hill on the right bank of the Mahaveliganga about 5 miles SSE. of Mahagantota near Polonnaruwa. Cf. WICKREMASINGHE, EZ. II. 184 ff.; the same, Catal. of Sinhalese MSS. in the Brit. Museum, p. XV.

<sup>3</sup> Apparently the present province of Sabaragamuva.

<sup>4</sup> That is in Dakkhinadesa. The bhikkhus mentioned in vv. 8-10 are not named in the inscription.

in the Selantara monastery. Hereupon the Ruler sent a summons 11 to the bhikkhus dwelling in the Mahāvihāra for (bringing about) the mutual concord.

Since the shamelessness had passed all bounds and the 12 schism had lasted a long time, many bhikkhus would hear nothing of conciliation. Many began departing to foreign lands, 13 others left the Order, some wished for a sitting in the secret court of justice<sup>1</sup>. Hereupon one approached the great (and) 14 exceedingly difficult task; conciliation seemed as difficult as the hurling of the Sinern<sup>2</sup> mountain. But the Ruler, impartial, 15 firm in his resolves and just, encouraged the bhikkhus and with great pains persuaded them to agree. He had the single 16 points in dispute as they arose settled by the bhikkhus among whom Mahākassapa was the oldest. He was himself present 17 as protector of the court together with those lions among teachers who knew the three Piṭakas, and while according to 18 precept he led those bhikkhus capable of being cured to purification, he established harmony among the bhikkhus of the Mahāvihāra. But the undisciplined he excluded from the Order, 19 and that they might not by striving after gain do harm to the Order, he assigned them lucrative positions. After he had 20 thus with great pains purified the Mahāvihāra, he set about bringing the bhikkhus of the Abhayagiri — who since the 21 time of Abhaya<sup>3</sup> had formed a separate group — as well as

<sup>1</sup> I have kept as much as possible to the reading of the MSS. and believe that *hiuvinicchayamandalā* denotes a secret judicial process in contrast to the official *dhammikamitta* of the Order (see note to 89. 57). For the meaning "hidden, concealed" for *hiuva* cf. Mhv. 75, 153 where however, it is combined with a loc., as well as *hiuucuttika*, 47. 3, "leading a solitary, hidden life". The Col. Ed. reads *iechum eke nisajjum pi na riuechayamandale* and W. translates accordingly: "and many wished not even to sit (with their brethren) in the hall of judgement".

<sup>2</sup> Cf. note to 54. 43. One may compare *sinerukkhipanā* with *sakkharākhipana* "the hurling of stones" (as an accomplishment, *sippa*, JaCo. I. 418<sup>30</sup>).

<sup>3</sup> Vaṭṭagāmī Abhaya. The story of the separation of the monks of the Abhayagiri-vihāra from those of the Mahāvihāra is related in Mhv. 33, 95 ff.

the inmates of the Jetavana — who had separated themselves  
 22 from the days of the Ruler of men Maliāsenā<sup>1</sup>, (they) who  
     gave out as Buddha's word the *Vetulla-Piṭaka*<sup>2</sup> and the like  
     which were no words of Buddha and who had turned away  
 23 from religious duties — into concord with the inmates of the  
     Mahāvihāra who were rich in all virtues, even as glass stones  
 24 with jewels. But as they lacked inward virtue as moral  
     discipline and the like, they came even through the influence  
     of the Great community and of the King to no joyful ac-  
 25 ceptance of the Buddha teaching. And while the just King  
     together with people versed in the right method held the  
     trial, he found not a single member of the Order that had  
 26 kept himself unspoiled<sup>3</sup>. He caused many ascetics to be received  
     as sāmāyeras, the undisciplined he dismissed and gave them  
 27 lucrative positions. While thus within a short time achieving  
     purification and unity, he with great pains established again  
     the community as it had been in Buddha's time.  
 28 Every year he brought the Great community to the river  
     bank<sup>4</sup>, made them take up their abode in a garden there  
 29 while he with his dignitaries paid them respect. Then after  
     firmly anchoring ships in the stream he had a charming  
 30 mayūrapa of beautiful proportions erected on them. Then  
     when he had given to the bhikkhus costly robes and all  
     kinds of articles of use, the wise Prince made them hold the  
     ceremony of admission into the Order<sup>5</sup>.

<sup>1</sup> See Mhv. 37. 32 ff.

<sup>2</sup> For the heretical *Vetuttavāda* to which the Dhammaruciaka monks  
     living in the Abhayagiri monastery adhered, see Mhv. 36. 41, 110 ff.  
     and 37. 1 ff.; Nik. s., p. 12. A. M. HOCART, Mem. ASC. I, 1924, p. 15 ff.

<sup>3</sup> P. *pakatatta*, lit. "with the original self (being, character)". In  
     Vin. I. 280<sup>12</sup> the word means "in the original condition, restored, cured";  
     In JāCo. I. 236<sup>23</sup> it has a similar meaning to that in our passage as  
     attribute of *bhikkhu* along with *slava ripassanāya yuttapayutto*.

<sup>4</sup> On the bank of the Mihaveliganga.

<sup>5</sup> Even to-day the monks in Ceylon in order to be quite undisturbed,  
     are fond of performing their rites in a pavilion built on piles in a sheet  
     of water about a stone's throw from the bank.

Now for the bhikkhus increased in this manner to many 31 hundreds the King was desirous of building in goodly fashion large vihāras, suitable for dwelling in. He (therefore) founded 32 the great monastery by name Jetavana<sup>1</sup>, making as it were visible to the eye the beauty of the Jetavana (in Sāvatthī<sup>2</sup>). For the theras dwelling there in the sacred district, firmly persevering in discipline, he built eight costly pāsādas, three storeys high. For the thera named Sāriputta who persevered 34 firmly in discipline, he erected a vast (and) glorious pāsāda with rooms, terraces and chambers. Also nine incomparable, 35 three-storeyed image houses (he built) furnished with all appurtenances<sup>3</sup> and diversely adorned with images. For the 36 seventy-five pariveṇus (he built) as many long pāsādas with charming figures (painted), two storeys high; (further) one 37 hundred and seventy-eight small pāsādas, thirty-four gate-towers and two houses for books; huts, grottoes, halls and many 38 sleeping-houses with ornaments of flowers and creepers and with figures of gods, Brahma and the like. Creating out of 39 brick and stucco an elixir for the eyes<sup>4</sup> (he built) the Tivāṇika house for the Tivāṇika image<sup>5</sup>, shimmering with rows of figures 40

<sup>1</sup> What is meant here is without doubt the group of monastic buildings within the city to the north of the citadel, on the so-called Quadrangle. Cf. above all H. C. P. BELL, Rep. ASC. 1903 (= LXV, 1908), p. 6 ff., as well as A. M. HOCART, Mem. ASC. II, 1926, p. 4 ff.

<sup>2</sup> The monastery was like its namesake in Anorādhapura, called after the celebrated park in Sāvatthī which Anūthapindika presented to the Buddha and the Order. See OLOFSSON, Buddha, p. 166; H. KENN, Manual of Indian Buddhism, p. 28.

<sup>3</sup> For *patiyatta* as substantive in the meaning of "equipment, articles of clothing or of general use", cf. Mhv. 29. 22. The alteration by the Col. Ed. into *sattatiyante* I cannot approve of. The numeral adj. is *nara* in *narāppatīsayamate* — as is proved by all the MSS. — which S and B likewise felt obliged to alter. The Col. Ed. treats the text too arbitrarily. I believe that *patiyatta* here means all the ornaments and garments belonging to a Buddha image with which it is decked out on festive occasions. Cf. note to 38. 64 (towards the end) and to 38. 56.

<sup>4</sup> The beauty of the building acted on the eyes like an elixir (*rasiṇa*). In my edition I have joined the sentence to the preceding. But I think now that it belongs to the following one.

<sup>5</sup> It is difficult to say what is meant by *tivāṇika* in *tivāṇika* and

41 of lions, kinnaras<sup>1</sup>, geese and the like, with many diversely perforated balustrades<sup>2</sup> and with railings. (Further he built) a beautiful round temple wholly of stone for the Tooth Relic<sup>3</sup>, adorned with glorious pillars, staircases and outer walls<sup>4</sup> and  
 42 so forth. (Further the built) three sermon halls, a cetiya<sup>5</sup>,  
 43 eight long cloisters and a refectory of (great) length and breadth, eighty-five fire-houses covered with bricks and one hundred and seventy-eight privies.

*t-patiñā.* Mr. PARANAVITANE, the epigraphist of the ASC (letter of 25.4.28) assumes that the term means the same as *tribhanga*. This is the name given in Indian Iconography to a statue with "three bends", that is in the posture in which Viñu or the Nūgas are often represented. He refers to Selalihinisandesa 68, where there is a mention of Ti-vāñka images in the Kelani-vihāra and believes that this passage in the Mhv. refers to these very statues in Kelaniya. It cannot be a Buddha image which is meant in this case. It seems to me certain that the *tevakkhagara* of our passage refers to a building in Pulaththina-gara and in the Jetavana-vihāra. But cf. note to 85.66. The most likely seems to be the Hoṭa-lāgō, an image house on the Quadrangle with three Buddha figures (cf. Hocant, I. l., p. 5) or that building known as the Thūpūrāma also situated there. The first seems however, to be a work of Nissanka-Malla (80.19 and note), while the other belongs to the time before Parakkamabāhu. The expression *tevaka* remains however in both cases inexplicable.

<sup>1</sup> Mythical beings represented with human bodies and heads of horses. I may remark that W. joins v. 40 to the following as description of the *dāthādhātughara*.

<sup>2</sup> P. *jālakavāṭa*, lit. net-enclosure.

<sup>3</sup> Without doubt the Vaṭa-dā-gō situated on the Quadrangle opposite the Hoṭa-lā-gō. Bell, I. l., p. 21 ff. and Rep. ASC. 1904, p. 5 ff. Hocant, I. l., p. 4. It is a circular building consisting of two concentric terraces. On the upper terrace was a cetiya in which the relic was preserved. In an inscription on the outer stairs Nissanka Malla boasts that he has had the building made. It is however evidently a case of restoration. The outer staircase is indeed of later origin.

<sup>4</sup> I take *bhiti* "outer wall" to mean the railings leading round the terraces.

<sup>5</sup> There is no stūpa in the domain of the Jetavana. One must assume therefore that the terraced tower Sat-mahal-pāsāda on the Quadrangle was built as a cetiya. It could not serve as a dwelling, for it is as massive as a dagoba with nothing but a tunnel-like circular passage in the basement.

After he had thus by cleansing the Order, cleansed the 44 inward impurity of the bhikkhus, in order to cleanse the outward impurity, that one might be able to bathe in great heat he had eight bath-houses of stone erected, named 45 Vaṭṭanāhānakotṭha, Guhānāhānakotṭha, Padumanalānākotṭha, Bhaddanahānakotṭha<sup>1</sup> and so forth, adorned with pillars, 46 staircases and railings. There also the Great king had many walls built. Thus there were in Jetavana in all five hundred 47 and twenty buildings. With the distribution of abundant articles of use, he made the community take up its abode there.

Further the Prince had built there the Ālāhana-pariveṇa<sup>2</sup> 48 which had all the distinguishing marks (belonging to such a building), being not too far away and the like, and which was universally acknowledged as beautiful. There he built for 49 the therā a splendid pāsāda with rooms and terraces, with a choice of various apartments, embellished by turrets, three storeys high. Further forty long pāsādas and as many privies, 50 eight small pāsādas and six gate-towers, thirty-four fire-houses 51 and two larger outer walls, the Subhādā-cetiya and the Rūpavatī-cetiya<sup>3</sup>; besides that a charming image house of five 52 storeys for which — as it was adorned with ornaments of flowers and creepers and with figures of gods and Brahma 53 and embellished with buildings, with turrets, grottoes, apartments

<sup>1</sup> The "round bathing-house", "cave-", "lotus-b.-h." and the "bathing-house of happiness". The temple on the Quadrangle popularly known as the Thūpārāma is not mentioned among the buildings of the Jetavāna, probably because it already belonged to the time before Parakkamabāhu. Hocarr, I. I., p. 5.

<sup>2</sup> H. W. Coomington is certainly right when he says that the description in the Mhv. proceeds from south to north. In chap. 73 the secular buildings in the citadel and its immediate neighbourhood are mentioned. In chap. 78 follow the monastic foundations joining it on the north. The Ālāhana-pariveṇa is therefore probably the group of buildings lying outside of the city which is now popularly but wrongly called the Jetavanārāma.

<sup>3</sup> To the group of buildings which we assume formed the Ālāhana-pariveṇa there belonged in fact several stūpas. The largest of these is popularly known as the Kiri-vihāra. More to south lies the Rankot Dagoba. This has, however, nothing to do with the Ālāhana-pariveṇa,

54 and halls<sup>1</sup> — the name of Lānkātilaka was befitting<sup>2</sup>. In this (temple) he had erected a standing image which was an elixir for the eyes<sup>3</sup>, which had the size of the living Buddha<sup>4</sup>, 55 which (likewise) was called Lānkātilaka. (He) also (built) the twelve-storeyed Uposatha-house which bore the name of Baddhasimāpāsāda, which was furnished with numbers of 56 turrets, with buildings containing apartments and halls and with cells as dwelling-places<sup>5</sup>. To determine the boundary<sup>6</sup>

that is identical with the Ratanāvalī-cetiya built or completed by Nissanka Malla (80, 20). The Mhv. expressly states that this King adorned it with a *surappalathūpikā*, "with a golden pointed cone". The name Rankot means "golden point".

<sup>1</sup> The buildings form the immediate surroundings of the temple enriching its beauty.

<sup>2</sup> The name still sticks to the image house of the Ājāhana group. It is proved besides by an inscription on the building itself in which Parakkamabāhu is named as its builder. See H. C. P. Bell, Rep. ASC. 1910–11 (= X. 1914), p. 30 ff. Lately an exact description of the plan of the building has been given by A. M. ILLOCART, Mem. ASC. II, 1926, p. 11 ff. This plan agrees on the whole with that of the Thīspūrāma (see above note to v. 4b). As regards the name of the temple, *tilaka* means "a patch of coloured stuff worn on the forehead as ornament... or as emblem of a sect" (BR); at the end of a compound it means "ornament of something", here therefore "ornament of the Island of Lānkā". — The construction of the sentence is as follows: *yathā* in v. 53 a stands for the loc. *yañhi* (*pañmighe*) and to this then belong the locatives *rūpiñi* and *sobhite* in v. 52.

<sup>3</sup> See above note to v. 39.

<sup>4</sup> According to Bell's calculation (l. l., p. 36) the statue in the Lānkātilaka temple when intact, measured 41 ft. in height (roughly 12.5 m.).

<sup>5</sup> It is generally supposed that the remains of this building are to be found in the so-called "priory" situated in the domain of Ājāhanapariveṣa and remarkable for its quantity of small and narrow cells (*pañjurageha* "cage"!). Cf. H. C. P. Bell, Rep. ASC. 1911–12 (= III. 1915), p. 81 ff.

<sup>6</sup> P. *buddhīpetum takim sīmām*. By *sīmā* is meant the boundary line enclosing the monastic buildings within which alone ecclesiastical acts could legally be performed. The regulations for establishing such a *sīmā* are to be found in the Vinaya, Mahāvagga 2, 6 ff. (= I. 106 ff.). Cf. with our passage Mhv. 15. 188–194, where it is related of King

there the King betook himself, adorned with all his ornaments, with the dignitaries and the ladies of the court, with a vast army and with his train in the splendour of the King of the gods, to the great vihāra. At the invitation of the Great community of whom Mahūkassapa was the oldest, the Monarch — with the tune of songs of praise, with the sound of musical instruments and the noise of the shouts of greeting filling the four regions of the heavens, surrounded by many people bearing golden and other jars and baskets and many banners and umbrellas — took with great solemnity the golden plough before which was harnessed the elephant of state and went forth ploughing the furrow<sup>1</sup>. To remove<sup>2</sup> all scruples regarding landmarks formerly drawn at this spot, the bhikkhu community took up a position at different points, after previously by a solemn act, bound to bring full success, removing in due order the ancient landmarks<sup>3</sup> and made known to the King the landmarks along the furrow (which he ploughed). The King drew three partial boundaries and a main boundary. The boundary stones set up in the eight regions of the heavens, east and so forth, were distant (measured) with a staff five cubits in length<sup>4</sup> from the Lankātilaka temple forty-

Devānampiyatissa how he draws in person the sīmā of the Mahāvihāra, just as Parakkamabāhu that of the Alāhana-pariveya. The two descriptions have a considerable resemblance to each other even in the wording (cf. 78. 56-7 with 15. 189; 78. 58 with App. B, v. 6 of my edition of the old Mahāvaṇsa). This may be due either to the stereotyped character of all these descriptions or to Dhūmukitti's conscious borrowing from the older work.

<sup>1</sup> Cf. mahāchāyamhi rattente . . . kasanto bhūmipo agū with mahatū chanapūjīya kasanto bhūmipo agā in Mhv. App. B. (to 15. 191), v. 7 c d. This comparison shows that mahāchāyamhi not muhūjanamhi, is the right reading.

<sup>2</sup> It was strictly forbidden to encroach on an existing boundary by a new sīmā. The old boundary had first to be removed by a kamma-rācā (v. 62 d), that is a solemn act of the community. Cf. note to 37. 56.

<sup>3</sup> I think that the two lines of v. 62 should be reversed.

<sup>4</sup> P. pañcahatthīyā yuttīhiyā. For hattha see note to 37. 172. The standard of measurement had thus a length of ( $5 \times 18$  in.) roughly

four, forty-nine, thirty-eight, thirty-six, thirty-five, fifty-seven, 65 forty-five, sixty-six staves respectively. The boundary stone set up in the southern region of the heavens was distant from 66 the Gopāla rock<sup>1</sup> fifty-eight staves<sup>2</sup>, and the boundary stone that was set up in the northern region of the heavens, was 67 fifty staves from the Vijjādhara cave<sup>3</sup>. These stones served for the marking of the main boundary. At the Baddhasīmā-pāsāda there was a fixed boundary of thirty-five staves in 68 length and breadth<sup>4</sup>. At the sacred space called Khaṇḍasīmā<sup>5</sup> the boundary was fixed at fifteen staves in length and six 69 staves in breadth<sup>6</sup>, and at the pāsāda of the thera the fixed boundary was eighteen cubits in length and twenty cubits in 70 breadth<sup>7</sup>. This vihāra the King dedicated to the bhikkhus along with the (necessary) articles of use.

In the same way the Ruler of men had the foundations

<sup>1</sup>  $\frac{1}{2}$  ft. (= 2.55 m). The distances were thus successively 330, 367 $\frac{1}{2}$ , 285, 270, 202 $\frac{1}{2}$ , 427 $\frac{1}{2}$ , 387 $\frac{1}{2}$ , 495 ft. Cf. for this A. M. HOCART, Mem. ASC. II, 1926, p. 5-7. By "main boundary" (*mahāstīmā*) is meant that enclosing the whole of the buildings belonging to the Ālāhana-pariveya. Inside this there were according to 67c to 69, three smaller sections which were marked off by "sub-boundaries" or "part-boundaries" (*khaṇḍasīmā*). This distinction corresponds to the description of the fixing of the boundary of the Mahāvihāra Mhv. 15, 193 which speaks of *nimittāni* "boundary marks" pure and simple and *sīmantaranimittāni* "inner boundary marks".

<sup>2</sup> This is probably the rock lying between the Badilhasīmā-pāsāda and the Rankot stūpa. According to the popular idea the chasm served as an abode for those bhikkhus who wished to give themselves up to meditation.

<sup>3</sup> Therefore 435 ft.

<sup>4</sup> That is 375 ft. from what is now called the Gal-vehera. Cf. below note to v. 73.

<sup>5</sup> Therefore 263 $\frac{1}{2}$  ft. > 262 $\frac{1}{2}$  ft.

<sup>6</sup> Just as the main building took its name from the fixing of the main boundary (*baddhā stīmā*) so one of the sub-sections from that of the sub- or part-boundary.

<sup>7</sup> Therefore 112 $\frac{1}{2}$  ft. > 45 ft.

<sup>7</sup> Thus with the cubit (*hattha*) calculated at 18 in. only about 27 ft. > about 30 ft.

laid of the Pacchimārāma<sup>1</sup>. Here in the pariveṇas, which were twenty-two in number (there were) just as many two-storeyed long pāsādas and twenty fire-houses, forty-one two-storeyed small pāsādas as well as thirty-five privies and two cloisters; one sermon hall and ten gate-buildings. He dedicated this vihāra along with the (necessary) articles of use also to the bhikkhus.

Likewise the Ruler of men had the Uttarārāma<sup>2</sup> built. By breaking down the rock not far from the Great thūpa he bringing into play every kind of skilled work, had three grottoes made by expert craftsmen, namely the Vijaḍhara grotto, the cave with the image in sitting posture and the grotto with the recumbent image.

The Ruler also had the Mahāthūpa<sup>3</sup> erected which bore the name of the Damiṭathūpa because it had been built by

<sup>1</sup> The "West Monastery". HOCArt (Mem. ASC. II, p. 6) supposes this building to be the unexcavated ruins adjoining the remains of the Alālumā-pariveṇa on the west.

<sup>2</sup> There can be no doubt that what is meant is the so-called Gal-vehera. The front of a rock rising about 30 ft. above the surrounding region is polished. It stretches from SW. to NE. gradually sloping away on either side. The rock is about 16 chains (roughly 320 m.) distant from the Great Thūpa situated further north. Hewn out of the rock wall just about its centre, is a grotto, 26 ft. wide, 12 ft. 9 in. deep and 9 ft. 9 in. in height. The massive rock above the cave is still some 12 to 13 ft. thick. This rock ceiling is supported on two pillars on the front side of the cave. In the background of the cave there is an image of the Buddha sitting on a throne. This cave is the Vijaḍhara-guha of our passage. To the left of it from the spectator's point of view, there is the figure of a sitting Buddha 15 ft. high, hewn out of the solid rock. To the right, also hewn out of the solid rock, there is a colossal figure of a recumbent Buddha about 49 ft. long, at its head the upright figure of Ānanda grieving over his dying master. It is probable that both the statues of the sitting and of the recumbent Buddha were originally contained in a grotto or niche made of rock and brickwork. These were the *nissinapatiñālēna* and the *nipanna-patiñāgukha*. These figures now stand uncovered in the open air. For the whole matter cf. H. C. P. Bell, Rep. ASC. 1907 (= V. 1911), p. 7 ff.

<sup>3</sup> The "Great stūpa" evidently borrowed its name from the Mahā-thūpa (Ruvanveli Dagoba) in Anurādhapura. In its present state it is

77 Damilas who had been brought hither after the conquest of the Papilu kingdom. It had a circumference of one thousand three hundred cubits<sup>1</sup> and was the largest of all thūpas, like to  
 78 a second Kelāsa<sup>2</sup>, and (built) without the miraculous power of arahants and without the miraculous power of the gods, alone by kingly miraculons power.

79 Also he had built in the suburb called Rājavesibhujaṅga the Isipatana-vihāra<sup>3</sup> which was a delight for the ascetics.  
 80 There (there was) one relic shrine and three three-storeyed image houses with costly images and resplendent with brightly  
 81 coloured painting, further a two-storeyed pāsāda whose ornaments called forth delight, two long pāsādas and four gate-  
 82 buildings, eight small pāsādas, a sermon house, a cloister as  
 83 well as eight fire-houses and six privies, a fine bathing-house wholly of stone, a boundary wall and a garden which belonged to the bhikkhn community.

84 Furthermore in the suburb of Sīhapura the Ruler (gifted)  
 85 with a lion's courage had the Kusinārā-vihāra erected. There (there was) a relic shrine, three image houses of three storeys,  
 86 six long pāsādas, a sermon hall, a cloister, sixteen small pāsādas, three gate-buildings, eleven privies and six fire-houses.  
 87 In the suburb called Vijita King Parakkamabāhu also

a great heap of ruins overgrown with jungle, looking like a natural hill over which run the paths of the wild elephant. The name of Damilathūpa has been preserved to the present day in the name Demalāmāhasayē which is however, erroneously given to another building (see note to v. 87).

<sup>1</sup> P. *ratana* = *hattha* = roughly 18 inches (according to FERET, JRAS. 1912, p. 237). The circumference was therefore roughly 1950 ft. The circumference of the Mahāthūpa in Anurādhapura is 929 ft. (PANKH, Ancient Ceylon, p. 286, 809), that of the Abhayagiri 1115 ft.

<sup>2</sup> See note to 68. 41.

<sup>3</sup> For the three suburbs and their monasteries cf. the earlier account in 73. 151-5. It does not quite agree with ours. If we follow it, the monasteries would be distributed thus: Rājavesibhujaṅga: Velluvana—Rājakulantaka (= Sīhapura): Isipatana—Vijita; Kusinārā, so far as importance can be attached to the order in which they are given.

built the Veluvana-vihāra<sup>1</sup>. Therein (there were) three three-storeyed image houses with beautiful images, gleaming with brightly coloured paintings, a thūpa and a cloister, a two-storeyed pāsāda, four gate-buildings, four long pāsālas and eight small pāsādas, one refectory and one sermon hall, further seven bre-houses and twelve privies. Gāvuta on gāvuta<sup>2</sup> (along the road) the Ruler of men had vihāras<sup>3</sup> erected, furnished with charming image temples, with gate-buildings, outer walls and sermon halls. For such bhikkhus as loved solitude and had taken upon them the whole of the duties of the ascetic, he had the Kapila-vihāra built as a good abode. There (there was) a costly two-storeyed pāsāda, four long cloisters and four long two-storeyed pāsādas, further a dwelling-house of brick with diverse coloured painting and adorned with turrets, built in honour of the sage Kapila, four small pāsālas and three privies. Also these vihāras he dedicated along with the (necessary) articles of use to the bhikkhus.

Now in order to rebuild the vihāras in Anurādhapura formerly destroyed by the Damilas and which many kings had not restored because it was so difficult, he sent an official and completed the three thūpas aforetime destroyed by the Damilas, the Ratauvāluka-thūpa<sup>4</sup> one hundred and twenty

<sup>1</sup> Some distance to the north of the Great thūpa there lies an image temple similar in plan to the Thūpārāmu and the Latākūtilaka, famous for the fresco paintings on its inner walls. I was told there that the priests frequently called this temple the Veluvana. If one could trust this tradition we should have a clue to the position of the Vijita suburb. See however, A. M. HOCART's objections, Mem. ASC. II. 1926, p. 6. He calls the structure "the Northern Temple". The popular name of the building is Demalambaseya which however originally must have belonged to the Mahāthūpa or Damilathūpa. I am also inclined to regard the Potgul-vihāra situated to the south of the city, as one of the suburb monasteries of Pulathinagara. According to an inscription discovered there (WIGREMASINGHE, EZ. II. 238 ff.) it was originally built by Parakkamabāhu, and it would be curious if such an important structure were not to be mentioned at all in the Mbrs. Cf. on the subject H. C. P. Bell, Rep. ASC. 1906 = XX. 1910, p. 14 ff.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. for this 73. 154 f. and note.

<sup>3</sup> Lit.: Gāvula-vihāras.

<sup>4</sup> = Mahāthūpa. Cf. note to 76. 104. There are four thūpas mention-

98 cubits high, the Jetavana-thūpa one hundred and forty cubits high, the Abhayagiri-thūpa one hundred and sixty cubits high,  
 99 as well as the great Maricavatī-thūpa<sup>1</sup> eighty cubits high. These  
 100 were (all) overgrown with great trees, bears and panthers  
 dwelt there and the ground of the jungle scarce suffered a  
 101 foothold by reason of the heaps of bricks and earth. After  
 having the forest hewn down and (the thūpas) built in the  
 proper fashion, and faced with stucco, he also cleared the  
 courtyard of the cetiya.

102 The Lohapāśāda destroyed by the Cojas — which measured  
 in every direction one hundred cubits<sup>2</sup>, one hundred in length  
 and breadth<sup>3</sup> and as much in height, which was adorned with  
 103 many hundreds of apartments, with fine turrets and with rows  
 of cells<sup>4</sup> and which had several storeys, whose embellishment  
 104 called forth admiration — the Ruler of men restored by raising  
 105 again its thousand and six hundred pillars<sup>5</sup>. Sixty large  
 pāśādas (like) the one named Sēpanūjupphā, as also the  
 106 destroyed pāśāda called Mahindasenu he had renewed, also  
 boundary walls and numbers of pariveyas, and after erecting  
 a house for alms he celebrated a great festival for the offering  
 107 of alms. In the ancient pariveyas, the Thūpārūna and others,  
 he saw to the restoration of whatever was decayed or had

ed in the text, not three, and it looks as if the Maricavatī had been added later.

<sup>1</sup> Taking the four stūpas in the order of their size (cf. above note to v. 77) we have for the Abhayagiri 240 ft., for the Jetavana 210 ft., for the Mūhāthūpa 180 ft. and for the Maricavatī 120 ft. According to SCHNEIDER, Architectural Remains of Anurādhapura, p. 52, 47, 27 in his time the height of the three first thūpas lying in ruins was: 1) Abhayagiri (wrongly called Jetavana by Sm.) 215 ft., 2) Jetavana (by Sm. Abhayagiri) 232 ft., 3) Ruvaveli (= Mūhāthūpa) 198 ft. The Maricavatī-thūpa measured then (p. 20) over 80 ft. It is now restored.

<sup>2</sup> = 150 ft. The surface area of the Lohapāśāda is in reality rather more than  $231 \times 232$  ft. as is proved by the pillars still standing in the basement. P. M. BARROWS, The Buried Cities of Ceylon, p. 29.

<sup>3</sup> So I understand *hathasatārukām* in contrast to *accata tattalām*.

<sup>4</sup> P. *sīhapāñjara* "lion's cage". The cells of the Bañilhasimā-pāśāda are also called *pañjara* in v. 55.

<sup>5</sup> That is in fact the number of the foundation pillars still standing.

fallen in. On the Cetiyagiri<sup>1</sup> he had sixty-four thūpas rebuilt 108 and had restored on the old buildings whatever was decayed or had fallen in.

What sensible man when he has thus realised that the 109 pure-minded, even if they live in the greatest happiness, find their supremest bliss in meritorious works — would grow weary in the works of virtue which procure every happiness in the world?

Here ends the seventy-eighth chapter, called «The Building of Vihāras», in the Mahāvamsa, compiled for the sereno joy and emotion of the pious.

<sup>1</sup> The Mihintale mountain. See note to 38. 76.

## Chapter LXXIX

## THE LAYING OUT OF GARDENS AND THE LIKE

1 As the King wished to make all articles (of food) needed by the townspeople easily attainable, he laid out gardens at  
 2 different places. He who was the delight of his subjects, laid out the garden called Nandana which was adorned with  
 3 hundreds of trees bearing fruit and blossom. The King planted coco palms, mango and bread-fruit trees, areca and Palmyra  
 4 palms and other trees, a hundred thousand of each kind and laid out in this way with great pains a large garden destined  
 5 for the community, which because the name was appropriate,  
 6 was known generally as the Lukkhanyyāna. For the bathing  
 7 of the bhikkhus in the hot season he had two charming ponds  
 8 made there beneath hollow rocks. The Monarch also laid out  
 9 the Dipuyyāna<sup>1</sup> resplendent in beauty which was to be glorified  
 10 by his own continual presence during the day; further the  
 11 Mahāmeghavanuyyāna, the Cittalatāvana, the garden called  
 12 Missaka and that called Rājñārāyaya; the garden called Lañkū-  
 tilaka and the garden called Titokṣṇandana, that called Vu-  
 narākara and that called Nayannssava; the garden Manohara  
 by name and the Nimmītapura, the Jāngħābbāra and the  
 13 Puṇṇavaddhāna by name; the garden of the name of Samp-  
 sāraphala and that called Phārusaka, that called Sālipota and  
 14 that called Somanātha; the Thānakoiķaya and the Uttarakuru  
 by name, that called Bharukaccha and that called Pnaceeri;  
 15 the gardens called Kiliķara, Pandavāvana and Rāmīssara, as  
 well as the Sāmisamtosuyyāna, the Cintāmayuyyāna and the  
 Pacuruyyāna.

<sup>1</sup> See above 73. 96 ff. 113 ff.

In Rājaratna the King had ninety-nine new thūpas built 13 in many villages and market towns. On seventy-three relic 14 shrines the Ruler<sup>1</sup> had what was decayed or fallen in repaired and the coating renewed. He restored six thousand 15 one hundred decayed image houses and built three hundred new image houses. He had four hundred and seventy-six 16 divers kinds of images made and ninety-one Bodhi Trees planted. For the community hailing from the four regions of the 17 heavens he had built as an abode for them when coming and going two hundred and thirty dwellings. He erected fifty-six 18 sermon halls, nine cloisters, as well as one hundred and forty-four gate-buildings; one hundred and ninety-two chapels with 19 altars for flowers, sixty-seven outer walls and thirteen temples for the gods<sup>2</sup>. For the bhikkhus coming from foreign lands 20 he had twelve parks (laid out) and two hundred and thirty rest-houses<sup>3</sup> built. Further the Ruler<sup>4</sup> saw to the restoration 21 of twenty-nine sermon halls, thirty-one grottoes and five parks; 22 likewise of fifty-one rest-houses and of seventy-nine decayed temples to the gods.

To put away the sufferings of famine from living creatures 23 that most excellent of men had many tanks and cunus made in divers places. By damming up the Kāragaṅgā by a great 24 barrier between the hills<sup>5</sup> and bringing its mighty flood of waters hither by means of a vast canal called the Ākāśagaṅgī<sup>6</sup>, 25 the Ruler created that king of reservoirs continually filled with water and known by the name of Parakkamasamudda<sup>7</sup> 26

<sup>1</sup> P. *devālaya*, thus sanctuaries for Hindu deities. Numerous temples to Viṣṇu and Śiva were discovered in Polonnaruva.

<sup>2</sup> P. *āgantukasāla* "house (or hut) for strangers".

<sup>3</sup> So I understand *mahutā girisctundā*. W's translation "stone wall" I consider inadmissible, since "giri" is always "mountain" never "stone".

<sup>4</sup> Skr. *Ākāśagaṅgā*, name of the Ganges river which is conceived as flowing in space until it descends to earth.

<sup>5</sup> The Parakkamasamudda mentioned here is different from the reservoir of the same name named in 68. 40. This as we saw (note to the passage) is situated in Dakkhinadesa and was formerly known as Pañḍavāpi the corresponding name for which is now Pandaveva. The Parakkamasamudda of 79. 26, which belongs to the river system of the

in which there was an island resplendent with a superb royal  
 27 palace and which was like to a second ocean. He also built  
 the great tank Parakkamatalākā with a sluice<sup>1</sup> of a hundred  
 28 cubits<sup>2</sup>, and which was made fast<sup>3</sup> by stone construction. Further  
 the Ruler of men built the Mahindatalākā<sup>4</sup> and the Ekāhavāpi

Kāragaṇī, is described in more detail in v. 40 ff. A canal starting from it waters the Mahāmegha park. In 79.7 this park is named immediately after the Dīpuyyāna in Pulaththinagara among the parks laid out by Parakkamabūhū I. A sluice of the reservoir was situated according to v. 45 near the Cāṇḍī gate. This name appears in 73.161 among the gates of Pulaththinagara. One must therefore look for the Parakkamasammula of 79. 26 at Polonnaruva and it is evidently identical with the Topaveva. This was formerly far more extensive than now and was connected with the Dumbutulavēva situated farther south. See on the whole subject A. M. Hoerdt CJSc, G I, p. 161. In 79.57a Parakkamasāgara is mentioned. As it was also connected with the Kāragaṇī, its name is probably merely a variant of Purakkamamsamudda. But in v. 28 c Parakkamasāgara is mentioned along with the Purakkamamsamudda and next to it Parakkamatalākā. It is therefore possible that there were more than two reservoirs called after the King.

<sup>1</sup> That *pāṇī* means the sluice or the outflow from the tank is clear from v. 42, 43. The *mātikā*, the water canals (called *ān* now in Sinh.) start from the *pāṇī*. In Skr. *prāṇī* or *prāṇī* means according to BR. a "drainage canal". The term *pāṇī* is explained by the construction of the sluices of the old tanks in Ceylon, as described by PARKER (Ancient Ceylon, p. 373 ff.). They consist of a walled culvert of about 2–4 ft. in breadth which runs across the whole dam, and is only slightly raised above the base of the dam. To this culvert there leads on the slightly sloping inner side of the dam a square shaft also walled in. This is called in Sinhalese *biso-kotuwa*. The shaft serves for regulating the wooden apparatus (p. *ānūra* "lock", see v. 69 with note) by the raising and dropping of which the culvert is wholly or partially closed or opened and thus the outflow of the water regulated or completely shut off. The shaft with the lock thus divides the culvert into an inflow and an outflow channel.

<sup>2</sup> Therefore about 150 ft. The number can only apply to the length of the culvert.

<sup>3</sup> P. *dugga*. I believe that here we must take the adjective in the meaning of "sure, fast" which has developed out of the meaning "difficult of access". In the same way the substantive *dugga* (originally "a place difficult of access") has become "a strong place", then a "fortress".

<sup>4</sup> A Mahindatalākā was already mentioned in 42.29 as a work of

tank, as well as the Parakkamasāgara whose flood-escape was walled up<sup>1</sup>; also small tanks at different places a thousand four hundred and seventy-one (in number). At three hundred tanks the Monarch had as many stone sluices built. Ancient tanks which had burst he again dammed up in great number: the great tank Muñihūra, the Mahādāragallaka, the tank called Suvaṇṇatissa and that called Dūratissa, the Kūlavīpi tank and the one Brāhmaṇaggūma by name, the tanks called Nālikera-mahāthamba, Rahera, Girītāka and Kumbhilasohilha; the Kūṭavīpi, Padīvīpi and the tank called Kaṭi, the Patnūpā-āḍavāpi and the tank called Mahayūha; the tanks with the names Mahānūmamātthakū, Vajḍhuna, Mahādatta and Kāṇagāma; the tanks Vīra, Valābhassa and Suramāna and the tanks called Pāsāpagāma and Kālavalli; the tank by name Kābhali and that called Aṅgagāma, the Hillapattakakhapūja and the Madngu<sup>2</sup>.

Aggabodhi I. If the Mihindutālaṭīka is identical with this, it can only have been a restoration.

<sup>1</sup> P. *kothabaddhamijjhara*. By *nijjhara* (originally "waterfall") are meant the flood escapes or "waste-weirs" (PANER I. I. p. 374) serving for the overflow of the water when the reservoir is too full. The weir of the Parakkamasāgara is walled in (*kothabaddha*). Note that in Skr. *kosṭhuka* may also mean an encircling wall, and on the other hand that the corresponding Sinhalese word *kotura* (see above v. 27 note) is also used in connection with waterworks. In Mbvs. 68. 16 *Koṭhabaddha* is the name of a causeway on the Jujjuro-maili.

<sup>2</sup> Of the tanks enumerated here six (Valābhassa, Mahādāragalla, Muñhadatta, Kumbhilasobhū, Patnūpāsāya and Kāṇa) are mentioned in 60. 50 as having been restored by Vijayabūhū I. Cf. note to the passage. The Muñihūra is the work of Muñasena (Mbvs. 37. 47), likewise the Suvaṇṇatissa (WICKREMASINGHE, EZ. II. 28, called Rantisa in the Medirigiriya inscr.) and the Mahādāragalla (37. 47); the Dūratissa, one of Saddhātissa (Mbvs. 33. 9); the Girītāka, one of Aggabodhi II. (42. 67; cf. note to 70. 312). Rahera is frequently mentioned now as locality, now as mountain apparently situated not far from Anurādhapura, (Mbvs. 21. 5; 41. 41; 44. 7), also as an irrigation canal (41. 31). Kāṇagāma was a place in Rohana (45. 43) and Hillapattakakhapūja is in 72. 41 the name of a ford of the Mahaveliganga. The remaining names occur only in this passage. Of these Padīvīpi (v. 34) might be identical with the Padaviyū tank in the north-east corner of the North Central Province, 40 miles from Anurādhapura. Cf. WICKREMASINGHE, EZ. I. 202.

38 These decayed tanks the Ruler had restored to their original state and in the same way four hundred and sixty-seven small  
 39 tanks which had been destroyed. In many tanks the King  
     well aware of the right moment, had breaches (a total of)  
     one thousand three hundred and ninety-five (in number)  
 40 dammed up so that they were firm again. The King also  
     had a canal constructed, called Gambhiṇī (the deep), which  
     started at the flood-escape called Mukam of the Parakkama-  
 41 samudra. (He also constructed) the great canal by name  
     Hemavatī which branched off from the same (tank) in  
 42 the direction of the Mahāmeghavām; in the same way  
     the canal known by the name of Nilavālinī which started  
 43 from the sluice called Mūlatīpuppha of the same (tank) and  
     the canal Salavatī by name which branched off from the  
 44 Kilākarnyyāna sluice; further the great canal called Vettavatī  
     which took its start from the sluice known by the name of  
 45 Vettavatī; the canal Tuigahaldā coming from the Dakkhinā  
     sluice and the canal Maṅgalagaṅgā which branched off from  
     the sluice called Maṅgala, as well as the canal called Cimpā  
 46 from the sluice near the Cūḍī gate. (He built) also the  
     Sarasvatī (canal) which branched off from the Toyavāpi and  
     led to Puṇṇavāḍilhanayāpi and the Veṇmatī (canal) from its  
 47 western side; further the (canal) Yamunā which branched off  
     from the Puṇṇavāḍihona tank to the west and the Sarabhī<sup>1</sup>  
 48 (canal) which ran northwards; also the canal called Caṇlabhāgā  
     which flowed through the centre of the Lakkhuyyāna, and the  
     Nammadā (canal) which branched off in the domain of the  
 49 Jetavana-vihāra; further the canal named Nerañjarī which  
     flowed from that tank in a northerly direction, and the  
 50 Bhagirathī, which started from the Anotattu tank; as also  
     the (canal) called Āvattagaṅgā which branched off from there  
     to the south and the Tambapappī (canal) which flowed from  
 51 the Ambāla tank towards the north; the Aciravatī (canal)  
     which ran westwards from the Mahāvālukagaṅgā, fitted for  
 52 many a long year to prevent famine, and the Gomati (canal)  
     which branching off from there flowed eastwards, and the  
 53 Malīpaharani (canal) running northwards; also the canals

flowing eastwards from the Aciravatī: the Sataruddhā, Nibbindā,  
 Dhavalā and Sīdā; further the Kālindī canal which flowed 54  
 in a southerly direction from the southern overflow of the  
 vast Maṇihīra tank; as also the canal called Kāverī which 55  
 flowed from the Giritalāka tank to the Kaddūravajḍhamāna  
 tank, and the Somavatī canal running from the Kaddūra- 56  
 vadīhamāna tank to the Arimaddlavijayaggāma (tank). The 57  
 Monarch also constructed the Godāvarī canal which branched  
 off from the Kāragaṅgā and flowed to the Parakkamasīgara.<sup>1</sup>  
 (Lastly) the Prince had the ruined canal called Jayagaṅgā<sup>2</sup> 58  
 restored. It branched off from the Kālavāpi and flowed to  
 Anurādhapura. Five hundred and thirty-four small canals he 59  
 had constructed and three thousand three hundred which had  
 been destroyed he restored to what they had been before. In 60  
 the province of the Yuvarāja (Dakkhiṇadesa) the discerning  
 Sovereign had numerous works of various kinds constructed  
 at numbers of places. On the site of the house where he was 61

<sup>1</sup> The names mentioned in vv. 40–57 show how strong was the tendency to call new buildings and the like after ancient and sacred places. Mūhūmeghvava and Jetavana are of course called respectively after the park and the monastery in Anurādhapura. Hemavatī is the skr. *Haimavatī*, a name of the Ganges. Sarasvatī and Yamunā are well-known rivers in Northern India. Vetravatī is a tributary of the Yamunā, now called Betwā. Kālindī (v. 54) is a frequent name for the Yamunā (see BR. s. v.). Nammadū is the skr. *Narmadā*, now the Nerbudda whose valley bounds the Vindhya mountains in the south. Tuṅgabhadrī is the name of a river in the Dekkan, likewise Kāverī, Godāvarī and quite in the south in Tinnevelli, the Tāmraparī. The Bhagirathī (v. 49) is the name of one of the sources of the Ganges, and the Gonmatī is a left tributary of the same stream. The Aciravatī is so named after a river which flows past Sāvatthī = skr. Śāvastī, now the Raṭṭī. The Nerañjarā is called after the river at the sacred place where Buddha received Enlightenment (OLDEMBERG, Buddha, p. 129). Campā (v. 45) is the name of an old Indian town in Aṅga near the present Bhagalpur in Bengal. Canibrhūgā, Āvartukā, Veṇumatī are Indian river names (BR. s. v.). Nibbindā (v. 58) corresponds perhaps to the Nirvindhya named in Meghalīta 28. Anotatta (v. 49) which was situated in the country of the mythical Uttarakurus was made sacred according to Vin. I. 28<sup>2</sup> by a visit of the Buddha.

<sup>2</sup> Now Yodi Ela.

born in Puñkhagāma<sup>1</sup> he erected the Sūtighara-cetiya one  
 62 hundred and twenty cubits high. He had twenty-two relic  
 shrines erected, thirty-seven Bodhi Trees (planted), one hundred  
 63 image houses, fifteen caves, twenty-one dwellings for the  
 community in the four regions of the heavens and eighty-  
 64 seven rest-houses for strangers. He put up chapels with altars  
 for flowers, twenty-nine in number, seven sermon halls as well  
 65 as five outer walls and forty-three images of divers kinds.  
 66 He restored twenty-four ruined image houses. The Mahāgallaka  
 tank<sup>2</sup> and the Tālagallaka tank, the Rājini<sup>3</sup> weir<sup>4</sup>, the weir  
 67 called Telapakka, the weir on the Jajjarā<sup>5</sup> and the Vilattūkhanya<sup>6</sup>  
 (weir) the Monarch made fast for the flourishing of the harvest  
 68 in the land. Three hundred and fifty-eight damaged places  
 69 in tanks and the stone sluices on thirteen tanks as well as  
 one hundred and sixty locks<sup>7</sup> and small tanks which were  
 damaged, thirty-seven in number — these the Monarch had  
 repaired.

70 Also in the province of Rohaya the King who had delight  
 in meritorious works, had divers buildings erected in villages  
 71 and market towns. On the site of his mother's pyre in Khīra-  
 gāma<sup>8</sup> the Monarch (erected) the Ratnāvali-cetiya, one hundred  
 72 and twenty cubits<sup>9</sup> in height. Further (he founded) sixteen

<sup>1</sup> See note to 61. 26. The height of the tope was roughly 180 ft.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. Mbvs. 68. 34 and 43.

<sup>3</sup> P. *nijjhara*. See note to v. 28. What is here called *nijjhara* is probably the same as *vāri(san)pāta* Mbvs. 48. 148; 68. 35, 37.

<sup>4</sup> Probably an allusion to the great irrigation works described in Mbvs. 68. 16 ff. which needed repair. In the case of a river *nijjhara* means the dam (*setu*) built in it through which a part of the water is conducted into a lateral canal. If the river has a large volume of water, it flows over the dam and forms a "full" like the flood-escape in a tank.

<sup>5</sup> P. *dvārāṇe*. I believe this is meant for the shafts and the apparatus for regulating the outflow of the water at the sluices (see note 1 to v. 27).

<sup>6</sup> See note to 74. 163.

<sup>7</sup> That is 180 ft. The size (*āyāmu*) probably refers to the height. According to H. W. CODRINGTON (letter of 1-4-28), the measurement of the tope of Badalkumbura gave a circumference of 926 ft. which would in fact give a height of about 180 ft.

relic shrines, seven Bodhi Trees and also vast Bodhi temples and seventy Bodhi Tree terraces<sup>1</sup> and two-storeyed image houses forty-three in number, two sermon halls and seventy-five images, thirty-seven dwellings for the community from the four regions of the heavens, forty-seven outer walls and twenty gate-buildings; also fifty-nine rest-houses for guests, four parks and three statues of the Metteyya. After the Sovereign had then built five dancing-halls, he had everything here and there which was broken down and decayed restored. Thirty-seven thūpas, twenty-two Bodhi Tree terraces, two hundred and seventy-four large image houses, one relic temple, seven temples for images in recumbent posture, forty caves and four brick houses; four long pāsādas, and six three-storeyed pāsādas, twenty-nine sermon halls and three cloisters, one hundred and twenty-six dwelling-houses, one hundred and twenty-eight houses for books and four rest-houses for guests, twenty-four temples to the gods, one hundred and three tower-gates, one hundred and twenty-six outer walls these all the Sovereign had restored. The Ruler also made fast two hundred and sixteen leaking tanks belonging to the community, like the great Urnvelū tank and the Pāṇḍukolamba tank and others, further eighteen decayed sluice locks and two hundred and five ruined small tanks. On ten tanks he repaired the stone sluices and here and there he had forty-four canals dug<sup>2</sup>.

By constructing in this way beautiful vihāras, gardens, tanks and the like he adorned with these numerous (works) the whole of Laṅkā.

Thus Parakkamabāhu, the Ruler of men, by whom were performed divers and numerous kinds of meritorious works, who continually found the highest satisfaction in the teaching

<sup>1</sup> P. *bodhikotthaka*. Here also *kotthaka* (see above note to v. 28) is used in the sense of walling up. It is a usual custom to surround the sacred trees with a terrace, even if it consist merely of stones heaped together.

<sup>2</sup> This verse ends the first continuation of the Mahāvamsa ascribed to Dhammadikitti. See my edition of the Cūlavamsa I. Introd. p. III.

of the Master, who was endowed with extraordinary energy and discernment, carried on the government for thirty-three years<sup>1</sup>.

Here ends the seventy-ninth chapter, called «The Laying out of Gardens and the Like», in the Mahāvaipsa, compiled for the serene joy and emotion of the pious.

<sup>1</sup> The same number of years in Pūjāv. and Rājaratn. Rājāv. 32 years.

## CHAPTER LXXX

## THE SIXTEEN KINGS

Thereupon the sister's son of this Great king, the wise 1 poet sovereign King Vijayabāhu<sup>1</sup>, became monarch in Laṅkā. When he had received consecration as king the prudent one 2 in his great mercy released from their misery those dwellers in Laṅkā whom his uncle, the Sovereign Parakkama, had 3 thrown into prison and tortured with stripes or with fetters. By restoring at different places to various people their village 4 or their field he increased the joyfulness<sup>2</sup> of them all. As 5

<sup>1</sup> In Polonnaruva there is an inscription of Vijayabāhu II. which supplements the account of our chronicle (WICKREMASINGHE EZ. II. 179 ff.). In it he also describes himself as sister's son of Parakkamabāhu. We know three sisters of this king, but I doubt if any of these three was the mother of Vijayabāhu II. WICKREMASINGHE thinks she was Bhaddavatī, the wife of Gajabāhu, who would in fact be the most likely. But in 70. 838 (cf. below note to v. 31) we have the distinct statement that Gajabāhu had no son. This is not easy to get over. I am inclined to think that there was a fourth unnamed sister of Parakkamabāhu's married to a Kaliṅga prince. Then it would be intelligible (cf. below, note to v. 18) that Vijayabāhu, the son of this prince and of a sister of Parakkamabāhu, should in his turn, appoint a Kaliṅga prince as his successor, and that the latter should describe him as head of the clan. The inscription relates further that Vijayabāhu was in Simhupura, the capital of Kaliṅga, when Parakkama summoned him to Laṅkā. Parakkama's relations with the Kaliṅga dynasty are intelligible. He had himself Kaliṅga blood in his veins through his grandmother Tilokasundarī whom Vijayabāhu I. fetched from this dynasty to secure the continuance of his house (Mhs. 59. 29 ff.).

<sup>2</sup> Vv. 3 and 4 show Parakkamabāhu in a curious light. According to this account, he was a severe if not cruel ruler, who made his subjects slave that he might gratify his love of splendour. Vijayabāhu II. grants an amnesty at his accession.

Alakā for (the god) Kubera and Amarāvatī for Sakka, so was  
 6 Pulathinagara for him the royal city. He himself composed  
 in the Mūgadha tongue a most excellent letter, sent it to the  
 7 monarch living in Arimaddana<sup>1</sup>, concluded with this beloved  
 (prince) a friendly treaty as aforetime his great grandfather  
 8 Vijayabāhu<sup>2</sup>, and (being) highly famed, to increase the joy of  
 the bhikkhus in the land of Laikā and Arimaddana, he made  
 9 the Order of the Buddha lustrous. As the Ruler departed  
 not from any precept of the political teaching of Manu, he  
 rejoiced the people through the four heart-winning qualities.  
 10 Endowed with kindness, purity and other virtues, he found  
 his highest satisfaction in the triad of the jewels, Buddha and  
 11 the like. Of most excellent character he, ever joyous in spirit,  
 12 provided the bhikkhus with the four articles of use. Manifesting  
 great exertion, he like a wise Bodhisatta, everywhere  
 13 in every way interested himself in all beings. Shunning the  
 four wrongful paths<sup>3</sup> he in his great insight, practised in the  
 exercise of justice, towards good and evil shun and severity.  
 14 Thus this Monarch respected by the laity and the Order, per-  
 forming many meritorious works, carried on the government  
 for one year<sup>4</sup>.  
 15 Now after a traitor, Mahinda by name, of the Kuliṅga  
 clan<sup>5</sup>, who had won us his spouse a cowherd's daughter, Di-

<sup>1</sup> The capital of Rāmarāja (Lower Burma, Pegu). Cf. Mhv. 76. 38. We see from this passage that the Māgadha tongue, that is Pāli, was the medium of international intercourse, in the same way as Latin in the Middle Ages.

<sup>2</sup> Vijayabāhu I. is called not quite correctly, the grandfather (*pitā-maha*) of Vijayabāhu II. For his relations with Rāmarāja see Mhv. 60. 5 ff.

<sup>3</sup> See note to 37. 108.

<sup>4</sup> The same length of reign in the Pājāv. in which the King's name is given as Paṇḍilavijayabāhu. He has the same name in the Nik. s. and Rājaratn.

<sup>5</sup> W. translates "Mahinda of Kuliṅga" and gives a wrong colouring to the affair. The MSS. have *Kuliṅga* and also the Col. Ed. The clan name of the Kuliṅga occurs already in Mhv. 19. 2. Pājāv. calls the usurper Kiliñkesilā Mihimlālipūyo (*kesdā* is *kesadhātu*). Rājaratn. and

panī by name, had treacherously slain the Monarch, (he) the 16 deluded one without gaining the consent of the generals, of the warriors, of the indignant inhabitants of the country and 17 of the whole of the dignitaries, carried on in most evil fashion the government in Lañkā for five days.

After his murder the Uparāja of King Vijayabāhu, born in 18 Kalinga, Kittinissāṅka by name<sup>1</sup>, became king. After he had 19 received royal consecration he had built in superb Puñatthinagara a beautiful temple of stone for the Tooth Relic<sup>2</sup>. He had the 20 lofty Ratanāvalī-cetiya made firm and embellished the splendid

Nik-s. Kilinkeslā Mihimū, and Rājāv, merely Kilinkeslā. Pūjāv, and Rājāv, like the Mhs, give him a reign of just five days.

<sup>1</sup> King Nissāṅka Malla has left many and ample inscriptions. Ed. MÜLLER has edited 15 of them in the AIC (nr. 143 ff.) WIEKEMASINGHE 18 in all, EZ. I. 121 ff., II. 70, 84, 91, 96, 98, 123, 125, 128, 130, 134, 137, 143, 146, 148, 153, 157, 165 ff.). Their contents are very similar. With regard to his descent we learn (for ex. in the famous Galpota inscription in Polonnaruwa, EZ. II. 98 ff.) that he was born in the Kalinga country in the town of Siphapuri as son of the King Jayañgoṭa and the Queen Pārvatī. The Great king of Lañkā the Chief of the clan (*kula-jetū*) — without doubt Vijayabāhu II. is meant — had summoned him thither to take over the government. He had been at first prince and viceroy and had then ascended the throne in virtue of the law of succession. This right is frequently stressed in the inscriptions and justified by his descent from Vijaya, the first king of Lañkā. Without doubt this right was much disputed and it looks as if the bombastic style of Nissāṅka Malla's inscriptions had the object of increasing the prestige of the new Kāliṅga dynasty in Ceylon.

<sup>2</sup> In the inscriptions (for ex. Galpota-I., C, line 1) and the *Heṭa-dā-gē* portico inser., I. 19; EZ. II. 89 and 113) Nissāṅka Malla claims to have built the *daladā-gēya*, which was named after him, as well as the *rāṭa-gēya*. This last is evidently the so-called *Vaṭa-dā-gē* on the Quadrangle which was, however, in reality, a work of Parakkamabāhu I. and probably only restored by Nissāṅka Malla. See note to 78. 41. What the *daladā-gēya* was and where it was situated is not certain. One is inclined to think first of the *Heṭa-dā-gē* situated opposite the *Vaṭa-dā-gē*. That is according to the inscriptions on the building itself, apparently a work of Nissāṅka Malla. But in spite of its traditional title, it was probably not a *dā-gē*, a "relie shrine" but an "image house". Cf. the note to 78. 39. As *dā-ge* the *Sat-mahal-pāsāda* might merit consideration, unless this is a work of Parakkamabāhu I. (note to 78. 42).

21 structure with a golden point<sup>1</sup>. After building the vihāra<sup>2</sup>  
 adorned with a hundred pāśūdas which bore his name, he  
 made it over to the bhikkhu community and supported it.  
 22 The Jambukola-vihāra resplendent with walls and pillars  
 shimmering in gold and silver, where the floor was of red  
 23 lead and the bricks of the roof were of gold, the wise (Monarch)  
 had rebuilt and placed therein seventy-three golden statues of  
 24 the Master<sup>3</sup>. With the four-membered army the Ruler full  
 of pious devotion, went forth to the Samantakūṭa and performed  
 25 there his devout<sup>4</sup>, and everywhere on the island of Tambā-  
 paṇḍī<sup>5</sup> he had flower gardens and fruit gardens and numbers  
 26 of houses for the community laid down<sup>6</sup>. While in this way

<sup>1</sup> The lōpe is therefore called even to-day the Rankot-Dāgoba "Golden point dāgoba". It has nothing, however, to do with the Mahāthūpa in Polonnaruva with which it is associated in the index to my edition. The Rankot lies to the south of the Ālāham-puriveya. The height is given in the Galpota inscription C, line 2 as 80 cubits (= 120 ft.). The Rankot-Dāgoba Gal-āsana inser. (EZ. II. 184 ft.), belongs to the time at which that Dāgoba was built. The expression *bandhāpeti* "has made fast or firm" is, as a rule, employed of the restoration of old buildings.

<sup>2</sup> Not yet identified.

<sup>3</sup> The famous cave temples of Dambul are situated about 47 miles north of Kandy on the road to Anurādhapura. There is an inscription on the rock wall there of Nissanka Malla (WICKREMASINGHE, EZ. I. 121 ff.) in which at the end, he boasts of having constructed or embellished these caves and of having given them the name of *Sucaragirigūha*. The 73 statues set up by the king are also mentioned in the Prātiśākha-maṇḍūpa inser. line 30 (EZ. II. 173).

<sup>4</sup> The inscriptions mention repeatedly the journeys of the King to the sacred places of the Island. Adam's Peak (*Samantakūṭa* = Sinh. *Samāṇaṭa*) is expressly mentioned in the inscription on the vestibule wall of the Hela-dū-gē (I. 3 EZ. II. 94).

<sup>5</sup> The ancient name for Ceylon, originally of that part in particular where Vijaya landed. See Mbvs. 6. 47, 7. 38 f., 41.

<sup>6</sup> In the inscriptions the King also boasts repeatedly of successful campaigns against the Colas, Pāṇdys and other peoples in Southern India. It is almost impossible to disentangle the historical facts from the exaggerations. In the kingdom itself he claims to have increased the prosperity of the people by lightening taxation, by the laying out of gardens and tanks and by a generous giving of alms. He claims also to have reformed the Church. The mention of the fixing of the

day by day the Ruler accumulated many a merit, he carried on the government for nine years<sup>1</sup> in most excellent fashion.

His son, the King known by the name of Vīrabāhu<sup>2</sup>, 27 hereupon ruled for one night and then fell into the power of death.

Thereupon the younger brother of that same king Kittī- 28 nissaika, King Viikkamabāhu<sup>3</sup>, enjoyed the royal dignity for three months. He was slain by the Ruler Coḍagaṅga, 29 a sister's son of King Nissaika, who carried on the government for nine months<sup>4</sup>. Thereupon the powerful general Kittī had 30 the eyes of this king put out, deposed him and had the government carried on for three years without mishap<sup>5</sup> by 31 Līlāvatī, the first mahesī of the sovereign Parakkamabāhu.

*gāvuta* and of the setting up of milestones is interesting (Inscr. of the vestibule wall of the Heta-dā-gō, line 12; EZ. II. 94). Mr. H.W. COOMBERG has actually discovered a number of such gāvuta stones with inscriptions (letter of 1-4-28). They stand along the ancient high road (Mahāgāma-Katuragama-Buttala-Medagama-Bibile-(Mahiyaingamu).

<sup>1</sup> The same number in Pūjāv. and Rājāv. These and the Rājaratna ascribe the same merit to Nissanka Malla as the Mhv. The Sinhalese chronicles distinguish like the inscriptions, between the temple of the Tooth Relic and the circular building. The number of the statues set up in the Dambul-vihāra is given in the Pūjāv. as 72, in the Rājāv. as 63.

<sup>2</sup> In the Galpota inscr. B, line 1-2 (EZ. II. 111) he is called the son of Nissanka Malla. Pūjāv. also mentions that his reign only lasted one night.

<sup>3</sup> Mentioned in the inscr. of the vestibule wall of the Heta-dā-gō line 13-14 as āpā "prince". Pūjāv. and Rājāv. give him the same length of reign as the Mhv.

<sup>4</sup> The same in Pūjāv. In Rājāv. Coḍagaṅga is mentioned as the general who carried on the government for three years for Līlāvatī. Kittī is therefore not mentioned at all here.

<sup>5</sup> Pūjāv. like the Mhv., Rājaratna, and Nik.-s. enumerates only the names Vīrabāhu, Viikkamabāhu, Coḍagaṅga, Līlāvatī without other details. Līlāvatī was the daughter of Sirivallabha and Sugalā. Coḍagaṅga (in the form of Coḍgaṅga) and Viikkamabāhu (Viikkanta-bāhu) are named as princes (*rājaputtā*) who lived at the court of Gajabāhu (70. 238), but were not his sons (cf. 70. 333).

32 Thereupon King Sāhasamalla of the race of Okkāka, a lion in courage, carried on the government for two years<sup>1</sup>.  
 33 Then having deposed this Monarch, the general Āyasmanta<sup>2</sup>, a man of almost unsurpassable courage, a supporter of his  
 34 royal family, prudently had the government carried on with wise policy for six months by Kalyāṇavatī, the first mahesi  
 35 of Kittinissaṅka<sup>3</sup>. This Queen Kalyāṇavatī, who was devoted to the Order of the Master, had a vihāra called after her,  
 36 built in the village Pappasālaka by name, for love of the village, and assigned it villages, fields, articles of use, slaves,  
 37 gardens and so forth. With her consent, the general Āyasmanta, who administered the government in all Laṅkā, who came of  
 38 the Khandhāvara family, sent the Adhikarin Deva to charming Valliggīma, had a vihāra erected there<sup>4</sup> and assigned to the  
 39 Great community. He built the pariveya known by his name  
 40 of Sarājakulavardhāna<sup>5</sup> and caring for its support, he assigned

<sup>1</sup> Pūjīv. the same. In Rājīv. there is only mention of a king of the Okkāka family (without the name) who reigned 9 years. There is an inscription of Sāhasamalla in Polonnaruwa with the exact date of his coming to the throne in the Buddha era (WICKREMASINGHE, EZ. II. 219 ff.), according to which Fleet has calculated the event as occurring on Wednesday, the 23rd of August, 1200 A. D. (FLEET, JRAS. 1909, p. 327, 331). This is the first absolutely certain date in the history of Ceylon. See E. HULTZSCH, JRAS. 1913, p. 518; WICKREMASINGHE, EZ. I. 123, note 4; II. 220; H. W. CODRINGTON, IIC., p. 67, 7b.

<sup>2</sup> Pūjīv. and Rājīv. call him Elaṇi Ābō Senevirat. This is the same general who appears in inscriptions as Lak Vijayasingu Senevi Ābōnāvan Tāvurūnāvan (EZ. II. 112, line 15; 226, 1.19). WICKREMASINGHE EZ. II. 191 shows that probably Āyasmanta is the same as the Kitti mentioned in v. 30 who calls himself in an inscription Lak Vijayasingu Kit Seniviyān and describes himself as the minister of Lili-vatī (E. MÜLLER, AIC. Nr. 157).

<sup>3</sup> Kalyāṇavatī is mentioned in inscriptions of Nissanka Malla (for ex. EZ. II. 94, line 13 and 111, l. 2) under the form *Kalyāṇa*. A short inscription of hers is also preserved in Bopiliya (EZ. II. 190 ff.) in which she calls herself Kalyāṇavatī. Pūjīv. and Rājīv. give her a reign of 6 years.

<sup>4</sup> See 90, 96.

<sup>5</sup> That means "fortherer of his royal family". See v. 33. I am now inclined to believe that there and here we should read with W. *sarājakulavardhāna* (= *scarājō*) not *sa rō*.

it villages and fields surrounded by parks and the like and which could scarcely be visited by a bad harvest, together with articles of use and slaves male and female. Having 41 scrupulously separated the four castes who had become impure through mixture, he bent on doing good, had a text book compiled which had law as its subject.

Thereupon there reigned for one year<sup>1</sup> a royal prince 42 Dhammāsoka by name, who on coming to the throne was aged three months. The Mahādipāda Anikāṅga came at the 43 head of a great army from the Cola kingdom, slew the ruler in Pulatthinagara, Prince Dhammāsoka, together with the 44 general Āyasmanta and reigned seventeen days<sup>2</sup>. But the 45 general, Vikkantacāmūnakka, the villain, slew the Monarch Anikāṅga and had the government carried on for a year<sup>3</sup> by 46 the first consort of King Parakkamabāhu, Līlāvatī by name, who had already reigned before.

Now came King Lokissara by name, who had been 47 wounded in the shoulder by a spear, with a great Damila army from the opposite shore, brought the whole of Laṅkā 48 under his sway and reigned, dwelling in Pulatthinagara, nine months<sup>4</sup>. Hereupon the general Parakkama, the best among 49 men of decision, endowed with great power and courage, belonging to the family of the Kālanāgaras, consecrated the 50 Mahesi Līlāvatī<sup>5</sup> who came of the dynasty of the Sun and Moon, in the royal dignity, she who afterward shone in royal

<sup>1</sup> Pūjāv. the same. In Rājāv. it is expressly stated that it was Āyasmanta who raised the prince to the throne. The prince's age at his ascent of the throne is given as 6 months, the length of Āyasmanta's regency as 6 years.

<sup>2</sup> The same number in Pūjāv. and Rājāv.

<sup>3</sup> In Pūjāv. and Rājāv. the general is called Manakkū Senevi. The length of the regency is given as one year.

<sup>4</sup> Pūjāv. and Rājāv. 5 months.

<sup>5</sup> Līlāvatī thus enjoyed the royal dignity nominally at least three times (v. 30 f., 45 f., 49 f.). For inscriptions of this queen see EZ. I. 176 ff., II. 192 ff., 238 ff. The last named was found at Potgul-vehera in Polonnaruva and says that the queen had this building restored. It was one of the foundations of Parakkamabāhu I. For the general Parakkama see Dāṭhāvāṇpsa v. 4.

51 splendour. When then a space of about seven months<sup>1</sup> had passed for the Mahesti, there landed with a great Pāṇḍu army  
 52 from the Pāṇḍu kingdom the glorious Pāṇḍu King Parakkama,  
 53 deposed the Queen and her general Parakkama and after he had cleared Laṅkā from the briers (of revolt), he ruled the realm in superb Pulatthinagara for three years<sup>2</sup>, without  
 54 transgressing the political precepts of Manu. But since in consequence of the enormously accumulated, various evil deeds  
 55 of the dwellers in Laṅkā, the devatās who were everywhere entrusted with the protection of Laṅkā, failed to carry out  
 56 this protection, there landed a man who held to a false creed, whose heart rejoiced in bad statesmanship, who was a forest fire for the burning down of bushes in the forest of the good,  
 57 — that is of generosity and the like — who was a sun whose action closed the rows of night lotus flowers — that is the good doctrine — and a moon for destroying the grace of the groups  
 58 of the day lotuses — that is of peace — (a man) by name Māgha, an unjust king sprung from the Kāliṅga line, in  
 59 whom reflection was fooled by his great delusion, landed as leader of four and twenty thousand warriors from the Kāliṅga  
 60 country and conquered the island of Laṅkā. The great searching fire — King Māgha — commanded his countless flames  
 61 of fire — his warriors — to harass the great forest — the  
 62 kingdom of Laṅkā<sup>3</sup>. While thus his great warriors oppressed the people, boasting cruelly everywhere: "We are Keralā  
 63 warriors", they tore from the people their garments, their ornaments and the like, corrupted the good morals of the family which had been observed for ages, cut off hands and feet and the like (of the people), destroyed many houses and tied up cows, oxen and other (cattle) which they made their  
 64 own property. After they had put fetters on the wealthy and rich people and had tortured them and taken away all

<sup>1</sup> The same in Pūjāv.; Rājāv. 4 months.

<sup>2</sup> The same in Pūjāv. and Rājāv.

<sup>3</sup> In verses 56-60 the compiler gives specimens of his intimacy with the rules of Indian poetics — alamṛkāra. The comparisons belong to the species *rūpaka*. Cf. Daṇḍin, Kāvyādarśa 2. 66 ff.

their possessions, they made poor people of them. They wrecked the image houses, destroyed many cetiyas, ravaged the vihāras and maltreated the lay brethren. They flogged the children, tormented the five (groups of the) comrades of the Order<sup>1</sup>, made the people carry burdens and forced them to do heavy labour. Many books known and famous they tore from their cord and strewed them hither and thither. The beautiful, vast, prond cetiyas like the Rataññavali(-cetiya)<sup>2</sup> and others which embodied as it were, the glory of former pious kings, they destroyed by overthrowing them and allowing alas! many of the bodily relires, their souls<sup>3</sup> as it were, to disappear. Thus the Damila warriors in imitation of the warriors of Māra, destroyed in the evil of their nature, the laity and the Order. Herenpon they completely invested Palatthinagara and captured Parakkuma, that man of great might and valour. They put out the Monarch's eyes and plundered all his treasures, pearls, jewels and so forth. Then the leaders of the soldiers with Mūñibharanya at the head, consecrated the Kālingā Māgha to the glorious royal dignity of Laikā.

Now after the Ruler Māgha had in this manner taken possession of the kingdom and attained the royal dignity, he dwelt in Palatthinagara. The Monarch forced the people to adopt a false faith and he brought great confusion into the four sharply divided castes<sup>4</sup>. Villages and fields, houses and gurdens, slaves, cattle, buffaloes and whatever else belonged to the Sihalas he had delivered up to the Keralas. The vihāras, the parivepas and many sanctuaries he made over to one or other of his warriors as dwelling. The treasures which belonged to

<sup>1</sup> P. *sakadhammike*, that is the bhikkhus and bhikkhunīs, the novices, *sāmañerā*, of male and female sex, and the young girls who were being prepared for the profession of nuns (*sikkhamāna*).

<sup>2</sup> Here for the first time the now customary name (Sinh. *Ruvanrāli*) is used for the Mahāthūpa in Anurādhapura.

<sup>3</sup> Lit. "their life" (*jīvīlāy*).

<sup>4</sup> V. 41 ab must be compared with 75 c d. The "false faith" was Hinduism.

the Buddha and were the property of the holy Order he seized and thus committed a number of sins in order to go to hell.

79 In this fashion committing deeds of violence, the Ruler Māgha held sway in Laṅkā for twenty-one years<sup>1</sup>.

80 Thus in Laṅkā this and that ruler out of great lust for power, have slain this and that lord of men, but have themselves in consequence of these deeds, attained to no good old age, and even when they had achieved the kingly dignity, they could not alas! enjoy it for long. Hence the wise man should refrain from the destruction of living beings and renounce wanton lust for power.

Here ends the eightieth chapter, called «The Sixteen Kings», in the Mahāvaipasa, compiled for the serene joy and emotion of the pious.

<sup>1</sup> The same in Pūjāv. According to Rājāv. 19 years. The description of Māgha's reign in both chronicles agrees entirely with that of the Mhv. Rājaratna and Nik.s continue their enumeration of the names (cf. note to 80.31). In the first: Sāmagalla (read Sāhasamalla), Kalyāṇavatī, Dharmāśoka, Nekāṅga, Ānilflāvatī, Lokesvara, Līlāvatī, Pañjita Parākramabāhu; in the second: Sāhasamulla, Kalyāṇavatī, Dharmāśokn, Āniyungana Līlāvatī, Lokesvara, Līlāvatī, Parākramapāṇḍī. Then there follows in Rājaratna the account of the tyrannical reign of the Kāliṅgu Megha. Nik.s has the form Mūgha.

## CHAPTER LXXXI

## THE REIGN OF ONE KING

During this alien rule<sup>1</sup> several virtuous people had founded 1 on divers of the most inaccessible mountains a charming town (or) a village<sup>2</sup> and dwelling here and there protected the laity 2 and the Order so that they were in peace. On the summit of the Subha mountain<sup>3</sup> hard to ascend by the foe, the Senāpati 3 Subha had founded a town, as Vessavaya the town Ālakamandā, and dwelling here and fending off the Keraṭa devils, he protected 4 the (surrounding) country and the Order. On the summit of the Govindamala<sup>4</sup> hard to reach by the rebels, the Ādipāda 5 ruler Bhuvanekabāhu by name, whose courage was known to the world, had founded a town and by dwelling there, he 6 protected the province of Rohaya, the community of the bhikkhus and the Order<sup>5</sup>.

<sup>1</sup> P. *rūjanṭara* (cf. 87, 46) formed like *desautara*. The translation "interregnum" is also permissible, since no lawful kings reigned.

<sup>2</sup> P. *nagaraṇī gāmāṇī*. When in the sequel the buildings on the rocks are designated as *nagarāṇī* the reason is probably that larger settlements arose at the foot of the rock fortresses and under the protection of these. The word *nagara* is associated with the idea of a permanent stronghold.

<sup>3</sup> *Subhapabbutu*, now Yāpahn (= *yahupātu* = P. *yasnpabbata*), an isolated rock like Sigiri, not far from Muho. Cf. II. C. P. BELL, ASC. 1910-11 = X. 1914, p. 52 ff.; 1911-12, p. 60 ff.; F. H. MÜNDER, JRAS. C. B. XIII, nr. 44, 1893, p. 97 ff.

<sup>4</sup> This form of the name is hardly right. The Col. Ed. has altered it into *Govindūcalā*. I should rather propose *Gvindasela*, since its name to-day is *Gosimahelu*. The Govindahela is known by the name of "Westminster Abbey". This imposing rock rises 20 miles west of Tirukkovil, south of the village of Bovala in the Mahavedirata Korale (Census, 1921, II, p. 460). Cf. F. LEWIS, JRAS. C. B. 1908, nr. 61, p. 167 ff.; 1914, nr. 67, p. 279 ff.

<sup>5</sup> When *bhikkhusaṅgha* and *sāsana* are named together here, the first means the persons, the second the thing, that is the doctrine and the free practice of it in the Order.

7 In the same way again the general called Saikha founded  
 8 in the district Mayimekhalā by name, on the lofty mountain  
 9 Gaṅgādopi a superb town and while dwelling there, gave as  
 little heed to the infamous army of the Ruler Māgha, though  
 it was but two yojanas away, as to a blade of grass and  
 protected without fear that district and the Order.

10 Now at that time there was a king known by the name of  
 11 Vijayabāhu, belonging to the line of King Sumghubodhi<sup>1</sup>, a  
 man of splendid courage who after he had through fear of  
 the foe withdrawn to divers inaccessible forests and had long  
 dwelt there, attained the dignity of a king of the Vanū<sup>2</sup>.

12 The mighty one brought all the dignitaries of the Sīhalas  
 13 under his influence, marched forth with a Sīhala army and  
 destroyed the whole of the four-membered forces of the foe  
 which were armed for battle, as a mighty flame of fire<sup>3</sup>  
 14 (destroys) the darkness. All the Dāniṭṭha warriors who dwelt  
 as they pleased in the single villages and houses he drove  
 15 forth. After he had freed superb Māyāraṭṭha<sup>4</sup> from the briars  
 16 (of the foe), the Ruler built on the lofty summit of the  
 Jambuddoḍi<sup>5</sup> mountain a splendid town with fine walls and  
 gate-towers, resided there in happiness and carried on the  
 government as capable monarch.

<sup>1</sup> Sirisampghabodhi I. See Mbvs. 36. 73 ff.

<sup>2</sup> Here the tribe of the Vanū is mentioned for the first time. The name does not occur in the older Mahāvansā nor in the Cūlavansā of Dhammakkitti. The Vanūs live to-day, but a few hundred in number, in small villages on the northern frontier of the North-Central Province. They go in for agriculture and preferably for hunting. Their origin is unknown. The surrounding inhabitants call them Veddas as a rule, and the Census of 1921 evidently includes them among these. They themselves repudiate all connection with the Veddas on whom they look down with contempt. Cf. H. PARKE, The Vanūyas, The Taprobanian, Feb. 1887, p. 15 ff.; and Ancient Ceylon, p. 36 ff.

<sup>3</sup> P. *tejakkhandha*, synonym for *aggikkhandha*.

<sup>4</sup> It is noteworthy that in this second continuation of the Cūlavansā the names Dakkhinadesa and Rājaratṭha vanish and are replaced by Māyāraṭṭha and Patitthāraṭṭha. Cf. note to 81. 46.

<sup>5</sup> Now Dambadeniya, about 18 miles south-west of Kurunegala. Cf. F. H. MODDER, JRAS. C. B., XV, nr. 48, 1897, p. 23 ff.

And further: during these disturbed times all the Grand theras with Vācissara at the head, had carried away from Pulatthiningara the Almsbowl Relic and the Tooth Relic of the Master, had gone forth, had betaken themselves to Māyārattha and there on the mountain Kolthumala in a safe region had buried both the relics carefully in the earth and so preserved them<sup>1</sup>. Now some of these Grand theras with Vācissara at the head, who sought that protection for Laṅkā on which depenid the continuance of the Order, had crossed the vast ocean, despite its raging waves, had betaken themselves to the lands of the Pāṇḍus, Coṭas and other (peoples). Now Vijayabāhu sending forth his great dignitaries, summoned all these theras who were a mine of mercy<sup>2</sup> back from there. When the Grand theras arrived he greeted them with reverence and asked them: "Where are the two relics, the Tooth and the Almsbowl preserved"? At their answer, "In such and such a place", the Monarch's whole body was filled with a fivefold joy<sup>3</sup>. Led by the crowd of the Grand theras, the Ruler set forth with his army for the Kotthumala mountain. After he had performed a great sacrificial festival<sup>4</sup> round about the mountain, he beheld there gazing with his whole soul<sup>5</sup>, the

<sup>1</sup> Pāṇav., Kūjav., and Rājaratn. agree with the Cūlavaṃsa as regards the rescue of the two relics from Pulatthiningara and the bringing of them to Māyārattha. The chronicles call the mountain Kotmalaya. The therā Vācissara is not mentioned. In our passage *khemathānami* in v. 19b must be understood as appositional addition to *pavsesauhi*.

<sup>2</sup> Ye kurupākaranū cannot refer to Vijayabāhu, but only to te mukhāthera.

<sup>3</sup> Lit. "one whose whole body was filled with . . ." The five kinds of joy are according to Cūlavaṃsa (P. D. s. v. *pīti*) *khuddakū* p. "slight joy", *khaṇikā* p. "momentary joy", *akkantikā* p. "joy that comes like a sudden shock", *ubbegap.*, "transporting joy" (that will make you leap into the air) and *pharayap.*, "all-pervading joy".

<sup>4</sup> The King marches round the mountain with his attendants as a pilgrim walks round a holy place and has sacrificial ceremonies performed at the four cardinal points.

<sup>5</sup> P. *cakkhumano*. W's translation "with great delight" is too weak. We have here a formation like *kimśamano* Dh. 390 (DhCo. IV. 148 = *kodhamano*) "whose intention was the eye, that is gazing".

27 two relics of the Tooth and of the Almsbowl. With a heart  
 as full of joy as if he had found a jewel like the wheel and  
 the rest<sup>1</sup> or a great treasure, or as if he had attained Nirvana,  
 28 the Sovereign took unto himself the two relics and blessed  
 like Mandhâtar<sup>2</sup>, he bore them with great celebrations from  
 29 village to village, from town to town and brought them to  
 the beautiful city of Jambudilöpi where the pious people began  
 30 a great and splendid festival. Now while the wise King day  
 by day celebrated a great sacrificial ceremony for the relics,  
 31 he thought thus: "In order that if in future time another  
 interregnum<sup>3</sup> occurs, no evil from alien enemies shall befall  
 32 these relics of the Sage, I will carefully provide for them a still  
 33 more inaccessible place, fast and sure." Thus pondering he had the  
 Billasela<sup>4</sup> (mountain) made fast on every side with walls, gate-  
 34 towers and the like, that save by the gods in the air, it could  
 not be trodden by any human foes. And on the summit of  
 the rock he built a superb temple for the Tooth Relic,  
 35 ravishing us a divine palace descended from the world of the  
 gods. Around this he laid out a park for the community with  
 36 divers pûsñdas and mayalapas, delightful for taking an airing  
 when passing the day or when passing the night therein,  
 37 provided with lakes and bathing-ponds. In this relic temple  
 the wise (monarch) had the two relics, Tooth and Bowl, carefully  
 38 placed with great solemnity. After making over the park for  
 the community to the faithful theras who were charged with

<sup>1</sup> P. *cakkâdirutum*. This refers to the seven jewels which belong to the *cakkavattin* or world ruler (cf. CHILDERS, s. v. *ratana*); the first of these is *cakka* the wheel, as symbol of world dominion.

<sup>2</sup> See 37. 53 and note.

<sup>3</sup> Should we not read *puma* instead of *pâna* in 31 b, or is *pâna* used with the same meaning?

<sup>4</sup> Now *Beligulu* (so Pûjûv., Râjâv. and Rûjarâlu). This is the name of a hamlet in the Othen Patlava of the Kegalla District and of a Korale in the same district. The Beligula Korale is mentioned in the Kadâim-pota (H. C. P. BELL, Report on the Kegalla District, p. 2) as well as in the Siri Laka-kaulayuru (H. NEVILLE, The Taprobanian, June 1888, p. 55, 60). The rock of Beligala on which the relics were hidden resembles in isolation and steepness that of Yâpahu (cf. BELL, l. l., p. 25 ff.).

the care of the relics, he decreed a regular offering of alms. Also he commanded that a sacrificial ceremony of surpassing kind should be performed for the relics day by day in most perfect fashion.

Now in his faith the Sovereign set about rendering helpful service to the Order of the perfectly Enlightened One. If one asks how (this was done), the account runs thus: Deeply grieved in his heart that on the island of Laṅkā so many books that dealt with the true doctrine had been destroyed by the alien foe, the Ruler called together laymen endowed with a good memory and with knowledge, pious, well instructed, free from indolence and skilled in quick and fair writing, and along with these, many other writers of books and made all these write down in careful fashion the eighty-four thousand divisions of the doctrine and made over to them in accordance with the number of the divisions the like number of gold kālāpayas<sup>1</sup>. He also performed a sacrificial festival for the doctrine and thus heaped up a fulness of merit. The theras and the middle-aged and young (bhikkhus) and also the sāmaṇeras in Tisihala<sup>2</sup> who had taken on themselves the burden of a life of discipline, all these protectors of the teaching of the Master he gathered together and made harmony where there had been discord. And then the Monarch pondered thus: "The ceremony of admission to the Order<sup>3</sup> is the foundation of the prosperity of the Order. How would it be if I had it performed now in the right way?" And joyful at heart, he endowed the whole vast reunited community richly with the eight articles of necessity<sup>4</sup> and made them hold for seven days the ceremony of admission to the Order which was preceded by offerings and honours

<sup>1</sup> This account is extremely significant for the history of the tradition of the sacred texts in Ceylon. It is found also in Pñjāv., Rājāv. and Rājaratn.

<sup>2</sup> This expression which refers to the threefold division of the Island into Patitthānūttha, Māyārūttha and Rohuṇa and which frequently recurs, is used here for the first time. Cf. note to 81. 15.

<sup>3</sup> P. *upasampudā*.

<sup>4</sup> See note to 60. 71.

51 instituted by himself. After the Ruler had laid out the park known to the world by his name of Vijayasundara and destined 52 for the community<sup>1</sup>, he made it over to them. In his charitableness the Ruler thought: "Bhikkhus and sāmāyeras who 53 study the Tipiṭaka in faith and lead in every way the pious life that springs from it, must never be troubled about their 54 livelihood. They shall come to the gate of my house and receive whatever articles of use they are in need of." And he invited them full of reverence, and gave to the many 55 bhikkhus who came to the portals of his palace excellent and 56 costly offerings, well versed in giving. Then the King ordered further for all ascetics who had reached the rank of thera or 57 grand thera, regular maintenance<sup>2</sup>. Thus in doing good to the Order the Monarch naturally honoured thereby the triad of the jewels — Buddha and the others.

58 In Vattalagāma<sup>3</sup> the King had built for the bhikkhus in a perfect manner the vihāra called after his own name 59 Vijayabāhu. In the vihāra Kalyāṇī by name, the Ruler had the vast and splendid cetiya which had been destroyed by the 60 Damilū soldiers, made fast again and a golden finial put upon it,

<sup>1</sup> This monastery is also mentioned in Pājāv. and Rājmatn. as a foundation of Vijayabāhu. In Mhv. 85. 90 it is called Sirivijayasundara. It was situated in Jambuddipi.

<sup>2</sup> In the Rājaratn. which is particularly concerned with Vijayabāhu the following strophe is quoted in praise of the generosity of the King.

Cātuddisūlājinatrājānaip  
āpānabhūtaip gharām āsi tassa  
yadicchitappaccayalubbhahetn  
devaddānmo vāsi mahānubhāvo.

"For those sons of the Victor who come from the four regions of the heavens his house became the refuge, because there they received all articles of use as they wished. Like a heavenly tree was the sublime one". The "heavenly tree" is of course, the "wishing tree" (skr. *kolpadruma*).

<sup>3</sup> The building of the Vijayabāhu-vihāra is also related in Pājāv., Rājāv. and Rājaratn. The village of Vattala lies on the right bank of the Kelaniganga, a little above its mouth. Thus it is not far from the Kelani-vihāra whose restoration is also mentioned in the Sinhalese chronicles.

as well as a gate-tower on its eastern side. There too be restored 61 whatever was decayed in the image houses, the encircling wall and the like and on all other (buildings). The King also gave 62 the order that all pū-ādas, image-houses, vibāras, pariveśas, and likewise cetiyas, maṇḍapas, outer walls, gate-towers 63 and the like which were in Māyāratṭha, should be put into the condition in which they were formerly, and that new buildings should be erected.

Now as the King wished to accomplish himself still more for 64 the furtherance of the laity and of the Order, he reflected thus: "At a time when I had already reached a great age and 65 youth had vanished, I gained the good fortune of the royal dignity and have until now enjoyed it. Now after the destruction 66 of all the evil foes who still remain over after the conquest and thereby to protect my people and after renewing the 67 structures of the destroyed and decayed vihāras to bring about the furtherance of my people — for that I have now but a short time." With such considerations the discerning Monarch 68 together with those people versed in the lore of signs, tested the (bodily) signs of both of his own sons Parakkamabāhu 69 and Bhuvanekabāhu and attained this knowledge: "The signs on Parakkamabāhu are such that he will in accordance therewith accomplish through the majesty of his power the destruction of the enemy and will unite all Laṅkā under one umbrella, so that none shall be above him; and that he will 71 further the spotless Order of the Omniscient one; will spread his fame over the chief and the intermediate regions of the heavens; will receive from the most divers countries gifts as princesses for 72 his women's apartments and the like, and will be for long a world ruler on the Island." When he realised this, with eyes 73 filled with tears of joy, he made him sit on his knee and kissed him on the head. Then he gazed again and again full of love 74 on the younger prince, who stood near, gave them twain much excellent advice, made them by training practised in all arts, 75 accomplishments and the like. Then the Ruler entrusted of 76 the twain his elder son to the assembled community at whose head stood the Grand master known by the name of Saip- 77

78 gharakkhita. And again he entrusted the same (thera) with the two relics, the Tooth and the Almsbowl of the Sage, as also with the whole Great community and also with the people dwelling in Laṅkā and ruled this himself in perfect fashion<sup>1</sup>.

79 After the Sovereign had in this manner sowed the royal seed in the wide field of Laṅkā, he entered heaven after a reign of four years<sup>2</sup>.

80 Even as this Ruler of men, Vijayabāhu, protected the entire world of the laity and the Order of the Victor, so should all future rulers of Laṅkā protect both, bestowing on them security.

Here ends the eighty-first chapter, called «The Reign of One King», in the Mahāvanssa, compiled for the serene joy and emotion of the pious.

<sup>1</sup> The meaning is that the King made Samgharakkhita Head of the Church and entrusted him with the education of the heir to the throne. As head of the Order Samghurakkhita had to look after the spiritual welfare of the people over whom the King exercised secular dominion.

<sup>2</sup> According to Rājūv. the King had reigned 24 years. But according to v. 65 he only came to the throne at an advanced age.

## CHAPTER LXXXII

## THE EXHIBITION OF THE MIRACLE OF THE TOOTH RELIC

After the death of his father King Parakkamabāhu 1 united the whole of the people who were in Tisihala, adorned 2 the fair town and as if he were the peer of the King of the gods, he first of all had the ceremony of the royal consecration performed. On account of his learning he himself received 3 the famous name of Kalikāla-sāhīcā-sabbāññupāñḍita<sup>1</sup>. On 4 his younger brother Bhūvanekabāhu he conferred the dignity of yuvarāja and made over to him a part of the kingdom. With the thought: I will make the maiden Lañkū my own, 5 to no other (shall she belong), he turned his proud spirit to the destruction of the alien foe. He thought: in the first 6 place I will perform a sacrificial festival for the Tooth Relic of the Sage, then will I go forth to war against the Damilas, and with great pomp and ceremony he brought 7 the Tooth Relic from the Billa mountain to the splendid town of Jambuddoyi<sup>2</sup>. "I have the desire at every moment when I 8 think of it to worship the Tooth Relic with devotion at the three periods of the day" — so thought the Ruler and had built 9 near his palace a fair and costly temple for the Tooth Relic. In the midst of this the King had a splendid throne set up 10 and decked with a costly covering. Out of a large precious 11

<sup>1</sup> That is "the scholar who is entirely familiar with the literature of the Kali Age". The expression *sāhīcā* "art of poetry, literary work" = skr. *sāhitya*, was until now absent from the dictionaries. The Kali Age (*kalikāla*, *kaliyuga*) is the last of the four ages, the one in which we are living.

<sup>2</sup> Thus too Pūjāv. According to Rājāv., the king had brought the relic from Jambuddoyi to Samiddhipura.

stone the Ruler had a casket fashioned for the Tooth Relic  
 12 and again as receptacle for this a large, superb, costly jewel-  
 13 case of bright, valuable precious stones. Then for five thousand  
 14 gold nikkhas<sup>1</sup> he had as receptacle for this case a second  
 15 silver nikkhas a third chest. Now when the King starting  
 16 with the relic temple, had adorned the town, and had devoutly  
 17 celebrated a great sacrificinal ceremony for the Tooth Relic, he  
 took the Tooth in the lotus of his hand<sup>2</sup> and spake in the  
 midst of the Great community the following solemn declaration<sup>3</sup>:  
 17 "Our sublime Buddha, god of the gods, the Sage, strong in  
 18 miraculous power visited this island of Laṅkā three times,  
 19 and that most supreme of men went away, having sojourned  
 here and there and having made of sixteen prominent places  
 20 spots hallowed by his use<sup>4</sup>. Therefore it is that Laṅkā is not  
 under the power of kings of a false faith, but under the power  
 of kings of the true faith it flourishes in the right manner.  
 21 Aforetime also on this island the Ruler of men by name  
 Aseln, son of the Ruler Muṭasīvū, wise in statecraft, conquered  
 the Damiḷas Sena and Guttaka who carried on horse-dealing<sup>5</sup>

<sup>1</sup> P. *nikkha* or *nakkha* = ved. *nigka*, is a weight with which the precious metals are weighed. According to Abhp. 480, 888 it seems to be equal to 5 suvarṇas. This would agree with the Indian reckoning which makes one *nigka* (= 1 pala = 4 or 5 suvarṇas) equal to 56.875 gr. The figures in our passage are certainly a fantastic exaggeration.

<sup>2</sup> A frequent *rūpaka*. Cf. Daṇḍin 66 (note to 80. 60) *pāṇipadma*.

<sup>3</sup> P. *saccukriyām akā*. See note to 51. 56.

<sup>4</sup> P. *pāribhogika*. This is in the first place a term for reliques which are reverenced as articles of use belonging to a saint, such as the alms-bowl of the Buddha. In contrast to these are the bodily (*sārīrika*) reliques, as for instance the Tooth Relic. Here places are called *pāribhogika* because the Buddha by use (*paribhogena*), by sojourning there had hallowed them. The legend of Buddha's three visits to Laṅkā is related in Mhv. 1. The 16 places where according to tradition he sojourned on these occasions, are given by W. in his translation p. 277, note. The most important are Mahiyaṅgāna, Kelaniya, Adam's Peak, the sites of the various tops in Anurādhapura, Tissamahārāma etc.

<sup>5</sup> P. *assanēikaputte* etc. W. translates "sons of the horse merchant" which is also possible. But *putta* may better be taken as a mere paraphrase as in *kammāraputta* etc. Cf. on the whole Mhv. 21. 10 ff.

by sea, and held sway while sheltering the Order of the Victor. Then the famous Great king Duṭṭhagāmī Abhaya 22 vanquished Elāra of the Coja country and protected the laity and the Order. Again the Monarch Vatṭagāmī<sup>1</sup> 23 vanquished in combat five very cruel Damiḷa princes and protected the laity and the Order. Then the Ruler of men, 24 Dhātusena, subdued six Damiḷa kings with their countless great warriors, and sheltered the laity and the Order. Again 25 the great Vijayabāhu put to flight in battle the Cojyas and the Damiḷas and protected the laity and the Order. Now I 26 too have the wish to vanquish the insolent Damiḷas who have destroyed vihāras and other buildings and also the Order of the Master and still have their abode in Patitthāratṭha<sup>2</sup>, 27 the twin, King Māgha and Jayabāhu<sup>3</sup>, and to further the laity and the Order. That is a true word and yet more I say: 28 the highly virtuous, far-famed monarchs with the Kosala king 29 at the head, heard from the mouth of the Master while he lived, the preaching of the doctrine and saw many a miracle and their wishes were (thereby) fulfilled. Rulers mighty in 30 miraculous power like Dhammīsoka and the others who were born when the fully Enlightened One no longer lived, beheld 31 divers miracles like the figure of the perfectly Enlightened One<sup>3</sup> produced (in miraculous manner) and the like, and made each his life thereby rich in fruit. But when the Guide of 32 the worlds, having fulfilled the task of a Buddha, in the region of the Mallas, outstretched on the conch of great

<sup>1</sup> See note to 81. 15. The Sinhalese form of the name is Pibilimūṭa.

<sup>2</sup> It is clear that the reign of Vijayabāhu III. and the beginning of his son's reign fall within the 21 years assigned to Māgha in 80. 79. The usurper Jayabāhu has so far not been mentioned, both names are in the Pāṭjav. however.

<sup>3</sup> What is meant are miracles such as that described in Mhv. 31. 96 ff. As Duṭṭhagāmī<sup>1</sup> is about to replace the reliques in the Mahāthūpa the casket in which they are contained, rises in the air, opens of itself and the reliques assume the form of the Buddha and perform the miracle which was performed by the Master under Gāṇḍa's mango tree in Sāvatthī. For the so-called *yamakappāṭihāriya* see DhCo. III. p. 206 ff.

33 Nirvana, came, as regards miracles, to the five great resolves<sup>1</sup>, then assuredly the Exalted One came also to lesser resolves.  
 34 From that day to this all the relics which exist, those of the body, as those associated with articles of use, perform through  
 35 the power of the Master miracles here in this our world. When therefore the Guide of sages, coming to this and that  
 36 resolve, saw (in spirit) in the five thousand years' duration of his Order, the future monarchs who take upon themselves  
 37 the burden of faith and of moral discipline, then I think not that the Exalted One will not with the eye of omniscience have seen me also among them. But if I have been seen by  
 38 the Incomparable One<sup>2</sup>, if even I have been added to the number of these great men and rulers of antiquity — loyal to  
 39 the faith in every respect — if I after destroying the alien foe in terrible war, may accomplish the furtherance of the lity  
 40 and the Order, then may the Tooth Relic now perhaps make manifest to me a fair miracle." After these words he became lost in contemplation.

41 At this moment the Tooth Relic rose from the lotus of his hand, like to the crescent moon, in the air, assumed the  
 42 glorious form of the Prince of the wise, diffused clusters of rays of light sixfold in hue, illumined the whole town,  
 43 manifested thus a glorious miracle, enraptured the Ruler of men, returned from the air and settled again on his hand.  
 44 With the shouts of applause and the songs of praise of the great crowd of people and above all of the Great community  
 45 who rejoiced at the sight of the superb miracle of the relic, the whole town was at this time everywhere full of intense  
 46 excitement. "This day I have gained life, this day my life has become of worth; this day hurrah! my life has become  
 47 perfectly fruitful. Having by the power of my merit beheld to-day such a miracle and having also seen the blessing

<sup>1</sup> For the *mahādīptiñānapañcaka* see Mhv. 17. 46 ff. In vv. 51—52 the miracle mentioned in the preceding note is foretold here. The lesser resolves refer to other miracles not included in the five great resolves, such as that expected now by the king.

<sup>2</sup> P. *tādinā* "of him who is so as he is and no other".

of merit richly earned by the people<sup>1</sup>, I now have been enrolled among those earlier rulers of men, famed for the fulness of their virtues in this Order of the Sage."<sup>2</sup> With these words the Great king, great in insight and miraculous power, gave forth a lion's roar in the midst of the vast assembly.

After the Ruler with the whole of his sixty-four ornaments<sup>3</sup>, such as the diadem, the bracelet and so forth had made an offering to the Tooth Relic, he laid it carefully in the jewel-casket and after placing this lustrous (casket) in the golden chest he again placed this carefully in the fair and costly chest fashioned of silver.

The Tooth Relic thus preserved in the best way in three chests one within the other, he then placed in his relic temple. For seven days long he celebrated with the (offering of the) seven kinds of precious articles<sup>4</sup>, with great wreaths and perfumes and with all kinds of food solid and liquid a great sacrificial festival.

Here ends the eighty-second chapter, called «The Exhibition of the Miracle of the Tooth Relic», in the Mahāvamsa, compiled for the serene joy and emotion of the pious.

<sup>1</sup> The blessing consists in the sight of the miracle taking place before the eyes of all and of the effects which proceed from it. The MSS. have *sambhatam pāññasampūrṇam* and so has my edition. The Col. Ed. alters it to *obhata āpālā*, but *obhata āpālā* is acc. case and depends, like *pīṭhāriyā* on *isirā*. By the power of his merit the King has seen the miracle and he has also seen the blessing of the people's merit which shows itself therein that they were found worthy of the same vision as the king.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. for this E. W. PERERA, Ceylon Notes and Queries, III. April 1914, p. XXXVI ff., where the enumeration of the regalia in the Sinhalese Thūpavamsa is discussed.

<sup>3</sup> P. *ratauchi suttahi*. The seven *ratauchi* are: *sravanna* (gold), *rajata* (silver), *mattā* (pearls), *māgi* (precious stones like sapphire and ruby), *vēlinriya* (a semi-precious stone (?) like cat's eye), *cajira* (diamond), *parūpa* (coral). See CHILDERS, s. v.

## CHAPTER LXXXIII

## THE STORY OF THE SUBJUGATION OF THE HOSTILE KINGS

- 1 Since all the inhabitants of Laṅkā had seen the effect of the merits of the King, they lived from that time onward
- 2 filled with still greater reverence towards him, in fear, in joy and in love, never were they capable of transgressing his
- 3 commands. All the sovereigns of the divers countries sent the King gifts, since their hearts were inclined to admiration of his majesty.
- 4 People whose heads were to be cut off he punished only in stern fashion with dungeon and fetters<sup>1</sup> and then set them free again. But for such people as deserved prison the Ruler to whom pity was the highest, ordained some lighter punishment<sup>2</sup>
- 6 or other, and reprimanded them. But on people who should have been banished from the country the Ruler who might be likened to Manu, laid but a fine of a thousand (kaliṇapās).
- 7 But on all those who deserved a fine, he looked with indignation and with all sorts of words of rebuke he made of them honest men.
- 8 Then all these people, the forces of the foe in Laṅkā who abiding in forest strongholds and elsewhere, had become
- 9 unconquerable by his father, the hero vanquisher of foes, the King set about subjugating by the power of his majesty and

<sup>1</sup> *Kūrūgūrabamdhānamattatn* cannot be joined to *parimocayi*. In this case *puna* would be quite unintelligible. It belongs far rather to *nīggvāhitecīna*.

<sup>2</sup> I think that *nīggahayi ka'ra* as well as *nīggavāhitecīna* in v. 4 must mean a punishment and not a mere admonition. This is expressed by *oradi* in v. 5 c. But the punishment was always less severe than the guilty person had deserved. The same also in v. 5 and 7. In *nīgguhā-*

by the might of his loving spirit<sup>1</sup>. The Sihala kings in the 10 land of the Vanni who were equipped with army and train, he brought completely under his influence, sitting merely on his lion's throne<sup>2</sup>. All the Sihalas with their lion-like courage who 11 dwelt in Tisihala<sup>3</sup>, these all the Ruler of men assembled around him and made them content. Then he dared to overthrow 12 the great Damiļa warriors who building great fortresses, had settled here and there in the country. Of all the Sihalas who 13 on the field were as lions against rutting elephants — the enemy — he sent some hither, others thither. The great 14 Sihala warriors wherever they came, harassed the Damiļa warriors as the Garuļus the Nāgas<sup>4</sup>.

At that time the Damiļa kings, Māghinda and Jayabāhu<sup>5</sup> 15 had set up fortifications in the town of Pulatthi(nagara), famous for its wealth, in the village of Koṭhasāra<sup>6</sup>, in Gaṅgātaṭṭika<sup>7</sup>, in the village of Kākīlāya<sup>8</sup>, in the Padi district 16 and in Kurundi<sup>9</sup>, in Mānūmatta, in Mahātittha and in the harbour of Mannāra<sup>10</sup>, at the landing-place of Pulaceeri and 17 in Vālikagāma, in the vast Gona district and in the Gonusu district, at Madhupūdapatittha and at Sūkaratittha<sup>11</sup>: at these 18

vācā (v. 7 c) *niggaha* it is true, means "revoke". That is after all the mildest punishment.

<sup>1</sup> Thus by force or by kindness. As regards the construction of the sentence, *paripanthinayi balay* should probably be taken as in apposition to *sabbe vanaaluggādinissite*.

<sup>2</sup> Without recourse to force, merely by his prestige as sovereign. For the Vanni cf. note to 81. 11.

<sup>3</sup> See note to 81. 46.

<sup>4</sup> See note to 75. 38.                   <sup>5</sup> Cf. 82. 27.

<sup>6</sup> Situated not far from Pulaththinagara. See note to 61. 43.

<sup>7</sup> Now Kantali, see note to 70. 286.

<sup>8</sup> "Crow's Home". The name does not otherwise occur.

<sup>9</sup> The two names appear again in 88. 64 next to each other. In the Sri Laka-kaṭayuru (The Taprobanian 1888, p. 55) they are noted among the districts of the Pihiti-raṭṭa (Patiṭṭha-raṭṭha).

<sup>10</sup> Now Mantai and Mannar. See notes to 48. 81 and 61. 39.

<sup>11</sup> Of the six last localities only Madhupūdapatittha is mentioned once more. It may be assumed that like the foregoing places, they were all situated in Northern Ceylon.

19 and other places, and committing all kinds of violent deeds, had  
 20 stayed there a long time. Their forty and four thousand  
 21 soldiers, Damiṭas and Keraṭas, who hard pressed by the spear-  
 22 armed Sihala warriors, were unable to resist, came terror-  
 stricken to Pulatthinagara and held counsel thus as to their  
 23 future conduct: "King Parakkamabāhu is of high majesty  
 24 and has miraculous power. Who in the world is strong enough  
 25 to neglect his commands? Even the monarchs of foreign lands  
 26 have now come under his influence, also all the Sihalas. Even  
 some of us Damiṭas are his followers. What is the use of  
 27 words about others? But what, what shall we people do? Now  
 we have all become dim like glow-worms at the rising of the  
 28 radiant sun. Therefore in the future it is impossible for us  
 to take up our abode on the Sihala island, we will go to  
 29 another country." They took all their elephants and horses,  
 as well as their pearls and costly precious stones, the royal  
 30 diadems and all the beaties of the harem, all ornaments,  
 cloths, mantles, buskels and every kind of valuable with them  
 31 in their fear and began to leave the town. But owing to the  
 action of the King's merit they mistook the regions of the  
 32 heavens. They thought it was the eastern gate and marched  
 33 out through the western gate<sup>2</sup> and came to Kālīvāpi where  
 the army of the Sihalas had set up an entrenched camp.  
 34 With all their goods they had alas! also to sacrifice their life  
 by each giving his to the Sihala warriors, thus carrying out  
 35 themselves what the King had only thought. And all the Sihalas  
 taking from them their accumulated treasures, became from this  
 36 time onward rich people<sup>3</sup>, as in ancient times all the dwellers

<sup>1</sup> Vv. 15—21 form one sentence. The construction is as follows: The 40000 soldiers of the two Damiṭa kings who after erecting fortifications in such and such places, had been settled there for a long time, came and held counsel.

<sup>2</sup> The mistake of the Damiṭas is, of course, nothing but a fiction of the compiler. The intention of the mercenaries was to reach the western coast with their booty and there cross to India. At Kālīvāpi the Sihalas intercepted them. Pūjāv. gives the same account of the occurrence as the Cūlav.; Rājāv. a different one.

<sup>3</sup> P. *sampannā* of pregnant significance in allusion to the *sampadam* following in v. 3t.

in Mithilā who gained the wealth which the kings a hundred in number, had through fear flung away<sup>1</sup>. After thus accomplishing by his power the crushing of the alien foe, he set himself to bring about the prosperity of all Laṅkā.

When the eleventh year of the reign of this King had arrived, a king of the Jāvakas known by the name of Candabhiñnu landed with a terrible Jāvaka army under the treacherous pretext that they also were followers of the Buddha<sup>2</sup>. All these wicked Jāvaka soldiers who invaded every landing-place and who with their poisoned arrows, like to terrible snakes, without ceasing harassed the people whomsoever they caught sight of, laid waste, raging in their fury, all Laṅkā. Just as flashes of lightning with floods of water (visit) a place destroyed by lightning with flames of fire<sup>3</sup>, so Laṅkā which had been harassed by Māgha and others was ravaged anew by the Jāvakas. Then the King sent forth his sister's son, the heroic Prince Virabāhu, with soldiers to fight the Jāvakas. The fearful Rāhu, namely Virabāhu, with his terrible appearance completely destroyed (the moonlight, namely) Candabhiñnu in the fields of heaven, namely in the battle<sup>4</sup>. He placed his

<sup>1</sup> Cf. W., note to this passage. The story alluded to here is related in the Ummaggajātaka (FAUBÜL, Jät. VI. 389 ff.). Through the cleverness of the Bodhisattva the inhabitants of Mithilā capture the possessions of 101 kings against whom they had been fighting. Cf. Jät. VI. 409<sup>24</sup>: *tato paṭṭhāga ca kica Mithilarāśino sahiraññā jāta*. To get the proper construction in our passage the words *yathā pucā* must be joined to the following and not to the preceding as is done by W., for which an *ivu* or *yathā* in v. 34 would be indispensable.

<sup>2</sup> P. *sogatā*, followers of the Sugata, the guide to the path of salvation. The Pūjāv. also mentions Candrabhānu as the leader of the Jāvakas. According to Rājāv. his soldiers were Damilas.

<sup>3</sup> The *pāvakāśavī* and the *mārasantī* are contrasted. Both are devastating thunderstorms. In the one case it is the kindling flashes of lightning that cause the destruction, in the other the floods of rain causing inundations. W.'s translation "fury of a flood of water" and "fire and lightning" seems to me weak, as it takes *apani* at first in its derived and the second time in its original signification.

<sup>4</sup> A picture suggested by the name of Candabhānu ("Moonshine"). Rāhu is the demon who causes the eclipses. We have again to do with

heroic Sihala soldiers here and there and began to open fight  
 44 with the Jāvaka warriors. The good Sihala warriors, sure in  
 aim, the archers, shattered in pieces with their sharply pointed  
 45 arrows, in the battle the countless number of arrows whizzing  
 against them with their poisoned tips which were shot swiftly  
 one after the other by the Jāvaka soldiers from a machine<sup>1</sup>.  
 46 Going forth to the combat like Rāma, Prince Virabāhu slew  
 47 numbers of Jāvakas, as Rāma (slew) the Rakshasas. The  
 Veramba wind<sup>2</sup>, namely Virabāhu, possessed of great vehemence,  
 shattered again and again the forest wilderness, namely the  
 48 Jāvaka foes. After thus putting to flight the Jāvakas in  
 combat, he freed the whole region of Laṅkā from the foe.  
 49 Hereupon he betook himself to Devanagara, worshipped there  
 the lotus-lined god<sup>3</sup> and celebrated for him a divine sacrifice.  
 50 He had erected there a priveṇa that was intended for the  
 Order; it received the name of Nandana<sup>4</sup>, since it was the  
 51 delight of the people. Thereupon he turned and came to the  
 town Janibuddhi, he sought out Parakkamabāhu, and he  
 was overjoyed.

compounds of the *rāpaku* order (skr. *Virobhūtar eva Rāhuh*). See notes to 80.60, 82.16. According to the Rūjāv. however, it was not the sister's son but the younger brother of the King, who vanquished Candrahlātū.

<sup>1</sup> P. *yuntamntte* (būñe). Something apparently like the ancient catapult. Mhv. 72. 251 mentions huge stones being hurled from such machines.

<sup>2</sup> *Verumba* is the name given to strong winds which blow in great heights (cf. PTS, I. D. s. v.). The corresponding word in Skr. is *varambha*. A synonym for *verumbhrāta* is *kūlārātu*.

<sup>3</sup> That is "the blue-coloured". Name of Viṣṇu. Cf. 85.85 ff. Devanagara (or pura) is the present Dondra, Sinh. Devundura. The place has been already mentioned in 60.59 and 75.47, but here for the first time we have a notice of the shrine of Viṣṇu celebrated in the Middle Ages. According to tradition it was built in 790 A.D. It was plundered and destroyed by the Portuguese in 1588 A.D. See P. E. PERES, Ceylon and the Portuguese, (= P. 2) p. 109 f. It is significant that Virabāhu offered his sacrifice of victory in a Hindu sanctum. At the same time however, he builds a priveṇa for the Buddhist Order, thus putting his attitude towards their parity beyond doubt. Even to-day a Hindu *devalayā* and a Buddhist *vihāra* stand side by side in Dondra.

<sup>4</sup> That is "joy, delight, ecstasy".

Now after he had thus carried on divers great wars and 52  
after he had scattered the terrible crowd of all his foes, the  
great and mighty Sovereign Parakkamabāhu attained the fame  
of victory<sup>1</sup>.

Here ends the eighty-third chapter, called «The Story of  
the Subjugation of the Hostile Kings», in the *Mahāvamsa*,  
compiled for the serene joy and emotion of the pious.

<sup>1</sup> South Indian inscriptions give an essentially different picture of the reign of Parakkamabāhu II. from our chronicle. According to these, Ceylon was invaded by the Pūṇilyas about the middle of the 13th century. They say that of the kings of Ceylon one was killed and another forced to pay tribute. This shows that Parakkama never united the whole island under his dominion. H. W. CODDINGTON, HC. p. 77, 87.

## CHAPTER LXXXIV

## THE SERVICES RENDERED TO THE ORDER

1 Thereupon the Ruler, versed in the ordinances of Manu,  
 caused to be determined to what families the villages, fields,  
 2 houses and so forth long since seized by the alien foe, belonged  
 by heredity, and had them returned to their aforesome owners  
 3 as before. Then he caused to be determined which villages,  
 parks and the like were the property of the Buddha and the  
 Doctrine, which (were) the assigned maintenance villages (for  
 4 ordinary needs), which the villages belonging to the Chapters,  
 which the villages which were personal possessions, which  
 (were) the villages of the eight sanctuaries<sup>1</sup> and the villages  
 5 of the puriveṇas and had them given back. Further he appointed  
 the five groups of menials and the ten groups of menials  
 belonging to the royal household and determined their rank<sup>2</sup>.  
 6 While the Ruler made all the inhabitants of Laṅkā wealthy  
 and possessors of fortune, he took care that the whole country  
 7 had abundant food. All the corrupt groups (of bhikkhus) who  
 since the Interregnum lived only for their own desires, following  
 forbidden occupations<sup>3</sup>, with senses ever unbridled, he sought  
 8 out rigourously, dismissed them (from the Order) and thus  
 9 purified the Order of the perfectly Enlightened One. Then  
 the King sent many gifts to the Coḷa country<sup>4</sup> and caused to  
 be brought over to Tambapanni many respected Coḷa bhikkhus

<sup>1</sup> P. *utthāyanagāma*. It is difficult to say what is meant by this. For the explanation we must look above all to v. 17 f.

<sup>2</sup> See Mhv. 67. 58 and note.

<sup>3</sup> Professions which are not fitting for the samaya are enumerated in Dīgha-Nik. I. 1. 10 (= I. p. 5) Cf. R. O. FRANKE, Dīgha Transl. p. 7, n. 2.

<sup>4</sup> The same account in Pūjāv.

who had moral discipline and were versed in the three Piṭakas 10 and so established harmony between the two Orders<sup>1</sup>.

Then when the Ruler learned that among the many high-principled bhikkhus dwelling permanently in Tambarattha<sup>2</sup> there was a Grand thera, Dhammadikti<sup>3</sup> by name, radiant in the glory of moral discipline, and that once when this thera was on his mendicant round, a lotus flower had blossomed on his path, he was filled with admiration and sent a religious gift, incense, sandal-wood, food and the like which had been in contact with the Tooth Relic and likewise a choice and princely gift<sup>4</sup> to Tambarattha. He made the Grand thera come to the island of Laikā, rejoiced again and again, as if he had beheld<sup>5</sup> the Perfect One, celebrated for him a great sacrificial festival and provided him who was a (worthy) vessel for offerings and honours<sup>6</sup>, in careful manner with an offering of the four necessaries.<sup>7</sup> Now in order to provide for the protection of the Order furthered by him, the Great king built round about his capital for the eight Grand theras who dwelt in the eight sanctuaries<sup>8</sup> and for the discerning theras dwelling in villages or in the wilderness of the forest,

<sup>1</sup> These are the Hinayāna and the Mahāyāna. The first school had its principal seat in the Mahāvihāra, the second according to Mhv. 78. 21 ff., in the Abhayagiri and Jelavama vihāras. Cf. also W., note to the passage. See now S. PARANAVITANE, Mahāyāicism in Ceylon, C. J. Sc. G. II, 1, p. 35 ff.

<sup>2</sup> Probably a province in Southern India. Pūjāv. has instead Tambalingum. It would appear from the Rūjāv. that Candrabhānu came from Tambalingum. So also H. W. CODRINGTON, HC., p. 77.

<sup>3</sup> The name of Dhammadikti recurs several times. According to WICKREMASINGHE, Catalogue of Sinhalese MSS. in the Brit. Mus. p. 21 b, 35 b, the Dhammadikti of this passage was the compiler of the first confirmation of the Mahāvansha.

<sup>4</sup> W's translation "and other royal gifts" is incorrect. Here *dhammapābhata* and *rūjyapābhata* are contrasted with one another.

<sup>5</sup> Not as W. has it: "as if he had seen an Araha". Pūjāv. has *bimba rohatan duṭṭā se*.

<sup>6</sup> *Pūjasakkārnabhājanam* belongs to *tām* in 16 d. For the figurative meaning of *bhājana* cf. note to Mhv. 44. 70.

<sup>7</sup> See above note to v. 4.

19 many communal monasteries, suitable for dwelling in, extensive embellished with divers pāsādas, provided with various mandapas,  
 20 furnished with divers bathing-ponds, adorned with cloisters which were places of sojourn by day and by night, surrounded by  
 21 a series of flower parks and tree parks and granted them to them. Further he celebrated with all articles of equipment a  
 22 great sacrificial festival. Thereupon the King gathered together the Great community of the (bhikkhus) dwelling in villages and in the wilderness of the forest and chose out all those who strove continually for the keeping pure of moral discipline,  
 23 those who took upon themselves pious duties and were tried in the leading of their life in the strictest way<sup>1</sup>, who were endowed with the virtues of renunciation and so forth and  
 24 were steadfast in the precepts for the conscientious. He built for them on the heights of the Puṭṭabbhatta<sup>2</sup> rock a forest dwelling, assigned it to them and supported them therewith.  
 25 As they made of the strictest conduct a reality, he made Lanikā through them in his days as it were, an abode of  
 26 arahants. With the reflection that theras who were acquainted with the sacred texts were rare in the Island, he had all books  
 27 brought from Jambudipa, had many bhikkhus instructed in the sacred texts, as also in all sciences, such as philosophy, grammar and the like and thus made of them cultivated people.  
 28 In this manner furthering conduct and learning, the wise (prince) honoured with such a religious sacrifice the Guide to  
 29 the path of salvation (Buddha). The Ruler caused his younger royal brother, Bhuvanekabāhu by name, to be instructed, so that he was versed in the three Pitakas. He made him carry out the precepts for the theras and hold lectures of instruction thereon. But to the many bhikkhus who  
 31 hearkened he granted in the midst of the Great community their appointment as theras, and presenting them with all articles of equipment, he celebrated an offering for the theras.  
 32 Seeking for an occasion fraught with blessing, in order to

<sup>1</sup> P. *lukkappati*, cf. v. 25. The compound is missing in the PTS. P. D.

<sup>2</sup> In Pūjāv. Palābatgal.

reach by the noble eight-fold path the saving shore from the ocean of re-births<sup>1</sup>, he had built in the third and sixth, then again in the eleventh, twelfth and seventeenth, as also in the twenty-first, twenty-seventh and thirtieth years of his reign thus eight times, a vast hall (resting) on sixty pillars<sup>2</sup>. Round about it he erected a great and splendid māṇḍapa. This again he had adorned with divers coloured stoffs and made numerous groups of bhikkhus abide there by turn for the purpose of rest. Day by day full of zeal, he did them honour with a great festival of gifts in his name and granted to many sāmāneras admission to the Order. Then following on this, he conferred on bhikkhus the highest rank, namely the dignity of a thera, Grand thera and the like<sup>3</sup>, and accumulating many important wares<sup>4</sup> of great value and many beantiful articles of equipment even to the measure of a king of elephants, the Ruler first presented to those who had attained the rank of a Grand thera, articles of eqnipment worthy of a king and then allotted to all the ascetics who were theras and to those who had been dismissed from the dependance on a teacher<sup>5</sup>, and to the others in their order, the eight articles of equipment<sup>6</sup>.

<sup>1</sup> The section v. 32 to 41 is absent in the Pāñjāv. The *uttamikarṇuyga* consists of the eight members: *sammādiṭṭhi* "right insight", *sammāsaṅkappa* "right thought", *sammāvācā* "right speech", *sammākarmavānta* "right doing," *sammānijara* "right gaining of livelihood", *sammārāyāma* "right endeavour", *sammāvāsatī* "right deliberation", *sammāsamādhī* "right spiritual concentration."

<sup>2</sup> The same 89. 49.

<sup>3</sup> W. renders *dyatamādikū* as title along with *thera* and *mahāthera* "incumbent of temple". But this seems to be contradicted by v. 40 *mhūtherāyatamūṭṭhāna* "rank of a Grand thern." *Ayatana* must therefore be combined with *thera* and *mahāthera* in v. 38.

<sup>4</sup> P. *yarnbhūya* also 85. 105.

<sup>5</sup> P. *nissnya*. By this is unlerstood the relation between an older bhikkhu, the *upajjhāya* and a younger, the *ādīraśin*. The first has to instruct the second in all details of the monastic life and the younger must take the older as his model. He who has finished his course of instruction is *nissayamitta*.

<sup>6</sup> See note to 60. 71.

- 42 Thus the King, the best of men, celebrated every seven days the great and superb festival of the eight bestowals<sup>1</sup>,  
 43 and later celebrating several times over the festival of admission into the Order, he made the Order of the Victor prosperous.  
 44 Thus the King by granting it in this way manifold support, caused as the moon<sup>2</sup> the ocean, the good Order of the Tathāgata — the king of the true doctrine — to grow in perfect fashion.

Here ends the eighty-fourth chapter, called «The Services Rendered to the Order», in the Mahāvamsa, compiled for the serene joy and emotion of the pious.

<sup>1</sup> The expression *atthopasampatti* must refer to the offering of the *attha parikkharā* (v. 41). *Upasampatti* is not the same as *upasampadā* "admission to the Order". It is to this festival which took place later (*paccchā*) that v. 43 alludes. In 89. 50 *upasampatti* is also used in connection with the distribution of articles of use to the bhikkhus, while the celebration of the *upasampadā* takes place later (v. 63).

<sup>2</sup> I. *sudhākara*, skr. the same, lit. "mine of nectar". Cf. for this verse E. W. PERERA, The Sinhalese and Spring Tides, in Ceylon Notes and Queries 1, Oct. 1913, p. XVI.

## CHAPTER LXXXV

## THE PERFORMANCE OF ALL KINDS OF PIUS WORKS

Hereupon the Ruler of men built in the splendid, incomparable, glorious town, by name Sirivadžjhana<sup>1</sup>, his birthplace, a vihāra exceeding rich and vast<sup>2</sup>. It was furnished with 2 pāśādas and maṇḍapas and with high walls and gate-towers, adorned with bodhi trees, with cetiyas, with groves and image houses, bright with all kinds of paintings<sup>3</sup> and embellished over and over with ornaments. Then he had the stretch of road from the town of Jambuddoṇi to the town of Sirivadžjhana levelled in the length of half a' yojana and the breadth of an usabha<sup>4</sup>, so that it was fair as the surface of a drum, and 5

<sup>1</sup> It is now generally recognized that this Sirivadžjhana has nothing to do with Kandy (cf. CORBETT, The Identification of the Sirivadžjhana-pura of Mahāwāya, Chap. LXXXV., JRAS. C. B. XII, Nr. 43, 1892, p. 206 ff.). It was situated according to v. 4 only half a yojana from Jambuddoṇi-Dambadeniya. All my MSS. have in v. 4 *adīhayojana*<sup>5</sup>, not *atthayojana*<sup>6</sup> which must be assumed, if we adopt W's translation: "about eight yojanas". If the *yojana* of the Mhv. is the usual Indian *yojana*, then the distance between the two towns is about 4 1/2 miles. Pñjāv., if the printed text can be relied on, has *naṭayodanak*.

<sup>2</sup> P. *risālveiḥhucamp* ("possessing great riches") *mahāvihārum*. There is just a doubt whether we have to take the subst. as appellative or with W. as a proper name. I admit the former and that with reference to the Pñjāv. where we have *rūjamahāreherak* "one great King's Monastery". Thus we must of course read in v. 56 not *Maha*<sup>7</sup> but *maha*<sup>8</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> P. *nīnūkummaavicittu*; cf. *cittukammi* "varied painting".

<sup>4</sup> In the line *dīghavītthāato adīhayojanūsabhamathake* the *adīhayojana* refers evidently to *dīgha* and *usabha* to *vītthā*. The first is the length, the second the breadth of the road. An *usabha* is equal to 20 *yaṭṭhi* = 140 *ratana* or *hattha*, (roughly = 18 inches), thus 210 ft. = 64 metres. The Pñjāv. gives a very detailed description of the festival of the transference of the relics to the new monastery.

caused it to be strewn throughout its length with fine white sand and adorned on both sides with many flags and pennons strung high by which the sun's rays were warded off, with 6 rows of banana stems and with numbers of filled jars which contained decorations of flowers and were fair with their 7 bright painting. On the whole of this free tract he had erected 8 at a distance of every five cubits a royal arch and at a distance 9 of every ten cubits an arch of stuff as well as at a distance of every hundred cubits<sup>1</sup> a large pāsāda covered with variegated 10 painting, with a high point, three-storeyed and furnished with 11 an image of the perfectly Enlightened One<sup>2</sup>. Then he decorated 12 the vihāra<sup>3</sup> round about the walled-in district of the monastery 13 with many and vast arches which were fair by reason of their variety and gleamed with the grace of the arch of the King 14 of the gods<sup>4</sup>, — further with white umbrellas which resembled 15 the picture of the full moon, — with banners five-fold in hue and of divers form, which were fair as heavenly dancers who 16 dance in the court of the atmosphere — with rows of mandapas set with jewels that sparkled everywhere, which possessed the beauty of a series of many palaces descended from the world of the gods — with rows of figures of Brahma, that danced in lines holding white umbrellas and were beautiful because they were worked by a mechanism<sup>5</sup>, — with divers-hued mechanical figures of the gods which moved to and fro with

<sup>1</sup> Thus at distances of 7 ½, 15 and 150 ft. *Toruṇa* means the arch spanning the street on festive occasions. As to *paṭṭatoraṇa* we must think of the framework of bamboo stalks as being covered with coloured stuffs. We are not told what the *rājatoruṇa* looked like.

<sup>2</sup> From *tato* (end of v. 9) to v. 10 one sentence. Pred. and subj. are at the end. The King erected 1) *rājatoraṇa*, 2) *paṭṭatoraṇa*, 3) *mahāpāsādū* on the levelled surface (*sumikutatule*) between J. and S. To the loc. *tale* belong the attributes in 5 ccl and in 7 d (*alaṅkate*); to this last belong the instrs. in v. 6 and 7. In v. 8 the loc. *sumikutatule* is rendered collective by *etasmī* *vipulokāse*.

<sup>3</sup> I anticipate obj. and pred. in 19 d.

<sup>4</sup> The rainbow is considered Indra's weapon. Stress is once more laid on the variegated colouring of the toraṇas.

<sup>5</sup> Lit. "beautiful by the contrivance of a machine".

hands folded before the brows, — with rows of mechanical figures of horses which ran hither and thither and possessed the grace of rows of raging waves of the sea, — with elephants wearing the ornaments of elephants, which were (likewise) mechanical figures feigning to be clouds descended to the earth: — with all these and other votive offerings which called forth ecstasy in people he embellished the vihāra. Then again he made the whole of the inhabitants in Laikā take up their position in a circle round the vihāra, filling the space of a gāvuta<sup>1</sup> and giving forth shouts of praise, and glorified the virtues of the perfectly Enlightened One. To these (he added) the bhikkhus and the sāmaperas as also the lay brethren and the lay sisters, bearing flowers destined as offerings for the festival of the Buddha and (lastly) all the other men and women who were acquainted with the merits of the three (sacred) objects<sup>2</sup>, with votive offerings in their hands, adorned with all their ornaments. Thereupon the Monarch himself decked out in all his ornaments, accompanied by his four-membered army, urged by his faith, placed the two reliques, the Tooth and the Bowl, on a costly chariot, adorned with every kind of chariot ornament. Then one by one he had displayed before him<sup>3</sup> divers votive offerings, such as flags of gold and flags of silver, golden vessels and silver vessels, fly-whisks of gold and fly-whisks of silver, chests of gold as also silver chests, golden fans and charming silver fans, golden bowls with lotus flowers<sup>4</sup> and bowls of silver with lotus flowers, filled jars<sup>5</sup> which were fashioned of gold and such as were fashioned of silver and so on; and afterwards holding a great sacrificial festival with

<sup>1</sup> See note to 73. 154.

<sup>2</sup> See note to 37. 214.

<sup>3</sup> P. *parato pauliso* (v. 29), that is in single groups or divisions before he himself started.

<sup>4</sup> P. *pokkharaṇī*, i. e. "lotus-pond". We must imagine the basins in which the flowers were borne as being oblong in form like small bathing-ponds.

<sup>5</sup> In the *punnakalasā* which are either carried or set up on festive occasions one sees now specially often the yellow-gold blossoms of the areca palm.

31 these divers (offerings)<sup>1</sup> ever and again to the sound of the five musical instruments<sup>2</sup>, he by degrees brought (the relics) on this decked out road to the town of Sirivaddhana. After  
 32 carefully laying them down in the midst of the vibāra in a spacious mandapa on a covered Buddha seat, he set about  
 33 making the various people<sup>3</sup> celebrate a sacrificial festival. In  
 the morning all people who had a true thirst<sup>4</sup> for meritorious  
 works, adorned with their ornaments, venerated the Tooth  
 34 Relic and the Bowl Relic in religious devotion<sup>5</sup>, with divers  
 kinds of flowers, such as jasmin, campaka blossoms, the blossoms  
 of the ironwood tree<sup>6</sup> and the like, distinguished by their  
 colour and perfume, and which were mingled with flowers of  
 35 gold. They venerated them with heaps of aromatic rice which  
 gleamed like a collection of the long since amassed fame of  
 36 the Great king. They venerated them with divers kinds of  
 fruits, such as bananas, bread-fruit, mangoes and so forth,  
 which were quite ripe, fragrant, lovely in colour, perfectly  
 37 sweet. Then afterwards when the King himself had venerated  
 the two most holy relics with all kinds of votive offerings, he  
 38 likewise, true to the good custom, provided the bhikkhu  
 community carefully with food and drink, with dishes solid  
 and tender, with drinks that one sips and with those one  
 39 drinks<sup>7</sup>. Thereupon the Ruler, joyful in heart, distributed to  
 many hundreds of bhikkhus the eight articles of equipment

<sup>1</sup> P. *tchi tchi* (possibly *pantiso* also) belongs to the following *kūrū-pento mohāpūjāyā*.

<sup>2</sup> The five instruments are enumerated in Abhp. 139 ff. 'They are *ñata*, *vitata* and *ñatavitata*, drums stretched "on the one side", "on the two sides" and "wholly with leather", *susira*, "flute, pipe", and *ghana* "cymbal".

<sup>3</sup> The various groups of people enumerated in v. 21—23.

<sup>4</sup> P. *puññasopīta*. The word *sopīta* "drunkard" used here in a figurative sense, as also in *dhammasopītā*, Jāt. V. 482<sup>17</sup> (PTS. P. D. s. v.).

<sup>5</sup> P. *bhattiyā*, see note to 74. 243.

<sup>6</sup> P. *jāti*, *jasminum grandiflorum*, *cumpaka*, *michelia champaca*, *nāga*, *mesua ferrea*.

<sup>7</sup> *Khajjabhojjehi* is the more detailed explanation of *anna* and *leyyapeyyehi* that of *pāna* in the compound *annapānehi*.

in great abundance. After that throughout the three watches 40 of the night he had the whole space round about the vihāra lit up with many hundreds of thousands of lamps burning fragrant oil, with lovely festoons of numberless, tiny, camphor 41 lamps (so that it was) like to the starry firmament. The 42 Monarch instituted a sacrificial for the Buddha<sup>1</sup>. The festival was ravishing by reason of the many exquisite dances and 43 songs of the dancers who on splendid stages<sup>2</sup> erected here and there, performed while assuming different characters<sup>3</sup>, divers dances and sang various songs. The noise<sup>4</sup> of the 44 festival was increased by the sound of the five musical instruments<sup>5</sup> which produced the illusion of the roar of the 45 great ocean of his meritorious works<sup>6</sup> that was so strong that it surpassed<sup>7</sup> the booming of the sea, while the drums shamed the thunder-claps of Pajjumna<sup>8</sup>. The feast resounded with the 46 pious voices of the preachers of the good doctrine who placing themselves on the preachers' seats carefully spread at divers spots by the faithful, laid hold of the beautiful fans<sup>9</sup> and 47 preached the good doctrine that went straight to the heart of

<sup>1</sup> Subj., pred. and obj. *mahipalo buddhapūjam parattayi* stand at the close of the whole sentence in v. 51 ed. The preceding verses contain attributes to the object *buddhapūjam*, namely *nausharaṇi* (v. 42-3), *viraddhitāṇi* (v. 44-5), *ghositāṇi* (v. 46-7), *manditāṇi* (v. 48-9), *pasathitāṇi* (v. 50-51).

<sup>2</sup> I'. *raṅgawaṇḍala* = sinh. *raṅgamadala*.

<sup>3</sup> What is meant are the different parts they play. The dances are always mimetic in character.

<sup>4</sup> The term "noise" must be supplemented from the foregoing. In the text itself there is only *viraddhitāṇi* directly related to *pūjam*.

<sup>5</sup> See above note to v. 30-31.

<sup>6</sup> Very doubtful. I take *bhama* to mean "error, illusion", which is also the meaning of the skr. *bhrāma*. W's translation cannot be reconciled with the text.

<sup>7</sup> Skr. *dūrīkaroti* can also mean "leaves behind it, surpasses".

<sup>8</sup> Skr. *Parjanya* the God of rain and of the storm. Cf. Jāt. I. 331<sup>st</sup> ff.; D. N. II. 260<sup>25</sup>; Mhv. 21, 31.

<sup>9</sup> During solemn ceremonies the priest holds a fan in his right hand and great importance is attached to its being held in a dignified way.

48 their hearers. It was made beautiful by the jubilant cries<sup>1</sup>  
 of the four retinues (of the Buddha)<sup>2</sup> who ever giving grateful  
 49 expression to their joy, went hither and thither praising un-  
 ceasingly with cries of applause the merits of the three (sacred)  
 50 objects with the words: O Buddha! O Doctrine! O Order! Its  
 praise was proclaimed by the elders (of the clan) of the  
 51 Balibhojakas<sup>3</sup> arrayed in all their ornaments, who taking their  
 stand at the divers regions of the heavens after the custom of a  
 Nandin procured<sup>4</sup> without ceasing the blessing of the Buddha.  
 52 With the thought: even in the highest heaven the Prince of  
 the gods celebrates such a festival for the Buddha, the Ruler  
 53 had that same ceremony manifested here (on earth), and as  
 former kings also, rulers of Sihala, had in their miraculous  
 power held even such a sacrificial festival for the Enlightened  
 54 One, so he showed it likewise at the present time to the  
 dwellers in Sihala. And so with the words addressed as it  
 55 were to all men: of such kind is the fruit on the wishing-  
 creeper<sup>5</sup> of the pāramitās<sup>6</sup> of the omniscient (Buddha), he  
 celebrated seven days long even such a great sacrificial festival  
 56 for the three (sacred) objects. Then in making the great

<sup>1</sup> P. *sālhukāra*. Cf. note to 74. 228.

<sup>2</sup> These are the bhikkhus and bhikkhunis, lay brethren and lay sisters.

<sup>3</sup> See note to 38. 13.

<sup>4</sup> P. *buddhasanti karontehi*. The expression *santi kar* (skr. *sānti*) shows that the task of the people was to fend off all influences emanating from evil spirits which might disturb the course of the festival. *Nandivillhipurassaram* is in keeping with this, for in the Indian drama the *nāndin* has in the prologue to deliver the introductory prayer (*nāndi*) which is fraught with blessing. Cf. STEN KONOW, Das Indische Drama, p. 24. We can understand too why the elders of the Balibhojaka clan were entrusted with this office. The name signifies these animals, birds in particular, such as the crows that live on the *bali*, the daily sacrifice offered to the spirits. Such spirits are embodied in these birds and the sacrifice satisfies and conciliates them so that they do no harm.

<sup>5</sup> Also in Skr. *kalpalatā* along with *kalparikṣu* etc. of the tree of Paradise on which grows everything that gives joy and delight to mankind.

<sup>6</sup> See note to 37. 180.

vihāra<sup>1</sup> the property of the community and in giving it over to the Order, he filled himself with merit and fame. Thereupon 57 the King erected a pariveṇa that was called by his name Parakkamabāhu, adorned with lofty pāśadas, granted the vihāra<sup>2</sup> the divers objects of use suited to it, as well as 58 several rich maintenance villages, and celebrated a great sacrificial feast.

The King made his yuvarāja<sup>3</sup> erect in the Billasela-vihāra 59 the pariveṇa called Bhuvanekabāhu after him, embellished 60 with pāśadas, maṇḍapas and the like and then celebrated in the town called Sirivadḍhana in the manner described, with 61 all votive offerings with care seven days long a great sacrificial festival for the three (sacred) objects. But also in the splendid 62 town of Hatthigiripura<sup>4</sup> the King made the same (yuvarāja) erect a vast vihāra, and after having built in his name a superb 63 pariveṇa, called Mahāmahindabāhn, he celebrated a great feast of sacrifice and gathered thereby merit. He restored the decayed 64 five-storeyed pāśada built long before in the splendid town of Kalyāṇī by King Yaṭṭhālatissa<sup>5</sup>, and in repairing what was 65 destroyed by having it coated with stucco, he made it again as it had been originally. There too he restored in similar 66 fashion the temple of the recumbent statue of the King of sages and the temple of the Tivāṇka image<sup>6</sup>. There too 67 the Ruler had the spacious, four-square courtyard of the great cetiya laid with great stone slabs, making of it a perfectly 68

<sup>1</sup> See note to 83. 2.

<sup>2</sup> Namely the vihāra in which the Parakkamabāhu-pariveṇa was erected. *Pariveṇa* and *vihāra* are thus not used synonymously as W. thinks.

<sup>3</sup> That is his younger brother Bhuvanekabāhn, see 82. 4.

<sup>4</sup> I. e. "Elephant mountain town", now Kurunegala.

<sup>5</sup> He was the son of Mahānāga who was the brother of Devānam-piyatissa and founder of the dynasty of Rohaṇa, whence arose in the fourth generation Dutṭhagāmanī. (Mhv. 22. 2 ff., 10 ff.). For Kalyāṇī see note to 61. 35.

<sup>6</sup> Cf. note to 78. 39. The images named here are the same as those mentioned in the Selalihinisandesa 68, to which PARANAVITANA has already called attention. According to the Ss. there were two of these.

level surface, and then he erected in front of the (cetiya) a  
 69 large mandapa. Further the Ruler with great and religious  
 70 devotion held several times in that vihāra a sacrificial feast for  
 the Bodhi tree, the cetiya and the Enlightened One, with votive  
 offerings of flowers, lamps and food — magnificent, abundant,  
 spreading joy among the people, and acquired thereby merit.  
 71 Thereupon the King granted to the vihāra for the purpose  
 of holding a daily sacrificial festival of lamps, a large, fair,  
 72 delightful garden of cocopalms which he had laid out in  
 his own name in the immediate neighbourhood of the vihāra.  
 73 Then the two-storeyed, circular relic temple in the vihāra  
 called Hatthavanagalla<sup>1</sup>, erected<sup>2</sup> by the monarch Gotihabhaya,  
 74 by name, on the spot where King Sirisamghabodhi gave his  
 75 head as gift to the poor man<sup>3</sup> — this temple the best of kings  
 had repaired and provided with a golden point and made three  
 76 storeys high. In the selfsame monastery he built on the spot  
 where the corpse of his royal father had been laid down<sup>4</sup> a superb  
 77 cetiya. There too he had erected an octagonal image house and had  
 78 a stone image of the Buddha set up in it. The glorious King heard  
 that of that son of the Enlightened One<sup>5</sup>, the Thera Mahākassapa,  
 79 who had received during the lifetime of the Enlightened One —  
 the Guide to the path of salvation — the Master of the worlds —  
 his most holy garment of rags as heritage<sup>6</sup> and after his death  
 80 had taken over the spiritual kingship and protected it — (that)  
 of this Mahākassapa a single relic, a tooth, (existed and) in

<sup>1</sup> Now Attavanagalla on the small river of the same name, about 18 or 20 miles north-east of Colombo.

<sup>2</sup> *Hathavanagallavihāravamsa* 9. 7 (p. 32 of the edition by Alwis). Here the building is described as *bhāvanām vāṭṭulāp*.

<sup>3</sup> Mhv. 36. 91 ff. should be compared with this. The history of Sirisunghabodhi's end is told in greater detail in the *Hathavanagalla-vihāravamsa* 8 (p. 25 ff. of the ed.) and embellished with many miraculous tales.

<sup>4</sup> Namely on the pyre. The corpses of the kings were disposed of by burning.

<sup>5</sup> Buddha's disciples are described as his spiritual sons.

<sup>6</sup> Cf. for this Samyutta 16. 11. 28 f. (II. 221), and the remarks to my translation of the S. N. II, p. 270 and 284.

course of time had come to Tambapappi and was now preserved 81 in the vihāra of Bhimatittha in the province of Pañcayojana<sup>1</sup>. Thereupon the King in whom there sprang up religious devotion, 82 love and highest veneration towards that Thera<sup>2</sup>, betook himself, surrounded by his four-membered army to the great monastery 83 and after he had beheld there the splendid (relic), he celebrated full of joy with an immeasurable quantity of beautiful kinds 84 of fragrant flowers and likewise with lamps and incense and heaps of rice, with great care for three days a sacrificial 85 festival for the Tooth Relic. Then when the Monarch learned that in the sacred town of Devanagara which was a mine of 86 meritorious works, the shrine long since erected to the lotus-hued god — the King of the gods, had now fallen into decay, 87 he betook himself to the superb town and in rebuilding the dwelling of the King of the gods like to the heavenly mansion 88 of the King of the gods<sup>3</sup>, he made of it an abode of all riches. Then the best of men had the town filled with all splendours even as the beauteous city of the gods<sup>4</sup>. Hereupon 89 he determined to celebrate every year in the town an Āśāḍhi 90 festival<sup>5</sup> for the god.

Now the Great king betook himself to the splendid town 90 of Jambuddoṇi. Here he had built round the Sirivijayasundara- 91 vihāra<sup>6</sup> erected by his royal father, a high wall and gate-towers and then had the three-storeyed relic temple restored<sup>7</sup>. 92

<sup>1</sup> Now Bentota on the coast between Colombo and Galle. For Pañcayojana see note to 57. 71.

<sup>2</sup> That is towards Mahākassapa. W. erroneously associates *there* with "the elder who had the charge thereof".

<sup>3</sup> The word *devarājālaya* is twice used here. The temple of the King of the gods (Viṣṇu) in Devanagara is made as beautiful as the palace of the King of the gods (in this case Indra) in heaven.

<sup>4</sup> P. *devanagarayi viya* in allusion to its namesake, the town of Viṣṇu's shrine.

<sup>5</sup> P. *āśāḍhā*. -*ḍhā* is the name of the month June-July. The day of the full moon of this month was one of high festival even before the time of Buddha (Jāt. I. 50). Buddha was born on that day.

<sup>6</sup> Cf. above 81. 51 where the monastery is called Vijayasundarārāma.

<sup>7</sup> Cf. with this 82. 9 ff.

There he placed the Tooth Relic of the Great Sage on a raised  
 93 throne of great value and celebrated in the order described  
 above, for seven days a great sacrificial feast for the three  
 (sacred) objects which procure every conceivable blessing. With  
 94 the wish to have daily before his eyes a figure of the Guide  
 to the path of salvation, as rejoicing to the heart as the  
 95 figure of the living Master, the Lord of men had portrayed<sup>1</sup> by  
 numbers of specially skilled painters on a great tablet a splendid  
 96 Budūha figure, showing<sup>2</sup> the Exalted One as he took when alive  
 an airing in a large jewelled cloister set with divers precious  
 97 stones. Hereupon the King of high renown gathered together  
 the whole Order of the bhikkhus dwelling on the island of  
 98 Laṅkā as well as a multitude of people and celebrated in the  
 town of Sirivadīhana in the manner described earlier, for  
 seven days a great festival for the Buddha.

99 Now when the Great king heard that unimaginable blessing  
 attaches to a kāṭhina<sup>3</sup> offering, he thought, joyful of  
 100 heart in faith: "In honour of the eighty greatly glorious  
 disciples<sup>4</sup> of him who is alone the bridge over the shoreless  
 terrible ocean of the circle of rebirths, who alone is the  
 banner of the Sakya clan<sup>5</sup>, whose dignity is venerated by the  
 101 people of the whole world, the Wise, the King of the wise,  
 the Master, the preserver of the world, the seer, who is master  
 (of his senses), the kinsman of the world<sup>6</sup>, the kinsman of

<sup>1</sup> P. *mahācittapāṭe . . . lekhāpesi*. Probably the picture was painted on a piece of stuff. In the Pūjīv. where the picture is also described, the expression *petikāḍa* is used, according to Chouan, "piece of cloth on which an image of Buddha is painted". Mhv. 27. 18 ff., relates that the picture after which the Lohapāśāda was built, was designed on a *pāṭa*.

<sup>2</sup> Lit. a Buddha figure like the Exalted One walking . . . taking an airing in a cloister. The *et* in 95 c is disturbing. Perhaps one should read *va* (= *cra*).

<sup>3</sup> See note to 41. 48. Parakkamabāhu's kāṭhina offering is also related in Pūjāv. and Rājāv.

<sup>4</sup> See note to 37. 176.

<sup>5</sup> Round the banner (*ketu*) the clan gathers; the word is therefore used figuratively for "leader, chief, the highest". Cf. skr. *manuvaṃṣaketu*, Raghuvansha 2. 33. The Buddha represents the acme of the Sakya clan.

<sup>6</sup> P. *lokabandhu*. So called on account of his world-embracing love.

the sun<sup>1</sup> — (in honour of his eighty disciples) I will give a 102 great and splendid kāthina offering of eighty (robes)." The wise 103 (prince) then called together the whole of the men and women 104 dwelling on the island of Laṅkā and made them all carry 104 out in the shortest time the whole of the work (for the making) 105 of (these) garments beginning with the preparation of the cotton. And on one day he gave away together with all the useful and important wares<sup>2</sup>, the eighty kāthina robes. But 106 after he had prepared all this and versed in offering, had distributed it among all the theras dwelling in Tambapāṇī<sup>3</sup>, 107 he held for the eighty great disciples, for each one of them, 107 on the same day, eighty great sacrificial feasts. In this way 108 he often bestowed many kāthinas on the Great community 109 and increased thereby his great merit.

And the King thought several times with longing joyful 109 through faith: "I will dedicate to the Enlightened One the royal dignity of Laṅkā." He adorned in fitting manner his 110 royal palace like the palace of the Lord of the gods and the town like the city of the gods. Then he placed the Tooth 111 Relic of the Great Sage (Buddha) on a costly lion's seat which he had fashioned in the royal abode, and with divers fly- 112 whisks and umbrellas, with divers jewelled crowns, with divers ornaments and robes, with divers heaps of jewels, with divers 113 elephants and steeds, with divers infantry and chariots, with divers beatings of drums, and divers sounds of shell trumpets, 114 with divers flags and pennons, with divers rows of banana trees, with divers bowls of milk<sup>4</sup>, with divers trees in blossom, 115 with divers splendidly fragrant wreaths, with divers superb

<sup>1</sup> P. *bhānumbandhu*. Because like the sun he illuminates the whole world, at the same time also because (cf. W., note), the princely house of the Sakyas is said to belong to the dynasty of the sun. The synonym *ādicca-bandhu* is a frequent name of the Buddha. Buddhaghosa explains it in *Suttanipāta* 915 by *ādiccassa gottabandhu* (HELMER SMITH, *Paramattha-jotikā*, p. 562).

<sup>2</sup> See 84. 39 and note.

<sup>3</sup> See note to 80. 25.

<sup>4</sup> P. *khirataṭaka*. Lit. "ponds of milk". The explanation is similar to that of *somnapokkharaṇī* in 85. 28. See the note.

116 palanquins, with divers kinds of excellent rice, with divers splendid kinds of cake, with divers superb lamps, frankincense and perfumes — with all these and other votive offerings  
 117 worthy of a king, he celebrated with care, after assembling the Great community of the bhikkhus dwelling on the island of Laṅkā for seven days a great sacrificial feast.

118 The best of kings also betook himself with his four-membered forces to the Samantakūṭa<sup>1</sup>, this forehead jewel of  
 119 the rock mountains. There he venerated the foot-print — to be venerated by gods and other beings — of the highest God  
 120 of gods<sup>2</sup>, the King of truth, the Master. Round about the monarch of the mountains he granted to the extent of ten gāvutas<sup>3</sup> the land rich in various precious stones and thickly  
 121 peopled with men and women, in religious devotion to the sacred foot-print and sacrificed to it again with ornaments of jewels.

122 Thus did the discerning King who had faith in the Buddha, amass a great quantity of meritorious works as bridge for the crossing of the ocean of the circle of rebirths, or as ladder with which to reach the highest heaven.

Here ends the eighty-fifth chapter, called «The Performance of all Kinds of Pious Works», in the Mahāvaṃsa, compiled for the sereno joy and emotion of the pious.

<sup>1</sup> The pilgrimage to Adam's Peak is mentioned in the Pūjāv.

<sup>2</sup> The title *devatideva* for the Buddha which already occurs in Mhv. I. 57, points again to a later stage of development. Cf. note to 50. 65.

<sup>3</sup> That is about 20 miles.

## CHAPTER LXXXVI

INCITEMENT TO THE PERFORMANCE OF ALL KINDS  
OF PIOUS WORKS

Therenpon the King thought: "Since I now wield the royal 1 dominion over all Laṅkā, it is indeed for me a heavy burden<sup>1</sup> to make pilgrimages hither and thither and to venerate 2 according to one's desire the hallowed places, to perform daily meritorious works and to care for the welfare of the world. But which of my dignitaries has the capacity to accumulate 3 a blessing of merit which would be equal to my aspiration and to care (likewise) for the welfare of the world? Now 4 there is my dignitary Devappatirāja by name, a true believer in the Buddha, the Doctrine and the Community. When he 5 striving after the dignity of a Guide to the path of salvation, made the firm resolve<sup>2</sup>, straightway there sprang from the three 6 eyes of a coconut planted by him three shoots. Once when he beheld a poor man he to whom mercy was the highest, gave him all his possessions together with children and wives 7 and uttered the wish: I will be a Buddha. Therefore when 8 he shall have heard my wish he will fulfil it." So thinking, he had him summoned and spake to him thus: "By swamp, 9 mountain and wilderness as though created by the powerful<sup>3</sup>,

<sup>1</sup> P. *bhāra*. The idea is this: the meritorious tasks which I have taken upon myself are too much for me alone. I must look round for helpers who will work with and for me with the same ideas and objects.

<sup>2</sup> Namely that the miracle described in 5 cd and 6 ab should be manifested as sign of the fulfilment of his wish to become one day a Buddha. Cf. 50, 65, 85, 119 and notes.

<sup>3</sup> P. *rasacattin*. As epithet of Māra, also in Thūpavamsa 65<sup>12</sup>, with

unwelcome Māra, the road leading to the Sumana mountain<sup>1</sup> is at many places obstructed, (made) inaccessible and causes difficulties to the people of the eighteen provinces who make 10 a pilgrimage thither in order to accumulate blessing by 11 venerating the footprint of the Sage. Do thou therefore make 12 it accessible. Further: I have heard that in the vihāra called 13 Hatthavanagalla<sup>2</sup>, at the spot where a Grand therā gifted 14 with miraculous powers, making through the majesty of his 15 merit earth and air to resound with thunder, attained the 16 dignity of an arahant, a five-storeyed pāsāda with a roofing 17 of golden bricks erected by King Upatissa<sup>3</sup>, has in the course 18 of time fallen into decay, so that now nought but the pillars 19 remain. Do thou also restore this in my name. And just as 20 King Nissanka laid out a garden of fruit-trees in the Bhimattithavihāra<sup>4</sup>, do thou also plant in the same manner in my name a large garden full of cocopalms and other trees". With these words he entrusted him with each single meritorious undertaking<sup>5</sup>.

18 Devappatirāja agreed with "aye!" and betook himself in the first place to Gaigāsiripura<sup>6</sup>. There he had fashioned a 19 magnificent image of Sumanadeva<sup>7</sup> furnished with all the fair bodily signs and decked it out with ornaments of gold and 20 jewels. But after that he wished to visit the Samantakūṭa<sup>8</sup>. He took the image of the god (Sumana) along with him in

reference to the *parauimmitarasarattidherū* who are Māra's retinue and are themselves described as Māras.

<sup>1</sup> Name of Adam's Peak.

<sup>2</sup> See 85. 73 and note.

<sup>3</sup> We do not know which Upatissa is meant, for neither the first king of this name (37. 179 ff.) nor the second (41. 6) has such a building ascribed to him.

<sup>4</sup> See 85. 81 and note. There is an account of the parks laid out by Kittinissañka in 80. 25 (and in the Rājāv.).

<sup>5</sup> We must of course write *tamtaupuññakriyāsu*.

<sup>6</sup> According to Pūjāv. == Gampala, now Gampola situated about 11 miles to the south of Kandy. Cf. 88. 48, 90. 107.

<sup>7</sup> The local guardian spirit of Adam's Peak. See Mhv. 1. 33.

<sup>8</sup> == Sumanakūṭa. See note to 60. 64.

festive procession<sup>1</sup>, set forth, betook himself first to the village 21 Bodhitala and began from here to build bridges. Here at the 22 mouth<sup>2</sup> he made a large and magnificent bridge of thirty-five cubits, and over the Khajjotanadī one of thirty cubits, likewise at Ullapanaggāma one of thirty-six cubits, at Ambaggāma 23 one of thirty-four cubits in length<sup>3</sup>. (The bridges were) very 24 strong and good so that elephants, horses, cattle and buffaloes could pass over them. And above each single embankment of 25 the bridges he had fair houses built, adorned with lofty pillars and the like, had invitations sent to numbers of bhikkhus, 26 gathered them together at different places, distributed among them abundant alms and celebrated a great sacrificial festival. He built rest-houses, finished the building of bridges, laid 27 down at the remaining places frequent stepping-stones<sup>4</sup>, had 28 the wilderness cleared and (in this way) a great road built. Then he betook himself to the Samantakūṭa, showed veneration to the sacred footprint, set up in the courtyard of the cetiya 29 of the sacred footprint the image of the god (Sumanā) and erected a mayūlapa for the holy footprint. Round about it he 30 had a wall built, and discerning as he was, had the mayūlapa fastened with strong chains to iron pillars in this wise to 31

<sup>1</sup> P. *ussavena saha*. Pājūv. has *peraharin* "with a procession".

<sup>2</sup> P. *mukhadvaramhi*. The mode of expression is not quite clear. W. translates: "and nigh unto the mouth of the Khajjota river he built a bridge . . . and . . . across the same river". This is indeed difficult to reconcile with the original text. We have to think of these bridges as causeways between the rice fields (cf. *setubandha* in v. 25). The numbers are, taken in order, roughly 52, 45, 54, 51 ft.

<sup>3</sup> Devappatirāja proceeds from Gampola up the left bank of the Mahaveliganga. Ullapanaggāma is the modern Ulapana (4 m from Gampola as the crow flies). Ambaggāma is the present Ambagamuva (6 m from Ulapana). The Khajjota river is called in Pājāv. *Kāṣamādīri-hoya* (we have to read thus instead of *-haya*). Sinh. *kāṣamādīri* means "glow-worm", like the P. *khajjota*. It is curious that the farther course of the road is not described. It probably led over to the valley of the Kadaliṅāma river and then ascended this valley. See note to 60. 66 and below v. 41.

<sup>4</sup> At marshy spots where no causeway could be built, to give firm foothold.

secure it, and then again he sacrificed for three days to the  
 32 sacred footprint with lamps and the like. He himself placed  
 on his head a lamp with fragrant oil, and venerating again  
 33 and again in the name of his Master the Great king and  
 walking round the sacred footprint with his right side towards  
 34 it, he spent the whole night. Hereupon he had this whole  
 occurrence in its true sequence from the beginning written  
 35 down on a lofty stone pillar and had this monument of the  
 glory of the Great king of kings Parakkamabāhu set up  
 36 with rejoicing. Thereupon he informed the King of the whole  
 occurrence by the mouth of a messenger and sent (the mes-  
 sage) off, since his wishes had been completely carried out.

37 After that Devappatirāja betook himself to the Hattha-  
 vanagalla-vihāra and had erected there at great cost, in the  
 38 manner commanded by the King, a three-storeyed pāsāda with  
 a lofty point and gave it over to the Grand master<sup>1</sup>, the wise  
 39 Anomadassin by name. Then he celebrated according to the  
 order of the Great king, an almsgiving and had a stone  
 inscription put up.

40 Thereupon the High dignitary betook himself to the  
 landing-place Bhīmatittha and built at the mouth of the  
 41 Kālanadī a bridge of eighty-six cubits<sup>2</sup>. Then after building  
 at Kadaliṣenagāma<sup>3</sup> a bridge of a hundred staves<sup>4</sup> and over  
 42 the river of Sālaggāma one of forty staves<sup>4</sup> and over the

<sup>1</sup> i.e. mahāsāmin. Cf. with this note to 53. 23. Anomadassin was the Superior (abbot) of the monastery.

<sup>2</sup> The Kālanadī is the present Kaluganga. The length of the bridge is about 129 ft., the mouth of the Kaluganga is however considerably wider than that.

<sup>3</sup> If Kadaliṣenagāma is the same as Kadaliṅgāma in 60. 66, the building of the bridge was a continuation of the road to Adam's Peak. The identity of the two is however very questionable. W. suggests Kehellenava in the Kalutara District, Rayigam Korale. Pñjāv. has Kēlsēnāva.

<sup>4</sup> The calculation according to *yatṭhi* "rod, measuring rod" here is curious. According to 78. 63 (cf. the note to the passage) a *yatṭhi* equals 5 *hattha*. The two measurements in v. 41 would accordingly be 750 and 300 ft. respectively.

Sālapāda swamp one of a hundred and fifty cubits<sup>1</sup> and in addition to these other bridges here and there at difficult places, and numerous parks and sermon halls, he celebrated 43 once more a great festival of almsgiving.

And again the High dignitary of the King had laid out 44 from the Bhīmatittha-vihāra as far as the landing-place (of the Kālanadi)<sup>2</sup> on a space a yojana broad, a great garden of 45 cocopalms, called after Parakkamabāhu, beautifully shady and rich in fruit. Then having all the work in the different 46 districts, such as the spinning of the cotton and so forth, undertaken and finished in a day, the highly-famed one 47 presented the bhikkhu community with six and twenty kathina robes and celebrated therewith a great sacrificial festival. Giving in like manner, he wandering around here and there, 48 presented the bhikkhu community once again with sixty-six kathina robes.

Then he had the whole of the vast forest called Ma- 49 hālabujagaccha<sup>3</sup> cleared by the roots, a fine village built there and in its neighbourhood a large grove of jack-trees<sup>4</sup> planted. 50 Then he erected there in the name of the King an image house of three storeys, surrounded by bodhi tree, cetiya, park 51 and encircling wall and celebrated a great sacrificial festival. Having thus performed in the name of his royal Master<sup>5</sup> much 52 meritorious work, he informed the King of everything on his return.

Now was the King filled with great affection for him. He 53 made the village called Mahālabujagaccha and other villages built by him his hereditary property and granted them to 54

<sup>1</sup> Roughly 225 ft. W. gives the number as "fifty". He has overlooked the *sata* in *satahatthakam*.

<sup>2</sup> Kālanadīttha, now Kalutara. Cf. 56. 12 and note. The distance between Bentota and Kalutara is 12 miles. The breadth of the plantation would be 9 miles, if the Indian yojana is meant.

<sup>3</sup> Pūjāv. *Mahadelgas nameū mahavanaya*. Sinh. *del* is the name of the bread-fruit tree *artocarpus incisa*. — P. *tabua*.

<sup>4</sup> Pūjāv. *kosvanayak*. Sinh. *kos* is *artocarpus integrifolia*. — P. *panasa*.

<sup>5</sup> P. *rājañānāmato* stands here in the same sense as *mahārājassa nāmato* in v. 32 or *mahārājaniyogato* in v. 39 or *rājanāmena* in v. 51.

- him. Thereupon he betook himself with him to the temple  
 55 of the Tooth Relic and spake thus in the midst of the  
 community: "This my most excellent dignitary has at all  
 times been true of heart to me and to the three (sacred) objects.  
 56 Therefore because activity for the welfare of the Buddha and  
 of the King was for him the highest, is he dear to me and  
 57 precious. Therefore will I with a gift dear to me make a  
 sacrifice to the Tooth Relic". And he dedicated the excellent  
 dignitary with wife and children to the Tooth Relic of the  
 Sage.
- 58 In such wise did the protector of the middle world from  
 that times make that same most excellent Devappatirāja  
 celebrate continually with many costly votive gifts, sacrificial  
 festivals to the world-extolled Triad of the jewels.

Here ends the eighty-sixth chapter, called «The Incitement  
 to the Performance of all Kinds of Pious Works», in the  
*Mahāvamsa*, compiled for the serene joy and emotion of the  
 pious.

## CHAPTER LXXXVII

## THE HANDING OVER OF THE BURDEN OF DOMINION

Now once upon a time when through the influence of evil 1  
 plunets a great heat arose in Laṅkā by which everything was  
 burnt up, when the corn withered and a famine was inevitable 2  
 and the whole of the people dwelling in Laṅkā were filled  
 with the greatest anxiety, the King gave orders for a splendid 3  
 festival to be held for the three (sacred) objects, for the cetiyas  
 and the bodhi trees and for the protectors Metteya and other  
 miracle-working highest deities<sup>1</sup> who were to be venerated by 4  
 various offerings, and even to turn the whole of Laṅkā into  
 one great festival<sup>2</sup>. After antecedent sacrificial ceremonies, he 5  
 gathered together the Great community of the bhikkhus, caused  
 them recite the Paritta<sup>3</sup> and bear the Tooth Relic of the 6  
 Great sage round the town in fitting manner, the right  
 side turned towards it, and made (in firm faith) the resolve:  
 the heavens shall rain. Therupon great clouds gathered on 7  
 every side, flashing with lightning and again and again  
 thundering, so that it was bliss for the ears of all people, 8  
 and they began to rain, destroying the glowing heat, making 9

<sup>1</sup> For *devatideva* used here of the future Buddhas at the head of whom stands Metteya, cf. note to 85. 119.

<sup>2</sup> The construction is difficult. W. merely translates freely according to the sense. We must take the words *kārāpetvāna* and *mahūssavay* twice, first *attamay* *mahūssavay* *kārāpetvāna* (namely for the things and persons mentioned in 3 and 4) and then *sabbay* *Laṅkām eka* *mahūssavay* *kārāpetvāna*. For this last cf. idioms like *rādha yev' eko* "pure murder and bloodshed", M. II. 244<sup>3</sup>; *ekobhāsā disā sabbā vidhāya*, Mhv. 74, 219, JāCo. V. 194<sup>5</sup> etc.

<sup>3</sup> See note to 46. 5.

joyful the people, driving away the famine, beautifying the country and reviving the corn<sup>1</sup>.

10 "By the power of the Buddha do these rain-clouds pour forth such rain, making joyful our hearts. Who therefore among gods, brahmas and men is capable of understanding how great are these excellent qualities of the Buddha? But our King also is mighty and strong in miraculous power, a king like 13 to him there has not been and there will not be." With such words ever and again repeated, the dwellers in Laṅkā praised the excellence of the Monarch of sages and also the excellence of their King.

14 While in this wise the King protecting Order and laity in 15 justice and filling with precious contents his own character, enjoyed for long the good fortune of the royal dignity, he on one occasion summoned to him along with his sister's son, Virabāhu, his five capable sons — Vijayabāhu, Bhuvanekabāhu<sup>2</sup>, 17 Tibhuvanamalla, Parakkamabāhu and Jayabāhu — and began in 18 this wise to give these six advice: "Dear ones, hearken to my words: there are here in the world these three (kinds) of sons: the low kind, those of like kind, those of higher kind<sup>3</sup>. 19 Now those who know not how to enjoy at its true worth<sup>4</sup> the wealth of their parents which has come to them as a family 20 heritage, but destroy it, as monkeys a wreath of flowers, and now live without wealth — the pious ancients have called 'sons 21 of a low kind'. But those who enjoy such possessions as they have received them in like manner as their fathers, protecting them as a family heritage, these ye must know are the '(sons)

<sup>1</sup> The removal of a drought by the exhibition of the Tooth Relic is also described in the Rājāv.

<sup>2</sup> The two brothers Vijayabāhu and Bhuvanekabāhu are mentioned together in an inscription found in Yāpahu. H. C. P. Bell., ASC. 1911-12 = S. P. Ill. 1915, p. 63.

<sup>3</sup> Lit. "lower (similar, higher) born or become". Cf. skr. *apajāta* and *anujāta*. The three kinds are distinguished in the same way in the Itivuttaka, p. 63<sup>1</sup>, 64<sup>2</sup>. For *arajāta* cf. also DhCo. I. 178<sup>2</sup>.

<sup>4</sup> P. *gutānurodhato*. W's translation "by a virtuous life" is too weak and too general. The idea is: they are not conscious of how valuable is the heritage that has come to them, they squander it frivolously.

of like kind.' But yet another kind I name — those who 22 besides the possessions taken over as family heritage, acquire thereto many other possessions and as prudent people enjoy 23 in happiness — these are known as the 'sons of higher kind'. From my father I have inherited alone (the province of) 24 Māyāraṭṭha<sup>1</sup> but have now again conquered the two other provinces and brought the three kingdoms completely under 25 one umbrella. All the Damiḷas who were for him invincible; I have vanquished and all the kings of the Vanni<sup>2</sup> dwelling 26 hero and there in mountain and wilderness I have brought over to my side. Having spread my fame everywhere also in 27 foreign lands, I have for long held sway in just fashion. I 28 have brought hither king's daughters from Jambūdipa with gifts and thereby made the nobles in the foreign land your kinsmen. The heroes of the Pāṇḍus and the Coṭas, the kings 29 sprung from the dynasties of the Sun and Moon, have sent me diadems and ornaments. Also have I gathered together 30 without censuring a mass of jewels which can be enjoyed not only by all of you here, but even in future time by seven generations of my descendants, even as the (god) Kubera 31 (gathered together) his nine treasures, the shell and the rest<sup>3</sup>. I have put down the evil-doers and protected the honest and 32 brought unanimity to the Order of the Enlightened One. Therefore have I become for my royal father a higher born 33 son, be ye also my sons, like me, higher born sons. As in 34 days ol' old the sixty thousand sons of King Sagara<sup>4</sup> of the race of Okkāka, built as many towns, divided all land in 35

<sup>1</sup> See notes to 81. 15 and 46.

<sup>2</sup> See note to 81. 11.

<sup>3</sup> The nine treasures of Kubera are, according to APTK (Skr. Eng. Dict. s. v. *naranidhi*; cf. also *Amarakosha*, ed. W. L. SHASTRI PANSIKAR, v. 142): 1) *mahāpadma* "great lotus flower", 2) *palma* "lotus flower", 3) *śāṅkha* "shell", 4) *makara* "dolphin", 5) *kacchapa* "tortoise", 6) *mu-*  
*kunda* "a particular precious stone", 7) *kuada* "jasmine", 8) *nīlu* "sapphire", 9) *kharva* "dwarf". The names are also personified as names of genii who are guardians of the treasures in question. Cf. HOPKINS, Epic Mythology, p. 143.

<sup>4</sup> For the legend of the Sāgaras, see *Muñhābhārata*, III. 106 ff.

Jambudīpa into sixty thousand parts and held sway each for  
 36 himself in harmony; — further as aforetime the ten brothers,  
 the kings, divided Jambudīpa into ten parts and ruled in wise  
 37 fashion: so shall ye, my sons, divide this Laikā and supporting<sup>1</sup>  
 38 one another as is fitting, hold sway in able fashion, but never  
 expose a weakness to the enemy." In this wise he admonished  
 his own sons and his sister's son.

39 Hereupon he summoned the Great community in great  
 numbers<sup>2</sup> and the King asked them: "Which of these six  
 40 princes, my sister's son and my own sons, is worthy of the  
 royal crown?" When the Great community heard these words  
 41 of the King, they expressed themselves thus: "O Great king  
 thy princely sons and this thy sister's son are all capable  
 42 men and well instructed; they are all practised in fighting,  
 crushers of the alien foe and worthy of the royal crown as  
 43 protectors of the laity and the Order. But thy eldest son  
 Vijayabāhu has from childhood believed with joy in the triad  
 44 of the jewels. His heart was ever set on the care of infirm  
 bhikkhus, he was trustworthy, grateful, gifted with the merits  
 45 of faith and discernment. He was a support for such as had  
 no support, ever abounding in pity for aged people and  
 46 suffering creatures. Many kinsmen by marriage of the bhikkhu  
 community who had become enslaved during the period of  
 47 alien dominion<sup>3</sup> and many other people he freed from their  
 slavery by the gift to their masters of gold, precious stones  
 48 and other valuables. Many thieves who had committed thefts  
 even in the royal palace, turned to him when punishment

<sup>1</sup> The reading of the MSS. *yāyantā* ought not to be changed into *sāsanta*. I assume that *yāyati* has here a causative meaning "to make go, to further, to support".

<sup>2</sup> Not "the chief priests and the people", as W. has it. *Mahājanap* is in apposition to *mahāsaṅgha*. The "people" have nothing to do with the question of the succession. In the sequel it is the priesthood alone who give the answer. Cf. also v. 71.

<sup>3</sup> P. *rājantara*. See note to 81. 1. It is the time of the reign of Māgha (and of Jayabāhu, 82. 27, 83. 19) that is meant. W. has misunderstood the passage in translating "when he took the government into his hands".

overtook them. They gave up their anguish and their fear 49 and unharmed, without suffering the loss of a limb<sup>1</sup>, their lives were spared. <sup>4</sup>When O King! he beheld the people who 50 went forth to each village to collect<sup>2</sup> the taxes due to the King, he gave his own money, freed thus from various dues 51 all people in distress and protected them continuously, versed in the protection of subjects. Also many of the Sihala kings 52 of the Vanni whom thou wast desirous of subduing, sought him out first and then only did they fearless pay their visit to thee. <sup>5</sup>Ye must henceforth serve for ever with devotion<sup>3</sup> Vijayabāhu 53 who will in the future protect the continuation of our race, <sup>54</sup> thus are the wives in the families of the dignitaries wont in all reverence to admonish their husbands. When fathers and 55 mothers, fain to listen to the sweet infant voices of their two year and three year old children, ask them: <sup>56</sup>Whom do ye serve? <sup>57</sup>they say: <sup>58</sup>We wish to serve Vijayabāhu. Children beaten in wrath by father and mother come to him and tell their woe. Then Vijayabāhu makes the parents come to him, 58 exhorts them in his pity to beat their children no longer and 59 lets them have from his own storehouse the necessary food for their various children. How canst thou O King, — even 60 as a man who gifted with seeing eyes, looks at the heavens where the full moon stands and yet asks where is then the full moon? — knowing as thou dost that in Vijayabāhu the 61 merits dwell which constitute the ornament of the royal dignity, yet ask the Order? Learn then O Great king! that he 62 possesses the lucky signs to hold sway not only over Laṅkā- 63 dīpa but even over Jambudīpa."

After the Ruler had heard of these and his many other 63 merits from the mouth of the community, his eyes became moist with tears of joy thereat. Full of contentment he 64 summoned to him his son Vijayabāhu, made him sit on a seat

<sup>1</sup> P. *aṅgahāni*.

<sup>2</sup> Wrongly translated by W. It is not a case of people embezzling the taxes, but of the revenue officers who wished to collect them.

<sup>3</sup> P. *sambhattā*. Cf. with this the term *bhatti* = skr. *bhakti*, note to 74. 243.

65 (like his own) near him, and then the Great king informed  
 him of all that must still be carried out for the laity and  
 66 the Order and which had not yet been done by himself. "The  
 Ratanāvalī-cetiya<sup>1</sup> destroyed by alien foes, thou shalt restore  
 67 and adorn it with a golden point. Polatthinagara, that splendid  
 ornament of all towns,<sup>2</sup> which was the ancient royal city of  
 68 the Sihala sovereigns, do thou restore as it was of yore, with  
 high walls and gate-towers, with four gates well distributed,  
 69 and surrounded by a deep trench; and do thou bring thither  
 to the former relic temple, fair as a heavenly palace, the two  
 70 reliques of the Tooth and the Bowl. In this royal city of former  
 kings I wish myself to celebrate the high festival of the royal  
 71 consecration. But do thou bring the whole bhikkhu com-  
 munity in great number<sup>3</sup>, dwelling in the three Sihala pro-  
 72 vinces, to Sahassatittha<sup>4</sup>, let them there after antecedent  
 sacrifice, celebrate in the Mahāvālikāganga the festival of ad-  
 mission to the Order and thus make the Order of the Victor  
 prosperous.

73 After speaking thus and otherwise of all that was to be  
 done for the laity and the Order, he gave over the burden  
 of government into his hands.

74 And further the King entrusted him with the five remaining  
 sons of the royal house, and the two sacred reliques of the holy  
 Sage, the Tooth and the Bowl, as also with the host of the  
 ascetics, with the group of all the dignitaries and also the land  
 of Lanikā.

Here ends the eighty-seventh chapter, called «The Handing  
 over of the Burden of Dominion», in the Mahāvaiśa, compiled  
 for the serene joy and emotion of the pious.

<sup>1</sup> See note to 80. 68.

<sup>2</sup> P. *sabbapuritilaka*. The word *tilaka* ("badge of a sect") has here  
 (as so often also skr. *tilaka*) a figurative meaning "ornament, adornment".

<sup>3</sup> For *bhikkhusaṅgham mahājanam* cf. note to v. 89.

<sup>4</sup> Now Dastota, a ford over the Mahaveliganga south of Polonnaruva.  
 That the bhikkhus were fond of performing their ceremonies in a  
 building erected in the water at some distance from the bank is well  
 known. Dastota was at that time a spot considered especially sacred  
 where such ceremonies were performed with great pomp, as is shown  
 also in 89. 47 ff.

## CHAPTER LXXXVIII

## THE REBUILDING OF PULATHINAGARA

Fearless in heart, King Vijayabāhu gave his consent and 1 took over the burden of the government. Now he thought: 2 "I will show my father so long as he is in life, that I am a son of the higher kind." And he probed ever further: "Who 3 is there now fitted to be the element 'friend' among the seven elements of government, as ruler, minister, friend and the like<sup>1</sup>: trustworthy, a clever counsellor, a comrade in misfortune, who 4 speaks the truth, who is good to me?"- And he realised: 5 "There is the Ādipāda Virabāhu, the son of my father's sister, well-bred, adorned with virtues, skilled in all tasks. Since the time when we played (together) in the sand till 6 to-day he has showed the highest confidence in me and in (all) good people. He cannot bear to stand anywhere if he 7 does not see me, and I also cannot bear to take a seat without seeing him. He is at pains even as I, to further the laity and 8 the Order, richly dowered with mental and bodily power. Therefore is he fitted for the element friend". He summoned 9 him to him and entrusted him with the position of a devoted friend.

<sup>1</sup> The *satta rajjangāni* are enumerated in Abhpd. 360. They are: *sāmi* "ruler, monarch", *amacca* "minister", *sakhā* "friend", *kosa* "state treasure", *duggam* "fortress", *vijitam* "land, kingdom" and *balam* "army". In the Kauṭilya, they are enumerated at the beginning of Book 6 as the (*sapta*) *prakṛtayāḥ*: *svāmyamātyajanapadadurgakosadāṇḍamitrāṇi*. Why J. J. MEYER in his translation should have left out *kosa* (p. 397) I cannot understand. Cf. ib. p. 399<sup>20</sup>, as well as R. SNAMASASTRY, Kauṭilya's Arthaśāstra, trsl., p. 319. In Sunhūti's Abhidhanappadipikāśuci a verse is quoted from Kāmandaki in which the same terms are grouped together.

10 Then he thought: "Now I must perform a meritorious work — splendid, sublime, rejoicing the heart. I was entrusted 11 with the two relics, the Tooth and the Bowl. For these I must now build a new temple. On the other hand, the an- 12 cient relic temple erected by my royal forefathers<sup>1</sup>, has fallen 13 into decay. This I will restore." With this consideration, he had fetched from all parts many groups of artists experienced in 14 every branch of art and many other workmen; and erecting new structures doubly as fair to look at as the former buildings, 15 he completed the whole temple of the Tooth Relic, so that it was beauteous as a heavenly palace; placed there the 16 two relics of the Enlightened One and ordered his own guard to institute day by day a great sacrificial festival richer than 17 aforetime, for the relics. From this time onward the King succeeded in making the love of his royal father (for him) increase continuously, twofold and threefold.

18 Thought the Ruler: my royal father shall have no grief arising from the separation from his sons, and he made his 19 two younger brothers, Parakkamabāhu and Jayabāhu, dwell 20 continually near their father. Hereupon he summoned his younger brother Tilokamalla and placed under his command 21 all the Sihala troops quartered in the space between the town 22 of Jambuddoṇi and the southern sea and made him take up his abode in Mahāvatthalagāma<sup>2</sup>, to protect his royal father 23 on the south. Then he reflected: "In the north, foes coming from the opposite coast are wont to land in Khuddavāligāma. 24 Who is so fitted to protect this side — perilous, since it is here that fighting is wont to begin — as my brother, the Prince

<sup>1</sup> P. *pitrājāhi*. W. translates "by the King, my father". He evidently regards *rājāhi* as a plur. maiest. I believe however, that the term applies to Vijayabāhu III. and Parakkamabāhu II. What is meant is the relic temple in the Vijayasundara-vihāra in Jambuddoṇi which is said in 85. 91-2 to have been built by Vijayabāhu III. and renewed by Parakkamabāhu II.

<sup>2</sup> Perhaps identical with Vattalagāmu mentioned in 81. 58. The difference in the writing may possibly be explained in this way that *vattala* is the pure Sinhalese form, while *rathala* is adapted to the Pāli.

Bhuvanekabāhu?" The Ruler summoned him therefore, made 25 over to him the great army that stood in the north and 26 commanded him to take up his abode in Sundarapabbata<sup>1</sup>, in order to protect his royal father from this quarter. But the 27 King himself armed, marched with Virabālu hither and thither, crushed all villains, made Lañkā free from the briers (of the 28 enemy) and after getting his father's permission, he set forth with the intention of restoring Pulatthinagara.

Now at this time the Great king Parakkamabāhu, as if 29 borne on the great wave of his love for his son, set about accompanying his son, full of sympathy, travelling everywhere 30 after him, although the son did not wish it. Then the son ever 31 and again forced his father in reverent manner to return, he himself going on his way. Then his father issued the order: 32 "All people who cherish love for my son let them accompany him." When they heard these words of his, then all the high 33 dignitaries of the King and all the generals, all the great 34 hero warriors and all the elephant drivers, all the riders and all the charioteers were filled with the greatest joy. "Now our 35 Bodhisatta Vijayabāhu<sup>2</sup> sets forth to restore the royal city of Pulatthinagara. If he goes we shall go with him at once." Thus 36 they spake and started forth well equipped to accompany him. When a certain number of dignitaries, soldiers and others, 37 out of laziness, were not minded to go, their wives said to them: "Ye, our lords, may come with us or not, at any rate 38 we are going with the King who seeks the best, and we shall 39 dwell with him in the newly restored, splendid town". And they set forth therewith on their way before them. Even 40 children deserted their fathers, if they would not go with them and followed the King. When the King beheld the great 41 crowd of people setting forth, each deserting his village, his house and his comfortable possessions, he persuaded them 42 again and again in his great anxiety, and induced all those

<sup>1</sup> The same as Subhapabbata or Subhugiri = Yāpahu.

<sup>2</sup> The influence again of the Mahāyāna. Cf. 50. 65, 85. 119, 86. 5. Also in Rājaratn. and Nik.-s. the King is called Bōsat Vijayabāhu.

43 whom it was right to induce, to return. Then he betook himself with the four-membered army in the desired strength,  
 44 to the great and loftily situated fortress of Vātagiri<sup>1</sup>. After building a splendid royal palace on the summit of this mountain,  
 45 surrounded by an extraordinarily high wall, he stored there in case of need, the whole of the great treasure given over  
 46 to him by his royal father. Thereupon he built on the same high rock a fine monastery for the community, invited the  
 47 Grand thera, the head of the Mahānettappāsāda-shrine<sup>2</sup>, made over to him the splendid monastery, celebrated a great sacrificial festival and established a regular offering.

48 Hereupon the King went forth to Sumanakūṭa, venerated the footprint of the Sage (Buddha) and betook himself thereafter to Gaṅgāsiripura<sup>3</sup>. There in the ancient vihāra that bore the name Nigamaggāmapāsāda, he saw to the restoration of what was ruinous and decayed, established for the bhikkhus dwelling there a regular almsgiving and came thereafter to Sindhūravāna. Here the King erected the vihāra called Vanaggāmapāsāda and after building there in the name of his royal father<sup>4</sup> the pariveṇa called Abhayarāja, he granted it the various articles of equipment, villages, fields and so forth.  
 53 Then the Monarch betook himself to the splendid Hatthigiri-pura<sup>5</sup>. While here in the great vihāra built by his princely uncle (Bhuvanekabāhu), he gazed along with Prince Virabāhu<sup>6</sup> and his army again and again at the ever to be honoured spot where his corpse was laid (on the pyre), he felt anguish and gained there again and again the inner conception of imper-

<sup>1</sup> Vākirigalla in the Kegalla District. Cf. note to Mhv. 58. 31.

<sup>2</sup> A Mahānettappabbata is mentioned in Mhv. 50. 74.

<sup>3</sup> Gampola. See 86. 18.

<sup>4</sup> The pariveṇa is not called after his father Parakkamabāhu II. Here it is the case of a *patti* (see note to 42. 50). The merit is transferred to the dead king.

<sup>5</sup> Kurunegala. See 85. 62 where mention is made of the building of the Vihāra by Bhuvanekabāhu, the younger brother of Parakkamabāhu II.

<sup>6</sup> Cf. 83. 41 ff.

manency<sup>1</sup>. Hereupon he erected there a splendid, three-storeyed 56 image-house and had made for it a great image of the Buddha. Then having had further a fine statue of his uncle fashioned, 57 he set it up there adorned with all ornaments. The Ruler 58 assigned (his foundation) fine maintenance villages fitted for their purpose, lying around the image-house, as well as numbers of people for service, and decreed for it (the foundation) the 59 name Bhuvanekabāhu-pariveṣa, using for it the name of that (uncle). Then after he had settled the town (Hatthigiri) densely 60 with men and women, he had it enclosed with wall, moat and so forth. Thereafter the brave King set forth and marched 61 with the vast four-membered army to Subhagiripura<sup>2</sup>.

At that time the Lord of men Candabhānu, formerly<sup>3</sup> beaten 62 after hard fighting, having collected from the countries of the Pandyas and Colas and elsewhere many Damiḷa soldiers, 63 representing a great force, landed with his Jāvaka army in Malinītītha. After the King had brought over to his side the 64 Sihalas dwelling in Padī, Kurundi<sup>4</sup> and other districts, he marched to Subhagiri. He set up there an armed camp and 65 sent forth messengers with the message: "I shall take Tisihala<sup>5</sup>; I shall not leave it to thee. Yield up to me therefore together with the Tooth Relic of the Sage, the Bowl Relic and the 66 royal dominion. If thou wilt not, then fight." Thereupon 67 Vijayabāhu summoned the Ruler<sup>6</sup> Virabāhu, took counsel with him, had a strong force equipped for him and spake: "Hurrah, 68 to-day both of us shall see the strength of our arms." Then the two set forth<sup>7</sup>, surrounded the great army of Candabhānu on 69 all sides and fought a great battle, terrible as a combat of Rāma. Then were the hostile warriors subdued in battle and 70

<sup>1</sup> P. *aniccalakkhana*. This is a term drawn from the technique of *jhāna*, meditative absorption. See HEILER, Die buddhistische Versenkung, p. 18 ff.

<sup>2</sup> I. e. Yāpahu.

<sup>3</sup> Cf. 83. 36 ff.

<sup>4</sup> See note to 83. 16.

<sup>5</sup> See note to 81. 46.

<sup>6</sup> Virabāhu has here and in v. 90 the title of *mahipati*, just as Bhuvanekabāhu in v. 79 has the title of *rājan*.

<sup>7</sup> Note the change of subject in the case of *vatvāna* and *nikkhamitvā*.

weaponless the soldiers of the foe<sup>1</sup> wandered around, prayed  
 71 and implored, tortured by fear, were benumbed, trembled,  
 begged for mercy in the fight, whined and grieved full of  
 72 terror. In their distress certain of the foe fled to the forest,  
 73 others to the sea, others again to the mountains. After  
 Vijayabāhu had thus fought and slain many soldiers, he sent  
 74 the Lord of men Candabbānu flying defenceless. But the  
 loveliest women of his court and all the elephants and horses,  
 75 the swords and many other weapons, the entire treasure, the  
 trumpets of victory, the umbrella of victory, the drum of  
 victory, the banner of victory — all these he sent to his father.

76 Having in this way fought the fiery battle, conquered the  
 province and won the victory, he united Laṅkā under the  
 umbrella of his dominion.

77 Herupon he had this town (Subhugiri) also surrounded  
 by a high rampart and a trench and built there a superb  
 78 royal palace. Having finished it, he established then in that town  
 a regular almsgiving for the great bhikkhu community. Then he  
 79 spake encouragingly to his younger brother King Bhūvanekabāhu and made him take up his abode as before in Subhapabbata.

80 Now the Ruler betook himself to Anurūlhapura and there  
 round about the Thūpārāma and all the other sacred places  
 81 he had the mighty forest — that was like a stronghold created  
 by Māra — felled and a wall erected which was as a bridge  
 82 over the stream of his hopes. Then after the Ruler had had  
 these sacred places embellished by new buildings, he celebrated  
 83 a great sacrificial festival. But as he wished to complete the  
 work of restoration on the Ratanāvali-cetiya<sup>2</sup>, begun but not  
 84 finished by his royal father, he assembled with the greatest  
 speed all people dwelling in the town from the places where  
 85 individuals sojourned, ordered numbers of skillful workmen  
 hither and having established for the community at whose head  
 86 stood the chief Thera of the Senānātha-pariveṇa<sup>3</sup> a regular

<sup>1</sup> *Veribhatā tada* in 71 d takes up again the *tada veriyodhā* in v. 70 a b.

<sup>2</sup> See 87. 66.

<sup>3</sup> This is the building erected by the general Kuṭṭhaka under Udaya II; and called in Mhv. 51, 88, *Senasenāpati-pariveṇa*.

almsgiving', he appointed the Thera to look after the work of restoration. Thereupon the Monarchs of the Vanni who were living in Patīthāraṭṭha, sought out the Ruler, bringing him many gifts. He (on his part) presented them with rocking chairs, white umbrellas, fly-whisks and other insignia for the great kings of the Vanni people. Therewith he made them all contented, charged them to protect the town (Anurādhapura) and betook himself from there to Pulatthinagara.

There the Monarch summoned to him the ruler Virabāhu: "We shall embellish this town, originally the royal city, and fill the universe with the eamphor perfume of the exuberant abundance of our glory." After these words he took counsel with him and spake thereupon: "In the town called Pulatthinagara there are now pāśādas, image-houses, vihāras, pariveyas, cetiyas and reli temples, walls, gate-towers, houses of the adhayoga and of the hammiya kind<sup>2</sup>, māṇḍapas, sermon halls, temples to deities and other buildings. Some of these stand erect, covered with grass, trees and whatever else has grown upon them. Others have collapsed without support as the whole of their pillars perished; others again alas! will fall, bending under the weight of walls cracked from top to foot, because other support is wanting. Some of these, through decay and old age are like greybeards, and unable to stand erect, they become more bowed from day to day. With many the joists are broken<sup>3</sup> and their pinnacles destroyed<sup>4</sup>, with others the roofs have decayed<sup>5</sup>.

<sup>1</sup> *Nīṭṭhapeti* means here "to fix, to establish", the object *dānaruṭṭam* being governed by it.

<sup>2</sup> I leave the two terms *adhayoga* and *hammiya* (skr. *harmya*) untranslated. Both are names for particular types of dwelling-houses which we are unable to describe further.

<sup>3</sup> P. *chinnatulāyatti*. I believe that *tulāyatti* (lit. balance-beam) means the horizontal beams, while *gopānasī* (v. 98; cf. 87. 141) means the beams of the roostree. The construction of the compound is: "many are such in which . . . are broken off."

<sup>4</sup> P. *nāṭṭharūṭakākā*. The original meaning of *vīṭakka* which is omitted in the PTS. P. D. is according to Abhp. "dovecote".

<sup>5</sup> P. *vidhastaravālābhī*. This is an interesting voucher for *valabhi* which

98 and the bricks are broken. In others by the breakage of the damaged roof-tree the bricks of the roof have fallen and only  
 99 walls and pillars remain. In others again the gates have fallen in and the hinging of the gate-posts destroyed; in others again the steps have become loosened and the railings have fallen  
 100 in. Of many all that can be seen are parts still hanging together<sup>1</sup> of the original foundation wall: of many not even  
 101 the place where they once stood is now to be seen. Of what use are many words? This town which has lost all its glory we shall again make glorious. The Ruler must give his consent.  
 102 Then later he may celebrate the royal consecration in the splendid city." With this charge he sent a messenger to his father.

103 When the King heard these tidings, his heart was full of joy, and as he himself had cherished the wish to restore the 104 original royal town, he summoned the circle of the great dignitaries from every quarter, and issuing his commands to all the 105 inhabitants of Lankā, he brought together the workers in iron, 106 the turners, bamboo workers<sup>2</sup>, blacksmiths, potters, goldsmiths, 107 painters, porters, workmen, slaves, the *candālas* who understood 108 work for hire, the bricklayers, workers in stucco, carpenters 109 and the guilds of masons, and in addition to these all blacksmith's tools, such as bellows, hammers, tongs, sledge-hammers, 110 anvils, as well as many sharp saws, axes, hatchets, (wedges) for splitting trees and for crushing stones, knives, chisels<sup>3</sup>, shovels, mats, baskets and so forth. All these appliances he gave carefully to the people and also much money, such as

occurs in the canon (M. I. 175<sup>16</sup>, 177<sup>17</sup>), only in the compound *vabhūratha* which must be translated "covered-in carriage".

<sup>1</sup> Thus I translate *nibandhava*. In Skr. it means figuratively at least a joint of words, a compound.

<sup>2</sup> In the Samyutta Comm. (I. 193<sup>18</sup> of the Siamese ed.) *venakule* is explained by *vīcākule*.

<sup>3</sup> P. *kotisa*. In skr. *kotiṣa* means "harrow" according to BR., but this cannot be the case here. Some kind of pointed instrument must be meant (cf. *koti* "point").

pearls, precious stones and the like and sent it with the people<sup>1</sup> to his royal son. Thereupon in the devastated land, long desolate, King Vijayabāhu, happy at heart, had the water system — tanks, ponds, dykes, pools and the like — in which the embankments had given way, and which were deprived of their deep water, dammed up as before, filled with deep water, covered with divers lotus blossoms and stocked with all kinds of fish. Then he had many valuable fields which had always been ground on which grew every kind of corn, newly planted, had all kinds of crops grown here and there and made the whole fair land prosperous. And the Ruler restored superb Pulatthinagara as it had been aforetime, surrounded by a moat, deep as the sea, with a fine chain of walls like to the Cakkavāla mountains<sup>2</sup>, provided with divers vihāras, surrounded by various monastic parks with divers bathing-ponds, filled with a variety of cetiyas, sprinkled with various nikkha-yogas<sup>3</sup>, adorned with divers pūsādas, built over with a variety of hammiyas<sup>4</sup>, embellished with divers maṇḍapas, provided with all sorts of temples to deities, resplendent with every kind of gate-towers, fair with the rows of divers houses, boasting a variety of streets, with four well-distributed gates, with fine squares and road-crossings.

In this fashion the King had the town of Pulatthinagara — comparable to the city of Indra<sup>4</sup> — restored, so that it surpassed Mithilā, subdued Kāncipurī, laughed to scorn Sāvatthī, subdued Madhurā, turned to shame Bārāṇasī, reduced Vesālī to nothing and made Campāpuri<sup>5</sup> tremble with her glory.

<sup>1</sup> P. *saha senāya*. *Senā* means here the staff of workers raised by the King.

<sup>2</sup> These are the mountains which are supposed to surround the earth which is conceived of as a disk. Cf. Skr. *cakkavāla*, -vāda, BR. s. v. 2; W. KIRFEL, Kosmographie der Inder, p. 186.

<sup>3</sup> For *addhayoga* and *hammiya* see above note to v. 93.

<sup>4</sup> Amarāvatī, see 80. 5. The town is described in the *Mahābhārata*, III. 1714 ff.

<sup>5</sup> A series of the most famous Indian towns. 1) Mithilā, capital of the Videhas, now northern Bihar; 2) Kāncipurī, in Southern India

Here ends the eighty-eighth chapter, called «The Restoration of Pulatthinagara», in the *Mahāvamsa*, compiled for the serene joy and emotion of the pious.

on the Coromandel Coast, one of the seven sacred towns of India. 3) Śrūvastī, capital of the Kośala country in present Nepal (T. W. RUSS DAVIDS, Buddhist India, p. 40); 4) Madhurā, here probably the town Mathurā on the Jumna, chief locality of the Śūrasena, mentioned AN. II. 57 (BR. s. v. *madhura* 3 c); 5) Bārāṇasī, now Benares; 6) Vaiśālī, in the Videha country, in Buddhist times the chief locality of the Licchavi clan, like Sāvatthī often mentioned in the sacred Canon; 7) Campā, in the territory of the Aṅgas, now Bhīgalpur on the Ganges, Bihār. Note the sacred number seven. See also the two notes to 89. 4.

## Chapter LXXXIX

### DESCRIPTION OF THE FESTIVAL OF THE KING'S CONSECRATION AND OTHER FESTIVALS

The King spake: "This Pulatthinagara is now thus restored 1 as before, dowered with all that belongs to a city. This town is 2 now radiant with happiness, splendour and beauty. She has surpassed Jetuttara and will now surpass Sāgalā. After van- 3 quishing Suṇisumāragiri, what need hath she to care for Sā- keta? Ha! even Rūjagaha she wishes to capture as it is. She 4 has destroyed Samkassa and now scorns Indapatta. She dares to challenge<sup>1</sup> Kapilavatthu<sup>2</sup>. Therefore shall the King, the 5

<sup>1</sup> P. *sampkyayu ussahate kattuṇe*. I think that *sampkyā* here is == skr. *samkhyā* and means "light" (BR. s. v. 4). The Col. Ed. reads *sakhyayu* and W. translates: "seeketh friendship with K." This I think is not so good, as *ussahate* has then no meaning. It looks as if the author here as also in 88. 121, by the accumulation of synonyms for the term "surpass", wishes to show his intimacy with the rules of alarikūra. Cf. the expressions in Daydin's *Kūvyālara* 2. 62 ff. with those used in this passage.

<sup>2</sup> The author returns here, repeating himself, to the idea already treated in the final strophe of chap. 88. He displays his geographical knowledge which he apparently borrows from the Abhidhānappadīpiki where in v. 200 and 201 all the towns named by him are enumerated: 1) Jetuttara, often mentioned in the Jātakas as the capital of the Sivi country (skr. *sībi*). Cf. FAESBØLL Jäl., Index; 2) Sāgalā, abode of the King Milinda (Milp. ed. TRENECKNE, p. 1); 3) Suṇisumāragiri, according to M. I. 95, II. 91; S. III. 1, IV. 116; A. II. 61 etc. a town in the country of the Bhaggas (skr. *Bharga*); 4) Sūketa, name of the town Ayodhyā (now Oudh) in the Kosala country. M. I. 149 and often otherwise in the Nikāyas and the Jālaka book; 5) Rājagaha, capital of Māgadha; 6) Samkassa (skr. *Sāmkasya*), mentioned in the Jātakas, according to JāCo. IV. 265<sup>23</sup> thirty yojanas from Sāvatthī, was situated

chief of kings, even as Sakka, the overlord of the gods, did  
 6 in the city of Sakka<sup>1</sup>, enter this city in all his majesty to  
 celebrate the festival of the royal consecration." Therewith  
 7 he sent a messenger to his father. When the King heard  
 from the mouth of the messenger the uninterrupted narrative,  
 he rejoiced greatly and betook himself at the head of his  
 8 army with all the mighty pomp worthy of a king, from the  
 town of Jambuddoī to the chief capital (of the kingdom).  
 9 And King Vijayabāhu went the distance of a gāvuta<sup>2</sup> towards  
 him and accompanied the Great king to the royal capital.  
 10 For seven days he celebrated in the town the high festival  
 of the royal consecration and carried it out in the (right)  
 11 sequence to the end. But after he had made over the Northern  
 province<sup>3</sup> to Vīrabāhu and made him take up his abode in  
 12 the prosperous royal city, he declared: I shall bring the  
 relics of the Sage to this royal city, and betook himself with  
 his royal father to the town of Jambuddoī.  
 13 Hereupon the King gathered together a great multitude  
 of the inhabitants of Lankā and had the great highway from  
 14 the town of Jambuddoī to splendid Pulatthinagara, five yo-  
 janas<sup>4</sup> wide made level and throughout, always at a distance  
 15 of half a yojana, he had a costly rest-house built, gracefully  
 (adorned) with festive banners, rows of bananas, triumphal  
 16 arches and the like. Thereupon he placed the two relics of  
 the great Seer, Tooth and Bowl, on a high chariot which was  
 17 fair in its splendour as a heavenly chariot. With numerous

to the west of Kanyakubja (now Kannauj) between the Ganges and the  
 Jumna (cf. Vin. II. 299); 7) Indapatta (skr. *Indraprastha*), town in the  
 Kuru territory on the site of the present Delhi; 8) Kapilavatthu,  
 capital of the Sākyas in the territory of the present Nepal, birthplace  
 of Buddha.

<sup>1</sup> See note to 88. 121.

<sup>2</sup> About two miles.

<sup>3</sup> The expression is *rat̄ham uttamay*, quite in the sense of Rājarat̄tha  
 or Patiṭṭhārat̄tha.

<sup>4</sup> According to the context, this would be the whole distance from  
 Jambuddoī to Pulatthinagara. But the distance is much greater, about  
 75 miles, as the crow flies (5 y. = 45 miles).

groups of the bhikkhu community who, paying homage, encircled<sup>1</sup> on every side the incomparable, splendid, festive chariot, of the sacred relics, as if they were the hosts of the Brahmas 18 who surround the sacred chariot of Brabma, he set forth from the superb city, great Jambuddoqi. The sacrificial festival which he arranged<sup>2</sup> was beautified by the people entrusted 24 with the various duties<sup>3</sup> who letting unceasingly their cries of Hail! resound, went before or followed after<sup>4</sup> and bore with them for the sacrificial festivnl umbrellas of gold and pearl, 19 golden fly-whisks, inlaid with pearl, banners of gold and pearl, wreaths set with gold and pearl, further golden and silver 20 jars<sup>5</sup>, fans of gold and silver, golden and silver vases, golden and silver shells, golden and silver bowls, golden and silver 21 urns, golden and silver basins, golden and silver mirrors, golden and silver banana trees, tiny shells of gold and silver, 22 golden and silver horses, golden and silver elephants, as well 23 as countless silver and golden lamp-stands and the rest. The festival was surrounded by rows of elephants excellent by 25 reason of the elephant ornaments by which they were o'er-spread<sup>6</sup>, by rows of steeds worth seeing for the abundance of every kind of equine ornament, by the ranks of heroic warriors 26 who with divers weapons in their hands and wearing warlike ornament, played their war games, by the ranks of princes, 27

<sup>1</sup> Thus I translate *savamānehi*. This *savamānehi* is like the attribute to *bhikkhusowghagānehi*, also to *brahmasamūnehi* and governs the acc. *rathau* in 17 n as well as in 17 ll.

<sup>2</sup> This is taken from v. 36 a *mahāpūjāpi pavattento*. The following accusatives are attributes of *mahāpūjāpi*: *manoharam* (v. 24 d), *parisevitai* (v. 27 d), *monditai* (v. 28 d), *parivoritai* (v. 30 d), *parighositai* (v. 32 d), *pasasitai* (v. 34 b), *thomitai* (v. 34 c) and *parisevitai* (v. 35 d).

<sup>3</sup> I. *tay-tay-dhnrā-niyuttēhi* (v. 24 c). The people meant are those who have particular functions to perform at a sacrificial festival.

<sup>4</sup> Taken from vv. 23-24, *purato pacchato pi ca . . . gacchanthēhi . . . manusschi*. *Gahetrā* in v. 23 c by which the accusatives in v. 19 to 23 a b are governed, is subordinate to *gacchanthēhi*. The people carry their votive offerings with them in the procession.

<sup>5</sup> Should not the reading here be *kusihē pi* rather than *kumbhehi*?

<sup>6</sup> Lit.: "by the outspreading (*vitthāra*) of the elephant ornaments."

28 nobles and councillors who wore festive clothing and flaunted manifold ornament. The glory (of the festival) was enhanced  
 29 by the cries of people who thirsting for merit shouted O hail! O hail! O hail! The festival was surrounded by serried rows  
 30 of lay sisters and lay brethren who led pure lives and who in their zeal each for himself pressed forward bearing flowers  
 31 and the like as offerings. Around it raged the uproar of sturdy palace servitors who were ever and again now here  
 32 now there, well beaten in fun by other sturdy palace servitors as if they were people fighting out a mighty quarrel with one  
 33 another. It was filled with the songs of praise<sup>1</sup> of the bards who sang festive songs, making thereto on the live instruments  
 34 fine music which spread abroad and charmed<sup>2</sup> the hearers, also with the songs of the minstrels who again and again let  
 35 their praises resound. In devotion there surrounded it the dancers and the actors who performed dances and sang songs  
 36 delightful to see and to hear. Thus performing by degrees in perfect order the high sacrifice, he was wont when in moving  
 37 along the decorated road, he<sup>4</sup> came to the previously erected rest-houses, to set up the relies in each of these, (he)  
 38 performed each time a high festival, started again from each (rest-house), continued ever on his way and so brought by degrees the relies of the Prince of the wise to the royal capital<sup>3</sup>.

39 Then after the King had turned the whole city into a single great place of festival — at a favorable moment when  
 40 constellation, day and hour were auspicious, in the ancient, decorated relic temple, fair as the palace of the King of the  
 41 gods — most splendid of all temples — he solemnly and in careful manner placed the two relies on a costly throne embellished by all manner of jewels. From that time onwards,

<sup>1</sup> Lit.: "was praised by . . . and beheld by . . ."

<sup>2</sup> P. *saraniyataram*, lit. "very well worth hearing".

<sup>3</sup> Vv. 16-38 form one sentence. The principal verb is *ānayi* (v. 38 d with the immediately preceding gerunds). The gerunds *sañchāpetvā* v. 16 c and *nikkhamitvā* v. 18 c are subordinate to *parattento mahāpūjām* (along with the attributes belonging to it; cf. notes to vv. 18 and 24/19).

day by day more, with the four kinds of perfume<sup>1</sup>, with fine, fragrant incense, with divers kinds of blossoms of the punnāga, 43 nāga, pūga<sup>2</sup> and other<sup>3</sup> trees, with countless camphor lamps of precious stones giving a brilliant light, with rows of candle-labra on which burned fragrant oil, with dishes full of the finest rice prepared with sweet milk, with heaps of food 44 composed of sweet-smelling rice like to the Kelāsa<sup>3</sup> mountain, with all hard and soft foods and with all that can be drunk or sipped and other (things) the wise Prince celebrated for 45 another three months a world-rejoicing sacrificial festival for the relics, amid the clang of the shell trumpets<sup>4</sup> and thus brought (the festival) to a close.

Then spake the Ruler: "Let us perform in Sahassatittha 47 a flameless festival for admission to the Order<sup>5</sup>." He first sent 48 the Monarch Virabāhu thither. There he made him erect besides several thousand rooms of sojourn for the community<sup>6</sup>, a lofty 49 house of festival resting on sixty pillars<sup>7</sup> which gleamed with manifold ornament and possessed arches covered with cloth<sup>8</sup>. Hereupon he had prepared the divers objects for the ceremony 50 of admission to the Order and all the four articles of use. And then after the Vanni kings who in this and that province, 51 in Patīthītratīlin, in Rohaya and so forth, had collected with great care, much rice with the divers ingredients such as fish, 52 meat and the rest, (had gathered together) great loads of grain, sour and sweet milk, butter and so forth, also honey, 53 treacle, thickened sugar juice, raw sugar, lump sugar and the like, as well as all things fitting for an offering to the Great

<sup>1</sup> According to Abhp. 147, the *cattujātigandhā* are 1) *kuṇkuma* "saffron"; 2) *yuvanayupupphu* (?); 3) *tagara* = ske. *tagara* *tabernae-montana* corouaria and a fragrant powder prepared from the blossoms of the shrub; 4) *turukku* = skr. *turuska* "incense".

<sup>2</sup> *Rottleria tinctoria* (*kamala* tree), *mesua ferrea* (*ironwood* tree), *areca catechu* (*areca palm*).

<sup>3</sup> See note to 63. 41. The tertium comparationis is the white colour.

<sup>4</sup> Lit.: "together with the shell trumpet festival".

<sup>5</sup> See above note to 87. 71. <sup>6</sup> P. *saṅghārūma*.

<sup>7</sup> P. *sattīthīthābhawahāluya* as in 84. 34.

<sup>8</sup> P. *pattatoraṇa* as in 85. 9.

54 community, King Vijayabāhu betook himself thither. He issued the invitation: "Let us take in hand the arrangement  
 55 of a festival for admission to the Order. Let all the Grand  
 56 theras, all the middle-aged and the youthful who have trust  
 57 in their hearts towards us, the lords among the ascetics not  
 58 fail to come to Sahassatittha," and (he) sent messengers  
 59 everywhere (with the invitation)<sup>1</sup>. When all the individual  
 60 groups of ascetics settled in Tambapāṇī heard this news, they  
 61 rejoiced greatly and set forth on their way from every quarter,  
 62 without allowing even the administrator of their provisions to  
 63 remain behind, and in haste the heroes among the ascetics  
 64 assembled by degrees well prepared in Sahassatittha<sup>2</sup>. The  
 65 King who again and again<sup>3</sup> surveyed Sahassatittha surrounded  
 as it was with ascetics felt a befitting<sup>4</sup> joy, and in abundant  
 measure the Ruler supplied the Great bhikkhu community as  
 was seemly, with excellent food and drink. Then celebrating  
 day by day here in Sahassatittha a great sacrificial festival,  
 he made those bhikkhus who were called thereto, perform  
 the ceremony of admission for those who were desirous of  
 entering the Order, and celebrated the ceremony of admission  
 to the Order for half a month. Thereupon the King granted  
 the rank of a Grand Master<sup>5</sup>, the rank of a Chief Thera<sup>6</sup>,  
 the rank of a Grand Thera and the rank of a Pariveṇa-Thera<sup>7</sup>  
 to such (bhikkhus) who because they had brought about the  
 prosperity of the Order, deserved to receive this or that rank.

<sup>1</sup> Vv. 47-56 form one sentence which opens with three loc. abs. *kūcū-*  
*pite* (49 a), *sajjāpitcsu* (50 c) and *āvitesu* (53 c).

<sup>2</sup> P. *āganṭra* (with the acc. of the place) *sauvijatiṭṭu* is merely  
 periphrastic.

<sup>3</sup> P. *āuhūm*, used in the same way as the double *āuhūm* *āuhūm*.  
 The same in JĀ. V. 32<sup>27</sup> *kiu mām mukhū pekkhasi hutthalawo* (*āuhūm*  
 being explained by the commentary as *puuappuua*).

<sup>4</sup> P. *sulabha*. Cf. skr. *sulabha*, BR. s. v., 1 b. The joy corresponds to  
 the great number of bhikkhus who have put in an appearance.

<sup>5</sup> P. *uahāsāwipada*. Cf. note to 53. 23.

<sup>6</sup> P. *māla(thera)pada*. Cf. 69. 34 *uālāmacca*.

<sup>7</sup> P. *therapariveṇādikāp padam* seems to mean "the rank where the  
 word *pariveṇa* precedes *thera*."

Then having bestowed on them the eight articles of use, fair, worthy of a king, to the value of a thousand (gold pieces), and also to the other ascetics in succession, costly articles of use, he sent many remaining articles of use to the bhikkhus settled in the Pañdu and Cola countries. Then when all his wishes had received fulfilment, he guided by right knowledge<sup>1</sup>, sent a messenger to his father and announced to him: "All meritorious works which I have performed I have performed in the name of my royal father."<sup>2</sup>

Thus in granting admission to the Order to numerous ascetics at the great ford of the Vālikā river called Sahassa, in the correctly drawn<sup>3</sup> boundary, known as the 'throwing up of the waters'<sup>4</sup>, he made lustrous the nine-fold doctrine<sup>4</sup> of the sublime Buddha.

After he had for a long time made over the burden of government<sup>5</sup> to his own world-famed son, this most excellent

<sup>1</sup> P. *nāyapubbañgamāñ kateñ*, "placing right knowledge at the head." He was conscious that he was only his father's representative. W. uses the words in the oratio recta and translates: "Whatsoever merit hath been performed by me with a pure mind."

<sup>2</sup> P. *parisoñhita*, lit. purified.

<sup>3</sup> P. *nkhepastimā*, a term difficult to explain and occurring again 94. 17 and 97. 12. It has reference to the ceremony being performed in a building erected in a lake or in a river (see above note to 87. 71). The boundary which must enclose the space set apart for ecclesiastical functions must thus be drawn in the water. In fixing it water would have to be "thrown up" (skr. *ksip* with *nd*), just as the earth is thrown up in fixing a boundary on land. W.'s note gives a correct definition: "a space in a sheet of water, duly defined, for purposes of ordination and other ecclesiastical functions". But this does not explain the etymology of the expression.

<sup>4</sup> P. *navaṅgikāñ sāsanām*. The nine "members" (*aṅgāni*) of the holy scriptures are 1) *sutta* "discourse"; 2) *geyya*, the same with an admixture of verse; 3) *veyyakaraya* "exposition" without verse (chiefly the Abhidhamma); 4) *gāthā* "stanza"; 5) *udāna*; 6) *itiuttaka*; 7) *jātaka*, the well known three books belonging to the tipitaka; 8) *abbhutadhamma* "discourses relating to mysterious conditions"; 9) *vedalla*, title of some special suttas.

<sup>5</sup> P. *bhūbhāra*, lit. "burden of the earth". Cf. skr. *bhūbhārtṛ* "prince, ruler".

King Parakkamabāhu who as described<sup>1</sup>, performed through his son an abundance of meritorious works, entered heaven when he had attained his thirty-fifth year (of reign)<sup>2</sup>.

Here ends the eighty-ninth chapter, called »Description of the Festival of the King's Consecration and Other Festivals», in the Mahāvamsa, compiled for the serene joy and emotion of the pious.

<sup>1</sup> *evam evam* even in this way.

<sup>2</sup> According to Rājāv. 32 years, Pūjūv. 33 years. The number given in the Mhv. includes those years when Vijayabāhu carried on the government. The latter is called Bōsat Vijayabāhu by the Nik.s. as well as by the Rājaratn.

## CHAPTER XC

THE HISTORY OF THE EIGHT KINGS,  
OF VIJAYABĀHU AND HIS SUCCESSORS

Now in the second year of King Vijayabāhu<sup>1</sup> who after 1 Parakkāmabāhu's death, held sway over all Lāṅkā, one of his 2 generals, Mitta by name, a faithless friend<sup>2</sup>, won over as associate a slave belonging to the immediate entourage of the King. Out of lust for dominion the recreant made him whom 3 he had bribed by gifts, slay the Ruler at night. Now when 4 the younger brother of the King, the King Bhuvanekabāhu<sup>3</sup> 5 heard of this event, he left the town of Jambuddoṭī, mounted in his fear a covered litter<sup>4</sup> and sped on his way to the fortress of Subhācalā<sup>5</sup>. But people who had received gifts 6 from the hands of the evil general Mitta, and were therefore bound to him from the outset, nine wicked, brutal brothers 7 from the clan of the Monasihas<sup>6</sup>, pursued him and pitilessly pierced the Monarch's litter so fiercely with their pointed spears 8 that everything — seat, girths and the like<sup>7</sup> were in tatters.

<sup>1</sup> Rājāv. jumps from Vijayabāhu IV., passing over his immediate successors, to the history of Alakeśvara and the Chinese invasion. See note to 91. 14.

<sup>2</sup> P. *dronmitta* with reference to the general's name *mitta* "friend".

<sup>3</sup> Rājaratn. calls him Lokekabāhu Bhuvanekabāhu, Nik.s. Mahābhuvanaikabāhu.

<sup>4</sup> P. *yāna*, used of every kind of conveyance. W's translation "litter" is undoubtedly right.

<sup>5</sup> Subhācalā is like its synonyms: Subhagiri, Subhapabbata, Sundarapabbata, the name for the present so-called Yāpahu.

<sup>6</sup> See note to 38. 13.

<sup>7</sup> P. *andolipattakādikam*. The seats of these litters were evidently suspended in girths to counterbalance the shaking. Hence the expression *andoli* "swing", while *pattaka* means the girths.

9 He (Bhuvanekabāhu) sprang to the ground from the litter and betook himself in haste, unharmed, to the village of Kāla-  
 10 gallaka<sup>1</sup>. Here from a stall where elephants were tethered<sup>2</sup>,  
 11 he took a specially good elephant, mounted it and having  
 again crossed the great Kolabhīnu river then in flood, the  
 King reached that selfsame Subhagiri.

12 Now the Senāpati Mitta forced his way into the town of Jainbuddoṇī, into the palace of the Great king, seated himself  
 13 on the splendid lion throne of the Great king, and showed him-  
 self, the recreant, to the whole army his person adorned with  
 14 the royal ornaments. But now all the dignitaries who sup-  
 15 ported him, came together, one following the other. They  
 thought: "We must under all circumstances win over by (means  
 of) proper pay the whole army, that part belonging to our  
 16 own country as well as the alien part." They began in the  
 first instance, to hand over their pay to the chivalrous Āriya  
 17 warriors<sup>3</sup> at the head of whom was Thakuraka. But these  
 declared: "We have at all times been people who one felt  
 must be won over. Now ye must under all circumstances,  
 18 first of all by good pay win over the Sihala warriors and  
 make them contented." And none of them now accepted the  
 19 pay. "Be it so", answered the others. They paid all the  
 Sihalas their money and then called upon the Āriya to take  
 20 their pay. But again they refused with the words: "Our pay  
 21 shall be handed to us later; we shall not take it now." So  
 although all the ministers ever and again urgently pressed  
 22 them<sup>4</sup> to accept their pay, the well-armed<sup>5</sup> Āriya knights

<sup>1</sup> Probably Kalugallagama in the Kudagalboda Korale, NNW. from Kurunegala.

<sup>2</sup> P. *gajahandhaniyam* is the loc. of *-dhanī* (fem. of *-dhana*).

<sup>3</sup> In contrast to the Sihalas, these must be South Indian mercenaries. The reader is referred to the tribe of the Ariyu mentioned in 61. 36 and 63. 15. This (*not āriya*) would be at any rate the correct form of the name according to the phonetic rules of Pāli. See also below v. 44.

<sup>4</sup> P. *nibandham karoti* "makes an urgent petition". Cf. VvCo. 260<sup>15</sup> *derī punappunam nibandham karoti* "the queen urged him again and again (to fulfil her wish)."

<sup>5</sup> P. *sajjītā*. This is obviously meant to call attention to the

declared: "We shall say everything in the presence of the King." They betook themselves to the King's abode and when 23 they saw the Senāpati Mitta sitting on the lion throne, they stood for a time respectfully there. Then the warrior Thakuraka who was possessed of an undaunted heart, gave his comrades a sign, took his sharp sword and in a moment 25 swiftly struck off the Senāpati's head so that it fell to the ground. Now when hereupon a great hubbub arose in the 26 town, all the Sihala soldiers who were a mighty force, banded themselves together and asked the Āriya soldiers with Thakuraka at their head: "Why have ye done this evil deed?" 27 They replied: "It took place at the command of King Bhuvanekabāhu who abides in Subhagiri." With the words: "Be 28 it so", all the Āriya and Sihala warriors united and brought the King, their lord, Bhuvanekabāhu from the town of Subhagiri to the town of Jambuddoī and with reverence consecrated him King.

From that time onward the King made the whole double 31 army obedient to his will by assigning them salaries and the like, drove back all the Damila foes, like Kālingarāyara, 32 Colagaṅgadeva and the rest who had landed from the opposite coast, as also the Vanni kings in Sihala, Kadaliyāṭa, Āpāna, 33 Tipā, Himiyānaka and so on, and freed Laṅkā from the briers 34 of the foe. He took up his abode for several years in the town of Jambuddoī, betook himself thereupon to the town 35 of Subhagiri, had built here an extensive royal city, gleaming in the beauty, and abode there.

As he then won over all his subjects by a just policy, he 36 was a just king and a believing adherent of the Doctrine. He 37 bestowed on the skilful scribes of the sacred books abundant money and had the whole of the Tipiṭaka copied by them, 38 had it preserved here and there in the vihāras of Laṅkā, and thus the Lord of men caused the dissemination of the sacred texts<sup>1</sup>. Several times, too, the Ruler caused the festival 39

threatening aspect of the situation. The Āriyas are fully armed throughout the negotiations.

<sup>1</sup> P. *pālidhamma* could also mean "the Doctrine in the Pāli tongue".

of admission to the Order — which is a festival for the world — to be so celebrated that it was radiant with the splendid offerings made, and thus he brought growth and prosperity to the Order of the Sage — the Order whose sublime greatness must be reverenced by the (inhabitants of the) three worlds. He celebrated daily a great sacrifice for the Tooth Relic and he provided the bhikkhu community with the four articles of equipment.

In this wise he wrought good, while dwelling in Subhagiri and after carrying on the government for 11 years, he entered heaven.

Once when (here in Laṅkā) a famine arose<sup>1</sup>, there landed, sent with an army by the five brothers, the kings who held sway in the Pañju realm, a Damiṭa general known by the name of Āriyacakravattin who though he was no Āriya<sup>2</sup> was yet a great dignitary of great power. He laid waste the kingdom in every direction and entered the proud stronghold, the town of Subhagiri. The sacred Tooth Relic<sup>3</sup> and all the costly treasures there he seized and returned with them to the Pañju kingdom. There he made over the Tooth Relic to King Kulasekhara<sup>4</sup> who was as the sun for the lotus blossom of the stem of the great kings of the Pañjus.

<sup>1</sup> There is a gap in the text here. Of v. 43a the MSS. have only *chātusmīṭi*, five syllables are therefore wanting. The Col. Ed. supplements *jāyamānasmiṇi*. I should prefer *chūtasmiṇi idha jītasmiṇi*, because the similarity of the first and third words would make the slip of the writer of the archetype easily intelligible.

<sup>2</sup> See above, note to v. 16.

<sup>3</sup> According to 89. 41 Vijayabāhn had deposited the Tooth and Bowl Relics in Pulatthinagara. Evidently his successor had brought them back to Subhagiri to the town built by him there, a theory supported by 90. 41. The Sinhalese kings liked to keep the palladium of the kingdom in their immediate neighbourhood. It is remarkable how in the later parts of the Mhs. the *pattadhātu* is relegated to the background — it is only just mentioned again in 90. 72 — and how the whole religious and political interest centres in the *dāthādhātu*.

<sup>4</sup> Kulasekhara reigned 1268—1308 (H. W. CODRINGTON, HC. p. 80). His general Āriya Cakravartin is mentioned in a South Indian inscription (No. 110 in Annual Report of Epigraphy, Southern Circle, Madras Government, 1903 according to CODRINGTON, l. c. p. 87).

Hereupon the son of the Bodhisatta Vijayabāhu<sup>1</sup> and grand- 48  
 son of the mighty King Parakkamabāhu (II.), Parakkama- 49  
 bāhu by name, became king and raised aloft — as if to fend 50  
 off like a cloud the heat from the people who dwelt in Laṅkā — the umbrella (of dominion), the emblem of its proud 51  
 kings — fair through the cool shade (it gave) and like to the disk of the full moon. And he reflected: "That Tooth Relic 52  
 which was taken to the Pāṇḍu kingdom — that relic of the Prince of the wise, our highest protecting deity, worthy of veneration by our race, how shall I bring it back from there?" 53  
 And as the Ruler saw no other means but friendly negotiation, he set forth in the company of several able warriors, betook 54  
 himself to the Pāṇḍu kingdom and sought out the Ruler of the Pāṇḍus. By daily conversations he inclined him favourably, received from the hands of the King the Tooth Relic, returned 55  
 to the Island of Laṅkā and placed the relic in superb Pu- latthinagara in the former relic temple. Then the Ruler took 56  
 up his abode in this city and began to carry on the government without transgressing the precepts laid down for kings<sup>2</sup>. 57  
 The King performed daily a festival for the Tooth Relic and accumulated unweariedly a great abundance of meritorious works. He provided the bhikkhu community with robes and 58  
 the other articles of use and thus having furthered the laity and the Order, he fell under the power of death.

The son of Bhuvanekabāhu, the ruler of the town of Subhagiri<sup>3</sup>, Bhuvanekabāhu became king in Hatthigiri-

<sup>1</sup> See 88. 35 and note. The Mhv. tells us nothing of the fate of the younger brothers of Bhuvanekabāhu I.: Tilokamalla, Parakkamabāhu and Jayabāhu (88. 19-20). Evidently they died before Bhuvanekabāhu.

<sup>2</sup> P. *rājanīti*. W's translation "laws of Manu" is too restricted.

<sup>3</sup> With reference to a fragmentary interpolation in three MSS. after the line 59ab see my edition as well as W's note on p. 316. The translation would run as follows: "With the constant thought: the son of Bhuvanekabāhu, the ruler of the town of Subhagiri, the prince by name Bhuvanekabāhu, cherishes the desire for (usurping) the royal dignity at a future time, the King Parakkamabāhu ordered a barber with the help of the king's people to put out both his eyes although

60 *pura*<sup>1</sup>. The Lord of men wishing to acquire merit, rejoicing in generosity and other good deeds, instituted permanently a  
 61 regular alms of food for the bhikkhu community. Every year the King celebrated in a manner worthy of the highest kingly power, the festival of his coronation and in conjunction with  
 62 that in the Jetṭhamūla<sup>2</sup> month, after an opulent sacrificial festival, he had the ceremony of admission to the Order performed. Thus he made the Order of the Victor shine  
 63 brightly. After having performed these and many other meritorious works in manifold ways, the second<sup>3</sup> Bhuvanekabāhu also fell a victim to impermanence.

64 His still more eminent son, Parakkamabāhu<sup>4</sup>, wise and dowered with courage, was (thereupon king) in the superb city. With the love of faith in the three (sacred) objects, he assembled the bhikkhus and made them perform several times  
 65 over the ceremony of admission to the Order. In the royal courtyard he erected in careful fashion a temple for the Tooth Relic, fair with its walls and pillars, painted with bright-hued  
 66 pictures, provided with golden spires<sup>5</sup>, with gate posts of  
 67 gold, splendid, three storeys high. There he set up a canopy  
 68 of coloured stuffs, strips of cloth and the like. This he decorated

he was his younger brother (cousin) . . . ." The last words are unintelligible because the sentence has been left unfinished.

<sup>1</sup> The text here has like 99. 77 the synonym *Hathischupuru* (Kurunegala). The Nik.-s. calls the king *Vat-himi-bhuvanaikabāhu*.

<sup>2</sup> June—July.

<sup>3</sup> The Col. Ed. has *dutīya* and W. translated accordingly: "in the second year of his reign." CODRINGTON (C. A. L. R. X. 2, p. 91) emended this into *dutīyo* and this emendation is confirmed by all the MSS. known to me. CODRINGTON, (HC. p. 82), points out quite rightly that according to the *Daladā-sirita* the King must have reigned at least 9 years. The wording of v. 61 points also to a longer reign. Rājaratn. gives the number of years reigned and the number of the coronation festivals as 24.

<sup>4</sup> Nik.-s. and Rājaratn. call him *Panḍitaparākramabāhu*. For *īsi* in 64d 91. 9 with note should be compared. The ascent of the throne by Parakkamabāhu IV, took place according to the *Daladā-sirita* in the Saka year 1247 = 1325/6 A. D. (CODRINGTON, l. c.).

<sup>5</sup> P. *śīṅga* = skr. *śṛṅga*, BR. s. v. 1 f. Cf. 90. 90.

with garlands of gold, silver and pearl which hung down on all sides and he attached to it a wall of silken curtains adorned therewith<sup>1</sup>. Here (in the tent) he spread a seat, radiant with coloured draperies, and decorated it on every side with rows of golden and silver vases and with rows of candelabra of silver, gold and precious stones. On this seat he then full of reverence, placed the casket with the Tooth Relic and the casket with the Bowl Relic. Hereupon he set about performing day by day a great sacrificial festival in worthy fashion for the relics of the Master — a festival glorious with flowers and perfumes and with lamps and incense, provided with all foods soft and solid and with all that one drinks or sips, beautified by the reverberating<sup>2</sup> sound of the five musical instruments, fair through the dances and songs performed by the dancing girls and the actors, preparing delight for the world. With villages and fields, women slaves and men slaves, with elephants, cattle, buffaloes and other gifts he celebrated a sacrificial festival for the relics. With the reflection: "What the daily ceremonial was in the lifetime of the Enlightened One, the highest guide of the whole world, that of the Tooth Relic shall be from this day henceforth," the King composed in the Sihala tongue a work expounding this, with the title "Ceremonial of the Tooth Relic"<sup>3</sup> and in keeping with it he performed daily a daily ceremony for the relic<sup>4</sup>.

<sup>1</sup> This is the description of a kind of tent. First its ceiling (up to 68 c) is described and then the side walls. The instrumentals in 68 d and 69 a b must belong to the gerund *alaṅkariya*, but at the same time to *sobhitam* through the medium of *olambamāvāhi*.

<sup>2</sup> P. *vijumbhamāna*, otherwise as a rule *vijambh*. Cf. skr. *jrambh*, *jyambhate*.

<sup>3</sup> P. *dāthādhātucāritta*, rendering of the Sinh. *daladāsirita*. The work — it was mentioned above, note to 90. 63 — still exists. See GEIGER, Literatur und Sprache der Singhalesen, p. 9.

<sup>4</sup> The passage is significant. It shows that in Ceylon just as in the temples of Egypt a daily ritual was observed wherein the relics (and the images, cf. the allusions in 38. 56, 53. 30) took the place of the living and present Buddha. See Arthur A. PERERA C. A. L. R. VI. 2, p. 67 f., and above Cūlavapuṣa I, p. 359, note 4. Cf. also below 97. 33, 101. 4.

80 To the office of royal teacher the King appointed a Grand therā from the Coḷa country, a self-controlled man, versed in  
 81 various tongues and intimate with philosophic works. Ever and again he heard from him continuously all the Jātakas,  
 82 learned them (by heart) and retained their contents. Then he rendered by degrees these five hundred and fifty beautiful  
 83 Jātakas from the Pāli tongue into the Sihala speech<sup>1</sup>. He recited them in the midst of the Grand theras who were  
 84 intimate with the three Piṭukas, and after correcting them, he had them written down and distributed throughout Lankā.  
 85 And these Jātakas he made over to a wise therā, Medhaṃkara by name, whom he had gained for the purpose, that they  
 86 might be preserved in the succession of his disciples and thereby handed down still further. Then after having built  
 87 for him a pariveṇa with the King's own name, he assigned him the four villages of Purāṇagāma, Samīrasela, Labujumāṇḍaka  
 88 and Moravaṇka. In the vihāra of Titthagūma<sup>2</sup> where the big,  
 89 long pāsāda forty-five cubits in size erected by the great  
 90 Vijayabāhu<sup>3</sup>, had fallen into decay, King Parakkamabāhu himself built a beautiful, long pāsāda<sup>4</sup> of thirty cubits in size, two storeys high, provided with lofty spires<sup>5</sup>, glorious with

<sup>1</sup> This translation of the Jātakas bears the Sinhalese title *Pansiyāpanavijātaka*. See GEIGER, I. c. p. 6. Probably the king was not himself the author of the Jātaka translation. But he may have started the work, and it was an act of courtesy on the part of the translators that they ascribed it to the king. Cf. WICEREMASINGHE, Catalogue of Sinh. Manusc. in the Br. Mus., p. 118 ff.; MALALASEKERA, Pāli Literature of Ceylon, p. 127.

<sup>2</sup> Without doubt this is the present Totagamuva, about a mile north of Hikkaduwa not far from the coast in the Galle District. Śrī-Rāhula Thera, the author of the Sūjalihigī-sandesa is called after it.

<sup>3</sup> Vijayabāhu IV. with the epithet of Bodhisattva, thence called "The great" here.

<sup>4</sup> In the description of the architectural works of Parakkamabāhu I in Pūlatthinagara *dīghapāsādā* and *cūlapāsādā* are constantly contrasted with each other (see 78, 36, 37, 50). We have evidently to do with particular architectural terms.

<sup>5</sup> See above note to v. 66.

bright-hued painting, and assigned it then to the venerable 91, Grand thera Kāyasatti who dwelt in the Vijayabāhu-pariveṇa<sup>1</sup>. He also granted him a village, called Sālaggāma, on the banks 92 of the river<sup>2</sup> forming the boundary (of the monastery), making it a possession of the pariveṇa. In fair Titthagāma he had a 93 park laid down, provided with five thousand cocopalms. In 94 Devapura<sup>3</sup> he built a long temple consisting of two storeys, provided with four pairs of gates for the image of the recumbent lion<sup>4</sup>. To this temple he assigned the grove-encircled village 95 Ganṭhimāna by name which he proclaimed as the property of the Buddha. In the vihāra of Valligāma<sup>5</sup> the Ruler erected a 96 long pāsāda, consisting of two storeys, which after his own name, was called Parakkamabāhu(-pāsāda), and granted it the 97 (village) Sāligiri<sup>6</sup> by name as a large maintenance village belonging to the Great community. In fair Viddumagāma, not far 98 from the town of Rājagāma he had a splendid vihāra built, connected with the Sirighanānanda-pariveṇa, with a bodhi tree 99 and an image-house and assigned it to his teacher, the Grand thera from the Cola country<sup>7</sup>. Thereupon he founded in the 100 charming district of Māyūdhānu<sup>8</sup> a new town with fine walls and gate-towers. There he had a fair temple erected to 101 the gods with lofty spires and two storeys, provided with walls and gate-towers, placed there a glorious statue of 102

<sup>1</sup> Cf. 81, 58.

<sup>2</sup> All the MSS. have *upa simanadittiram*. *Simanadi* might also be the name of the river. The emendation of the Col. Ed. into *Gimhanadi* (now Ginganga; cf. 75. 22, *gimhatittha* = Gintota) is certainly tempting, but I do not venture a departure from the uniform reading of the MSS.

<sup>3</sup> Devapura or Devanagara = Devundara, Dondra. See 60. 59.

<sup>4</sup> I. e. the recumbent Buddha who is always compared to a lion at rest.

<sup>5</sup> See 80. 38.

<sup>6</sup> W. points to *Elgiriya*, a village in the Veligama Korale, 6 miles NNE. of Veligama and 10 miles NW. of Matara.

<sup>7</sup> See above v. 80 f.

<sup>8</sup> The territory whose centre was Sītāvaka about 25 miles E. of Colombo.

the lotus-hued King of the gods (Viṣṇu) and celebrated a great sacrificial festival.

103 After performing such and other good deeds for the laity and the Order and many meritorious works, he fell under the power of death.

104 Gifted with the power of meritorious works which he had performed formerly, he after attaining worthless wealth, renounced desire and did nought but good, finding above all pleasure in doing his best<sup>1</sup>. Thinking of what is best for you and on universal impermanence, decide, O ye pious people, whose wealth is faith, for meritorious works<sup>2</sup> amongst which generosity and moral discipline have first place<sup>3</sup>.

105 After his death Vannibhuvanekabāhu was king and  
106 after his death came King Vijayabāhu. But after the death of these kings the all-wise Bhuvanekabāhu<sup>4</sup>, the fourth, was ruler in Gaṅgāsiripura<sup>5</sup> situated in the charming vicinity

<sup>1</sup> The acc. *attatthayi* must be governed by *rato*. This, it is true, is otherwise construed with the loc.

<sup>2</sup> P. *katvā gāphatha* is a verbal combination witnessing to Sinhalese influence. The equivalent in Sinh., for which however, I have no example in the literature, would be *kotagannarā*. Since *gannarā* gives a reflexive sense to the verb to which it is attached, *katvā gāphatha* means "do for yourselves what is for your advantage".

<sup>3</sup> With verse 102 or 104 the second part of the Cūlavimpū which begins with chapter 80, comes to an end. The MSS. also indicate this. Cf. my ed. I. p. IV of the Introd., as well as the notes to the passage. If we assume that it closed originally with v. 102, which is indicated by two of the MSS., then there was added later a summarizing sloka and then a strophe in artificial metre. Exactly the same thing occurs at the close of the first part (79. 84). The addition was evidently intended to veil the break in the text and lead over to the new part.

<sup>4</sup> (Vanni-) Bhuvanaikabāhu, Vijayabāhu and the fourth Bhuvanaikabāhu are also mentioned by the Nik.-s, and Rājaratu., as successors of Parakkamabāhu IV. The inscription of the Laiukātilaka-vihāra belongs to Bhuvanekabāhu IV. (see B. GUNASEKARA, JRAS., C. B. X, nr. 34, 1887, p. 83 ff.). He built this and the Gadaladeniya-vihāra. See note to 91. 30. The King's minister Senāluṇkādhihikāna who is named in the inscr., is also mentioned in Nik.-s.

<sup>5</sup> Gampola, see 86. 18.

of the Mahāvālukagaṅgā — a religious man, a mine of fair vir- 107  
tues: He who gives heed to tradition, let him know that in 108  
the fourth year of his reign, one thousand, eight hundred and  
ninety-four years had elapsed since the Nirvana of the Sage<sup>1</sup>.

When ye have understood how in antiquity the most ex- 109  
cellent men when they had experienced the time hard to  
experience<sup>2</sup> of a Buddha, did good unweariedly without ceas-  
ing, such as almsgiving and so forth, so ought ye in perfect  
fashion to perform all good (deeds).

Here ends the ninetieth Chapter, called «The History of  
the eight Kings, of Vijayabāhu and his Successors», in the  
Mahāvamsa, compiled for the serene joy and emotion of the  
pious.

<sup>1</sup> I. e. 1850 A. D. The same in Nik.s., but Rājaratn. has the figures  
1896 = 1352 A. D. Both numbers are approximative. According to the  
Laṅkūtilaka inscription Bhuvanekabāhu IV. ascended the throne already  
in 1263 of the Śaka era, i. e. 1844-5 A. D. For the whole subject see  
H. W. CORNELL, HC. p. 83. 88.

<sup>2</sup> *Dullabbhantyam atidullabha*. is merely tautological, *labbhantiya* is  
furthermore a spurious form, made to suit the metre.

## CHAPTER XCI

HISTORY OF THE FOUR KINGS,  
OF PARAKKAMABĀHU AND HIS SUCCESSORS

- 1 Now after the death of Bhuvanekabāhu there were two kings, Parakkamabāhu<sup>1</sup> and the discerning Vikkamabāhu<sup>2</sup>.
- 2 There lived then at the time of Vikkamabāhu in the fair town known by the name of Peraddōpi<sup>3</sup>, situated in the charming neighbourhood of the Mahā(vāluka)gaṅgā, an eminent prince, sprung from the Giri family, the discerning Alagakkonūra<sup>4</sup>
- 4 by name, adorned with majesty, faith and other virtues, full of the desire to further the laity and the Order, of great might.
- 5 "The town of Kalyāṇī shines with her palaces, bodhi trees, her superb cloisters and maṇḍapas, with walls, halls, image temples and cetiyas, with her gorgeous shops, her splendid gate-towers and arches." Now to the South of this town Kalyāṇī which is described in such words, which

<sup>1</sup> According to the Bapugastenna inscr. (JRAS., C. B. xxii, nr. 65, p. 362, CODRINGTON, II C., p. 89) Parakkamabāhu V. ascended the throne simultaneously with Bhuvanekabāhu IV. in the year 1344/5. He reigned for a time (probably till 1356/7) with him and after that along with Vikkamabāhu IV. (II. according to C.).

<sup>2</sup> For inscr. of the time of Vikkamabāhu IV. see BELL, Report on the Kēgalle District, p. 78. According to the inscr. of Vigulavattu (not far from Gampola), the fourth year of the King's reign coincides with the end of the Saka year 1282 = 1360 A. D., his ascent of the throne falls therefore in 1356/7 A. D.

<sup>3</sup> I. e. Peradeniya not far from Kandy on the Mahaveliganga.

<sup>4</sup> Our chronicle makes short work of the undoubtedly eminent personality of this man. There is a good deal more about the founder of Jiyavajjhāna in the Rājiv., the Rūjaratn. and the Nik.-s. What is above all important is that Alagakkonūra succeeded in breaking the power of the Jaffna king which was then at its height. Cf. also below note to v. 9. For the Kitsirimevan inscription of Kelani and the Alagakkonūra mentioned in it see C. A. L. R. I, p. 152; II, p. 149, 182.

was visited by the great Sage, in a place where pious people dwelt, who were devoted<sup>1</sup> to the Buddha and so forth, on the great lake not far from<sup>2</sup> the spacious village of Dārugāma<sup>3</sup>, 7 he built the famous town of Jayavaḍḍhanakoṭṭa<sup>3</sup>, embellished with great trains of walls, with gateways, bastions and the like. While he dwelt in the town, the mighty one, craving 8 for meritorious works, performed many good deeds; such as the furthering of the Order and the rest. In that town the 9 fifth Bhuvanekabāhu<sup>4</sup> was (king), religious, venerating with constant reverence the Buddha and the other (sacred) objects.

<sup>1</sup> The single words in this compound are placed with great freedom. *Budhāñiyuttujanakappitasādhinthūne* stands evidently for *budhāñi-yuttu-nthūne*, *num-kappita-thāne*. *Budhāñi* stands for Buddha, Dhamma and Saṅgha. *Yutta* means in the first place "joined with something", then "hanging on, clinging to something"; *kappitu* means "provided with something".

<sup>2</sup> The village is called so in the Rājāratn. Thus *Dārungāma*<sup>5</sup> in the Mhv. stands instead of *nru-Dārungāma*<sup>6</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> Later simply called Cotta by the Portuguese. The town covered what are now the eastern districts of Colombo.

<sup>4</sup> As in 90. 64, *āsi*, thus *ahu* must be supplemented by *rūjā*, or else *ahu* (*āsi*) has the more pregnant meaning "he lived, he reigned". I do not believe that the Mhv. considers Bhuvanekabāhu to be the name under which Alagakkonāra reigned. This opinion is found only in the Rājāratn., when it says: *Alagakkōnum mantriśenrayūha Bhuvanekabāhu-nnum mahārnju-ra Gaṅgāsiripuru rūjyaśriya-ta pūmīpū devalora gīyēyu* "The great minister Alagakkōn by name who had become king under the name of Bhuvanekabāhu went, after enjoying in Gaṅgāsiri-pura the good fortune of the royal dignity, to the world of the gods." But in the Mhv. we should, in this case, expect an *iti* or *ti nāmeno* after *Bhuvanekabāhu*. The assumption that Alagakkonāra and Bhuvanekabāhu are one and the same has now been given up (cf. JRAS. C. B. XXIV, nr. 68, p. 103, note \*) above all because in the Atanagalu-vihāra-vamsa it is said that the work was translated in the Śaka year 1304 (= 1382/3) in the reign of Bhuvanekabāhu, at the instigation of Alakesvara (or Alagakkonāra). — The tradition followed by the Rājāratn. probably confuses Alagakkonāra with his son Vīra Alakesvara who (under the name of Vijayabāhu) is said to have reigned a number of years as king, though after Vīrabāhu's death. For further particulars see E. W. PERERA, Alakesvara: his Life and Times, JRAS. C. B. xvii, Nr. 55 (1904), p. 281 ff.; H. W. CODRINGTON, HC., p. 85, 89. Cf. below, note to v. 14.

- 10 To the community he dispensed in abundant measure regular repasts and other alms and to achieve the furtherance of the  
 11 Order, he gathered the bhikkhus together, ascertained those who lived immoral lives and had them cast forth from the Order, but he showed favour to the conscientious obtained for them the precedence and so made the Order of the Victor  
 12 shine. For seven thousand pieces of silver he had a casket fashioned, preserved in it the Tooth Relic and sacrificed to it in lasting reverence.
- 13 When the time of this King — after he had held sway for twenty years<sup>1</sup> — had expired, a man called Vīrabāhu  
 14 attained the royal dignity, did likewise all (that was good) such as furthering the Order and fell under the power of the King of death<sup>2</sup>.

<sup>1</sup> The 20th year of the reign of Bhuvanekabāhu V. falls in the year 1391/2 A. D., the beginning of the reign accordingly in 1372/3. It seems, however, that he reigned for some time, if only in name, together with Vīrabāhu. Cf. S. DE SILVA, Vijaya Iālu VI, JRAS. C. B. xxii, no. 65, p. 316 ff.; H. W. CODRINGTON, IIC. p. 89. In the inscription on the Alumpundi plate (see V. VENKAYYA, EI. III, p. 224 ff.) King Virūpākṣa of the Vijayanagara Dynasty, boasts that he had vanquished the kings of the Tungīra, Cola and Pāṇḍya as well as the Siṃhala. The inscr. is dated in the Śaka year 1305 for 1307 = 1383/4.

<sup>2</sup> The Mhv. passes over here a very remarkable episode in the history of Ceylon the knowledge of which we owe above all to Chinese sources. (Cf. J. M. SENAVENATNE according to SILVAIN LÉVI, JRAS. C. B. xxiv, nr. 68, p. 98 ff; further xxviii, nr. 73, p. 31 ff.) and to the Rājāv. From the different sources we gather that the son of the great Alagakkonārū, Vīra Alakeśvara, under the name of Vijayabāhu (VI.) seized the royal dignity in battle with his brother Vīrabāhu. During his reign in Jayavāḍhamakotṭa a Chinese expedition of the Emperor Yung-lo under the leadership of Tsheng-huo came to Ceylon. The Chinese came into conflict with the Sinhalese ruler who is called A-le-ko-na-r (Alagakkonārū) and took the king away with them as prisoner. The Rājāv. calls the leader of the Chinese Mahā-Cīn-Dosraja, the king taken prisoner by him, Vijayabāhu. Here then instead of the family name, the adopted name is given. Now it seems to me that by confusing this Vijayabāhu (VI) with V. IV. the above discussed gap in the Rājāv. is explained (note to 90. l). The probability of a mistake is supported by the fact that the Rājāv. speaks of four younger brothers of King V. who are said to

Then at a later time, in the year one thousand nine hundred and fifty-three after the final Nirvana of the holy Enlightened One, came King Parakkamabāhu<sup>1</sup>, an abode of wisdom and manly virtue, a scion of the race of the Sun, in the charming town named Jayavāḍḍhana — to the incomparable, sublime fortune of the royal dignity and with faith in the three (sacred) jewels, he set about the holding of a festival. For the tooth of the Prince of the wise the Ruler built a three-storeyed, splendid pāsāda which offered a superb sight. Then he fashioned a golden casket, fair, beautifully set with the nine precious stones, and another casket in the form of a shell, gleaming in manifold splendour and set with the most exquisite jewels and which held the first casket; and yet another golden casket into which he also put the second. Finally the King who strove after salvation in the present as

have been murdered. Now Vijayabāhu IV. had in fact four brothers according to Mhv. 87, 16-17. According to the Rājāv. the capture took place A. B. 1958 = 1404 A. D. For the whole see CODRINGTON HC. p. 85 ff., 89. If one accepts this Vijayabāhu who is omitted in the Mhv., as the sixth of the name in the list of the kings, then instead of Vijayabāhu VI. (92. 4) one must read Vijayabāhu VII.

<sup>1</sup> The Mhv. has nothing to say about the events which preceded the reign of Parakkamabāhu VI. Cf. for this H. W. CODRINGTON, HC., p. 85 ff., 89. The date given in the Mhv. for the beginning of the reign 1953 A. B. = 1409 A. D. is also found in the Saddharinālāñkāraya. In another passage however in this work the date is given as 1958 A. B. = 1414 A. D. The same in the inscr. of Pepiliyana (see below, note to v. 24). It may be assumed as probable that Parakkamabāhu VI. came to the throne in 1412, remained three years in Rayigam (District Kalutara, Census of Ceylon 1921, II, p. 44) and removed in 1415 to Jayavāḍḍhana where the coronation took place. The Mhv. has hardly anything of historical value either to tell us about the reign of Parakkamabāhu VI., except perhaps in v. 24, that his mother's name was Sunettū. It is a great pity that the compiler of the third part of the Cūlav. restricts himself almost entirely to stereotyped descriptions of festivals for the Tooth Relic. Our knowledge of modern events is gained from quite other sources. In the first place there is the Rājāyalī, also in the version given by Valentyn (Oud en Nieuw Oost-Indien, vol. V); further DO COUTO and DE BARROS (see D. FERGUSON, The History of Ceylon, from the Earliest Times to 1600 A. D. as related by de Barros and do Couto,

in future existences<sup>1</sup>, made a (fourth) large, incomparably magnificent casket which he covered with gold of the finest lustre, and in these four superb caskets he placed the tooth.

20 Then calling to mind all the festivals in Lankā celebrated by kings who were filled with pure reverence for the sacred Order of the Enlightened One, he thought: "I too will in like manner venerate him unweariedly with all the produce of my kingdom."<sup>2</sup> With such reverential thoughts he celebrated in his faith sacrificial festivals in all manner of ways for the relics and the like. To the community he dispensed regular repasts,

21 together with the eight articles of equipment, month by month, as well as every year sacrificial offerings and a gilt 22 of kathina robes for the bhikkhus in the three provinces and a great almsgiving in pious fashion and garments every year and thereby he, the highly famed, who longed for merit, laid 23 up merit. In memory of his mother the meritorious (King) had erected in the Pappaṭa grove<sup>3</sup> in her name the Sunetra-

24 pariveṇa<sup>4</sup> and a monastery for the community and granted it many villages and fields<sup>5</sup>. Then putting down in that selfsame 25 place an abundant alms destined for the community, to be distributed for three days among the ascetics who had come

JRAS. C. B. xx, nr. 60 (1909), p. 1 ff.). For the reign of Parakkamabāhu VI. I refer the reader besides CODRINGTON, l. c. p. 90 ff., 99 f., to R. W. PERERA, The Age of Sri Parakrama Bāhu VI., JRAS. C. B. xxii, nr. 63 (1911), p. 6 ff. For inscriptions of this king see E. MELLEN, AIC. no. 160; H. C. P. BELL, Report on the Kēgalla District, p. 81 ff.

<sup>1</sup> This is probably the meaning of *bhava-vihāra*. Cf. below v. 36.

<sup>2</sup> In these last paricchedas the language is treated with extraordinary arbitrariness. The construction of the compounds and the position of the words in them is often quite contrary to rule. The translation can therefore only give the general meaning of such passages.

<sup>3</sup> The name is preserved in that of the Pəpiliyānu-vihāra not far from Colombo (Census, 1921, vol. II, p. 36). An inscription in this monastery is dated in the 39th year of the reign of Parakkamabāhu VI. The date of his ascent of the throne is given as A. B. 1958 = 1514.

<sup>4</sup> Sunetrā or Sunetradevī, the wife of Vijayabāhu (VI.) who is supposed to be the father of Parakkamabāhu VI., was a Kālinga princess.

<sup>5</sup> Gāmakhette is governed by *pūjeteā* in 25 c. Thus in my edition the comma must be placed after *pūjeteā*, not after *tapassinam*.

from the three provinces, he laid up in pious fashion an abundance of merit. He had the sacred three Piṭakas together with the 27 commentaries and the ṭikās copied and caused a summary of the teaching of the Buddha<sup>1</sup> (to be made). He also granted 28 villages and the like to the scribes, that they might copy day by day the books of the true doctrine. Whatever had fallen 29 into decay on the Mahiyaṅgāna-cetiya and other cetiyas every- where he had renewed and the plaster coating repaired. In 30 the same way he had all the stucco work and so forth carried out on the Gaṇḍālādopī monastery and on the Laṅkātilaka<sup>2</sup> and others. While celebrating a great feast and a great 31 sacrificial festival he repeatedly had the ceremony of admission to the Order performed. Thus the wise Lord of men having 32 taken upon himself the burden of government and wrought good for fifty and two years<sup>3</sup>, bestowed on the bhikkhu community, 33 serving it in faith, twenty-six thousand one hundred and forty times the three garments and other articles of equipment and 34 three thousand four hundred and thirty-two kathina robes. Piously devoted to the three (sacred) objects he who greatly 35 venerated the Order of the Victor, dispensed immeasurable wealth and in this wise did all kinds of good.

Dowered with faith, discernment and charitableness, a superb jewel of virtue, he recognizing the worthlessness of acquired riches, performed in such wise, continually, unweariedly meritorious works. When ye have understood that, ye as those who know and are striving after salvation in this existence and in future existences<sup>4</sup>, should also continually and in the

<sup>1</sup> I take *buddhassa sāsanasaṃyahay* akā to mean this and refer the reader to titles of books like Ahhidhammatthasamgaha, Paecayasamgaha, Saddhammimasumgaha etc. W. gives a totally different rendering. He takes *samyaha* in the sense of "kindliness, protection, favour" and translates: "encouraged the religion of Buddha". It seems to me, moreover, that in vv. 27 and 28 special stress is laid on the literary activity of the King. Of course he only suggested the work.

<sup>2</sup> Both vihāras, Gadaladeniya and Laṅkātilaka are situated not far from Kandy.

<sup>3</sup> Rājāv. and Rājaratn. have the same.

<sup>4</sup> See above note to v. 19.

right way do a quantity of meritorious works<sup>1</sup> which bestow you many a happiness.

Here ends the ninety-first chapter, called «History of the Four Kings, of Parakkamabāhu and his Successors», in the Mahāvamsa, compiled for the serene joy and emotion of the pious.

<sup>1</sup> For *katsu gaṇhātha* cf. 90. 104 with the note.

## CHAPTER XCII

HISTORY OF THE SEVEN KINGS,  
OF JAYABĀHU AND HIS SUCCESSORS

After his death, his grandson Jayabāhu<sup>1</sup> became king; 1 then Bhuvanekabāhu, after he had murdered him (Jayabāhu). After obtaining the royal consecration, he lived seven years. 2 After his death Parakkamabāhu known on account of his learning by the name of Pandita, was king in that fair town, 3 and hereafter Vīraparakkamabāhu. On his death Vijaya- 4

<sup>1</sup> The kings in vv. 1-5 are numbers 108 (169) to 113 (175) of my list. Parakkamabāhu VIII, had two sons: Vijayabāhu VI. (VII.) and (Dharma)parakkamabāhu IX. Both seem to have been made co-regents by their father in the year 1509. But Parakkamabāhu IX., although he lived at least till 1528, was apparently of no great influence. He is not at all mentioned in our chronicle. — The Rūjūv. makes Vīra-Parakkamabāhu, not Jayabāhu, the successor of Parakkamabāhu VI. The same name appears again however later as that of Pañdila-Parakkamabāhu's successor. The Rūjaratn. inserts a king Vīrabāhu before Jayabāhu to whom a reign of 12 years is ascribed. The list of the kings (= Mhv. 92. 1-5) in the Sinhalese chronicles is as follows:

Rūjūv. Vīra-Parakkamabāhu	Rājaratn. Vīrabāhu (12 yrs.)
(1468—1472/3)	Jayabāhu
Bhuvanekabāhu (VI) (7 yrs.)	, Bhuvanekabāhu
(1472/3—1480/1)	
Pañdila-Parakkamabāhu (VII)	, Pañdila-Parakkama-
1480/1—1484	bāhu
Vīra-Parakkamabāhu (VIII) (20 yrs.)	, Vikrama-Parakkama-
? 1484—1518	bāhu
Dharma-Parakkamabāhu (22 yrs.)	
1509—1528	
Vijayabāhu (VI)	
1509—1521	
Buvanekabāhu (VII)	, Bhuvanekabāhu
1521—1551	

bāhu was king whose adornment was his virtue, and after 5 his death Bhuvanekabāhu was king. And after these kings, each according to his faith and his power, had achieved the furtherance of the laity and the Order, they went thither in accordance with their deeds.

6 Now Viravikkama a mighty man, sprung from the line of Sirisamghabodhi<sup>1</sup>, became king in the year two thousand and eighty-four after the final Nirvana of the Enlightened One<sup>2</sup>. 7 Dwelling in the town of Señkhanḍasela-Sirivadālhana<sup>3</sup>, beautified by the course of the Mahāvālukagaṇīgā, he gladdened his subjects by the four heart-winning qualities and undertook in 9 his faith meritorious works. The fair relic of the Prince of the wise he brought to a piece of land charmingly situated 10 not far from his royal palace. Then he built a cetiya and

The years of the reigns are given according to COOMBS (11C., p. 93 ff.)

Inscriptions: Bhuvanekabāhu VI.: inscr. of Dedigamu, Bell, Report of Kegalla Dist., p. 83 ff.; Vijayabāhu VI., ibid. p. 85 ff. (on the Kelani inscr. and Dharmaparakkamabāhu, ibid. p. 86); Bhuvanekabāhu VII., JRAS. C. B. XXII, no. 65, p. 267 ff. See further below, note to 95. 5. The history and chronology of Ceylon at the end of the Middle Ages suffer particularly from the fact that the island was not under one dominion but was split up into several kingdoms. Thus kings who were contemporaries are represented as succeeding one another. The kings in the above list reigned in Koṭṭe (Dharma-Parakkamabāhu perhaps in Kelani). Then in addition to these there are the dynasties of Sītāvaka and Kandy. Viravikkama (v. 6) is according to WICKREMASINGHE (EZ. III. p. 44) probably identical with Kumāra Ilāpāṭāra, the son of Vijaya Baṇḍara who reigned in Kandy at the time of Vijayabāhu VI. (VII.) and Bhuvanekabāhu VII.

<sup>1</sup> Mhv. 36. 78 ff.

<sup>2</sup> = 1540 A. D. Rājaratna has 2085 A. B. = 1541 A. D.

<sup>3</sup> I. e. Kandy. The account evidently goes back here to the rise of the kingdom of Kandy, the high country (*uḍa-rāṭu*) that did its utmost to preserve its independence as against the kings in Koṭṭe and Sītāvaka until it fell under the power of Rājaśīha in 1580. It is regrettable that the compiler has no interest in political questions, but considers only the relations of the kings to the Order. To judge by the number of figures contained in his narrative, it looks as if he had consulted a *pūṇḍrapoṭṭhaka* (cf. Mhv. 32. 25 ff.) i. e. a book in which the meritorious works of the king are inscribed.

near to it a two-storeyed house for the Uposatha<sup>1</sup> ceremony, as well as round about the town eighty-six dwellings for the 11 community furnished with a roofing of brick and so forth, made the bhikkhus take up their abode here and there, granted them maintenance and heard preached the true doctrine of the Victor. After celebrating a magnificent sacrificial 12 festival, he hearkened in faith to fifty-five sermons of the doctrine the preaching whereof lasted the whole night. On 13 thirty thousand leaves he had (sacred) books written down and to the Tipitaka he made an offering of sixty thousand (gold pieces). He had one hundred and eighty images made 14 of the Enlightened One and one hundred and thirty caskets for the placing therein of relics and so laid up a store of meritorious works. He left his town, wandered on foot<sup>2</sup> for 15 a day a distance of seven gāvutas<sup>3</sup> and venerated Mahiyangāpa 16 by celebrating with divers fragrant flowers, with lamps, frankincense and the like, a great festival. The Ruler of men 17 betook himself also in one day to the Sumanakūṭa<sup>4</sup> and sacrificed there by pouring one hundred jars of oil into a lamp fifteen cubits in girth and five cubits high<sup>5</sup>. [Since his desire was fixed 18 on the highest path<sup>6</sup>, he had the impassable road<sup>7</sup> put in

<sup>1</sup> P. *dribhūmatukūp uposathamūlakāya* is curious. *Mituka* is otherwise only an enclosed open space, a courtyard, serving for the holding of certain ceremonies. *Dribhūmaka* as attribute of *mituku* is unsuitable. In other instances moreover, we have only *uposathagga*, *uposathigāra*, *uposathayhara*, showing that a house is meant. If this were not the case in our verse we might have here a structure of the type of a "double platform". E. R. AYRTON, Memoirs, ASC. I. p. 18 ff.; A. M. HOCART, ibid., p. 57 ff.; the same in CODWINGTON, HC. p. 186.

<sup>2</sup> Lit. with the power of his own feet.

<sup>3</sup> I. e. about 14 miles. Mahiyangāpa, now Alut-nuvara, is 24 miles distant from Kandy as the crow flies. The King's pilgrimage is of course to the Mahiyangāpa-thūpa.

<sup>4</sup> Adam's Peak cannot be reached in one day from Kandy.

<sup>5</sup> The meaning of the passage is clear, but the language incorrect. The circumference of the bowl into which the oil was poured, would be about 22 ft. the height about 7 ft.

<sup>6</sup> I. e. on the road leading to the highest perfection, to salvation, the path of good works.

<sup>7</sup> Of course the road up to Adam's Peak.

order and provided, for the convenience of the (pilgrims) going  
 19 to and fro, with seven hundred and eighty stone steps. After  
 the Ruler had in this and other ways performed many meri-  
 torious works, he thought to hold the ceremony of admission  
 20 to the Order.] The wise (Prince) had many dwellings put  
 up on the bank of the river. Thither he brought the bhikkhus  
 21 dwelling in the three provinces and instituted a great festival.  
 Then after specially inviting from among those bhikkhus a  
 body of thirty-five bhikkhus with the Grand thera Dhamma-  
 kitti at the head, he made them celebrate a great festival  
 22 and grant admission to the Order to three hundred and fifty-  
 five able sons of good family whom he had himself chosen  
 23 out. The King heard that in the town of Pāṭaliputta<sup>1</sup> (in  
 24 days of yore), the Ruler of men Mahāsenā had fed daily a  
 25 community of one thousand bhikkhus, but unsatisfied even  
 with this magnificent effort, he had thought of giving alms  
 26 by the cultivation of a piece of land<sup>2</sup>. He had surrendered  
 the bliss of the royal dignity, betaken himself to the northern  
 town of Madhurā<sup>3</sup>, there laboured and with the grain produced,  
 27 had in faith made an offering of alms. When<sup>4</sup> he heard this  
 the wise (Prince) who had joy in a pure gift of alms, culti-  
 vated a rice field with his own bodily powers and instituted  
 with the grain produced, in blameless fashion, an offering of  
 alms. With faith in the three (sacred) objects he presented

<sup>1</sup> Capital of the Maurya dynasty, now Patna in the province of Bihar on the Ganges.

<sup>2</sup> P. *ratthusudhīmī karitrāvā*, lit. "after he had carried out the cleansing of a piece of ground." Field cultivation is considered the purest and noblest work. An offering of that which has been acquired by such work, an offering of field products is therefore characterized as *suddhadāna* (v. 26).

<sup>3</sup> The town Madhurā or Mathurā on the Yamunā (Jumna), to distinguish it from the South Indian Madhurā (51. 33 etc.) is called the "Northern Madhurā".

<sup>4</sup> Vv. 23—26 are one sentence; *dinnadānam* in v. 26 is a object directly governed by *sutrāna*. The preceding verses with *Mahāseno* as subject are however, so constructed as if it were *dānam adāsiti sutrāna*. The author fails in the construction.

an offering of two thousand one hundred and eighty-two garments. Spending five hundred and eighty-seven thousand 28 pieces of money, the King had meritorious works performed therewith. Sixty and two elephants and horses and four 29 hundred and fifty head of cattle and buffaloes did the Ruler of men offer in sacrifice. Striving thus and in many other 30 ways after good, he performed many meritorious works and made himself a pathway to heaven.

Thus he performed in faith, steadfast, rejoicing in the 31 welfare of others, after discerning the worthlessness of acquired corporeal existence and other (possessions), in pious manner many meritorious works which bring many a happiness. If ye then have discerned this, as people who have great fear of the terrible evil of the cycle of rebirths, then must ye, remembering what is of true worth, relinquish all desire for corporeal existence and the like (possessions) and strive unweariedly after meritorious works.

Here ends the ninety-second chapter, called «History of the Seven Kings, of Jayabāhu and his Successors», in the Mahā-vamsa, compiled for the serene joy and emotion of the pions.

## CHAPTER XCIII

HISTORY OF THE TWO KINGS,  
OF MĀYĀDHANU AND OF HIS SUCCESSOR

1 At his death there resided in the province bordering on  
 2 the sea-coast, in the fair and renowned Jayavāḍḍhanakoṭṭa  
 3 (and elsewhere) here and there kings sprung from the race  
 of the Sun. Amongst these there was one, the illustrious Ruler  
 3 of men, Māyādhānu<sup>1</sup> by name. His son was the mighty  
 Rājasīha by name. He went forth, fought here and there

<sup>1</sup> It is characteristic of the attitude of the author of this part of the Cūlavāmpu and of his indifference to the significant events happening in the plains, that the Portuguese are not yet mentioned. They landed in 1505 or 1506 (cf. D. FERGUSON, The Discovery of Ceylon by the Portuguese in 1506, JRAS. C. B. XIX, No. 59 (1907), p. 284 ff.) and had their chief seat in Colombo, in the fort which they had built there. It is just as characteristic that a man of the importance of Māyādhānu (Māyādunne) is dismissed with the mention of his name. He was the youngest brother of Bhuvanekabāhu VII., and at the division of the kingdom in A. D. 1521, had received the region between the coast land and the mountains with Sītāvaka as capital. Sītāvaka is the present Avisavella about 26 miles east of Colombo, situated on a left tributary of the Kelaniganga. In a series of severe and fluctuating struggles with his brother and his successor, as well as with the Portuguese, for the supreme dominion in Ceylon, Māyādunne maintained himself successfully till his death in 1581. Dharmapāla (1550—1597) the feeble successor of Bhuvanekabāhu VII. who was completely dependent on the Portuguese, adopting Christianity (about 1567) in order to maintain himself with their help — is not even mentioned in the Mahāvāmpa. As a historical source our chronicle is now hardly of any value at all. Of native sources there is only the Rājāvalī left and it has many defects. Our main information now comes from the Portuguese accounts, above all João RIBEIRO, Fatalidade historica, Lissabon 1836 (translated into English by P. E. PIERIS under the title "The Historic Tragedy of Ceilão", Colombo

and won the victory. The victor, the great fool, even slew 4 his own father<sup>1</sup> and brought the royal dignity into his power, the deluded one. In the town of Sītāvaka the King known 5 by the name of Rājasīha, for a time did good, devoted in faith to the Order. But one day the King, after he had brought 6 a gift of alms, asked the Grand theras full of anxiety: "How can I undo the crime of my father's murderer?" Then the wise 7 theras expounded him the doctrine<sup>2</sup>, but could not win over the wicked mind of this fool. They spake: "To undo the 8 committed crime is impossible". Full of fury like some terrible poisonous snake which has been struck by a stick, he asked 9 the adherents of Siva<sup>3</sup>. The answer they gave him that it

1925, 3rd ed.) and FERNÃO DE QUEIROZ, *Conquista temporal e spiritual de Ceylão*, Colombo, Government Press, 1916. These sources have been utilized by P. E. PERIRIS. Taking up the work begun by D. FRIMMISON (cf. above, as well as note to 91. 15), PERIRIS published in the JRAS., XXII, No. 65, p. 267 ff., first the important article "The Date of Bhuvanekabāhu VII.", the result of which was a complete transformation of the chronology of Ceylon in the 16th century. Then there appeared "Ceylon, the Portuguese Era" in 2 vols. Colombo, 1913-14 and "Ceylon and the Portuguese 1505-1658", Ceylon, 1920. ( Cf. with this S. G. PERERA, the 'Conquistador de Ceylão' by Fernão de Queyroz, S. J. in C. A. L. R. II, p. 158 ff.; 263 ff.; H. W. CODRINGTON, IIC., p. 94 ff.). Then for a part of the 16th century there are the lately published Portuguese archives: "*Ceylon in the time of King Bhuvanekabāhu and Franz Xavers 1539-1552*", published and annotated by G. SCHERHAMMER and K. A. VORUETSEN, 2 vols. Leipzig, 1928. Again "*Ceylon and Portugal*", pt. I, Kings and Christians 1539-1552, from the original documents at Lisbon, by P. E. PERIRIS and M. A. H. FITZLEN. SCHERHAMMER's Introduction to the first volume of the work mentioned above, gives a complete bibliography, a sketch of the history of the Island 1539-1552 from the Portuguese documents and a detailed analysis of the narratives hitherto existing.

<sup>1</sup> Whether Rājasīha who was a magnificent general and had distinguished himself at the age of 11 by his bravery, was really his father's murderer, may be doubted. Cf. note below to v. 9.

<sup>2</sup> I now prefer to read *tassa dhammā* instead of *tass' adhammā*.

<sup>3</sup> The motives alleged here for Rājasīha's conversion to Hinduism scarcely accord with the facts. The real reason for it was that the Buddhist priesthood who had always been favoured by him and his father Māyādunne, actually joined a conspiracy got up against him by

was possible, he received like ambrosia, smeared his body with 10 ashes and adopted the religion of Siva. He annihilated the Order of the Victor, slew the community of the bhikkhus, 11 burned the sacred books, destroyed the monasteries and thus barred his way to heaven. Become a (dead) tree-trunk in the 12 cycle of rebirths, he adopted a false faith. He placed miscreant ascetics of false faith on the Sumanakūṭa to take for themselves all the profit accruing therefrom. In this way the 13 impious fool as he did not know what he should accept and accepted what he should not have accepted, brought great evil upon himself.

14 At that time through fear of the King, bhikkhus left the Order; those among them who were swayed by fear of the cycle of rebirths, went hither and tither.

15 Harming the welfare of the whole laity and of the stainless Order of the Buddha, he carried on the government only in 16 virtue of merit formerly acquired. Dowered with sovereign might, the criminal brought the whole island of Laṅkā into his power and carried on the government<sup>1</sup>.

17 Thus this monarch, equipped with royal might, manifested his sovereign power; but after heaping up every kind of crime, he fell under the dominion of Māra. When one thus perceives the misfortune that meets one who through sinful and false belief has become the victim of delusion, one should in fear, free from all inclination to carelessness, bring about much blessing.

Here ends the ninety-third chapter, called «History of the Two Kings, of Māyādhanu and of his Successor», in the Mahāvamsa, compiled for the serene joy and emotion of the pious.

the Portuguese. To justify their treacherous conduct, these clerics may also have invented the murder of Rājasiha. Cf. PIERIS 2, p. 94. See also W. F. GUWAWARDHANA, Raja Sinha I., Pariciale und Centenarius, JRAS. C. B. xviii, Nr. 56 (1905), p. 382 ff.

<sup>1</sup> The year of his death is given by the Rājāv. as 1514 of the Śaka era = 1592/3 A. D. How great was the admiration of the people for this "last great king of the Siuhalese race" is shown by the fact that even to-day he receives divine honours under the name of Gauegoda Deviyo. PIERIS 2, p. 114.

## CHAPTER XCIV

## HISTORY OF KING VIMALADHAMMASURIYA

In the days of this King a scion of the Sun Dynasty in 1  
 Gaṅgāsiripura had betaken himself to the harbour of Kolamba<sup>1</sup>.  
 As he did not receive permission to remain there, he went to 2  
 the province of Gova. After he had dwelt here a long time,  
 he slew a mighty and famous chieftain by name Gajabūhn<sup>2</sup>. 3  
 After the victory he received distinctions of many kinds, and  
 because in his prudence he understood the favorable moment, 4  
 returned to Laikā. The mighty one brought the troops of  
 the five districts of the highland country over to his side  
 and after the death of (Rājasīha) the slayer of his father,<sup>3</sup> 5  
 when the year two thousand, one hundred and thirty-five  
 from the nirvana of the Master<sup>4</sup> had arrived, he (the prince), 6  
 full of faith, mighty by reason of his merit, became king  
 under the name of Vimaladhammasuriya, highly famed, in  
 the town of Sirivadžitana.

<sup>1</sup> Konappu, later Vimaladhammasuriya was a son of Virasundara who belonged to the royal house. Virasundara was partisan of Rājasīha, but was slain by him for having conspired against him. His son fled to Colombo (*Kolambatittha*) to the puppet king Dhammapāla. Later he was banished to Goa (*Govaratittha*) where he succeeded in gaining the confidence of the Portuguese. PIERSIS 2, p. 92 f., 112; CODRINGTON, HC., p. 105.

<sup>2</sup> It was the case of a duel with a pugnacious officer. The episode is related also in the Rājav. (p. 92 of B. GUÑASERARA's translation). Konappu's success may have drawn the attention of the Portuguese to him.

<sup>3</sup> Rājasīha is called *pitrughata* here not on account of the murder of his father Māyādhana, but on account of that of Virasundara.

<sup>4</sup> A. B. 2135 = 1591 A. D. The date is right.

7 He surrounded the whole of the vast city with a massive  
 8 wall on the heights of which he had placed at intervals eighteen  
 9 tower structures. Then to ward off the foe, he posted sentries,  
 10 freed the whole kingdom of Lañkā from all oppression and  
 after he had raised a princess of equal birth to the rank of  
 11 first mahesi and had received his consecration as King, this  
 famous (prince) who in his faith desired meritorious works,  
 12 set about furthering the laity and the Order. The Ruler of  
 men reflected where the tooth of the Enlightened One could  
 be, and when he heard it was in the Labujagūma-vihāra<sup>1</sup>, he  
 rejoiced greatly. He had the Tooth Relic which had been  
 brought to Labujagūma in the province of Saparagamu<sup>2</sup> fetched  
 (thence) and in order to venerate it day by day in his own  
 fair town and to dedicate a ritual to it, the wise (prince) had  
 14 a two-storeyed, superb relic temple erected on an exquisitely  
 beautiful piece of ground in the neighbourhood of the royal  
 palace. Here he placed the tooth and in lasting devotion  
 brought offerings to it.

15 As there were no bhikkhus in the island of Lañkā on whom  
 the ceremony of admission to the Order had been performed<sup>3</sup>, the  
 King sent officials to the country of Rakkhāṅga, invited  
 16 Nandicakka and other bhikkhus, had them brought to the is-  
 land of Lañkā, made them take up their abode in the noble  
 city of Sirivadjhana and cared for them in reverent manner.  
 17 Then in the Mahāvālukagaṅgā, at the landing-place called  
 Gauṭhambā, within a boundary drawn in the water<sup>4</sup>, he had

<sup>1</sup> I. e. Delgamuva, not far from Kuravita, north of Ratnapura. The relic was preserved before that in Kotte. Cf. 91. 17 ff. Why it was taken from there to the monastery in Delgamuva is not known. Probably the idea was to save it from the Portuguese.

<sup>2</sup> Now Sabaragamuva. The province which stretches in front of the south-western slopes of the central mountains, bounded on the West by the West province and on the South by the South province.

<sup>3</sup> The cause of this decay of the Buddhist Church was in all probability due to the hostile attitude of Rājasiha towards it. Rakkhāṅga is the name of a district in Lower Burma, now Arakan. Cf. for this PIERIS 2, p. 141.

<sup>4</sup> P. *udakkhepa-imayaya*. For this term see note to 89. 70.

a fine building erected and thither in the year two thousand, 18 one hundred and forty after the nirvana of the Victor<sup>1</sup>, he led the bhikkhus, had the ceremony of admission to the Order 19 performed in this Great bhikkhu community on many of the sons of good family and thus protected the Order of the Enlightened One. And he also made many sons of good birth 20 submit themselves to the ceremony of renunciation of the world and provided them also abundantly with the four articles of use, and after he had in this and many other ways, striving 21 after good, performed many meritorious works, he cleared himself a pathway to heaven. Later the selfsame wise King 22 made his younger brother<sup>2</sup> who had gone through the ceremony of renunciation of the world and (as member) was in the Order of the Buddha, leave the Order, entrusted him with the burden of the government and then passed away in accordance with his deeds<sup>3</sup>.

In this wise the Monarch equipped with kingly power, 23 after performing many meritorious works, adorning the Order of the Victor, made manifest a blameless sovereign

<sup>1</sup> 2140 A. B. = 1596 A. D.

<sup>2</sup> Senīratana was Vimaladhammasuriya's cousin. We know however (see note to 63. 51) that cousins who are brother's sons call themselves brothers.

<sup>3</sup> Rājāv. gives as the year of his death 1525 of the Saka era = 1603/4 A. D. Of the mighty events which took place during the reign of Vimaladhammasuriya I. the Mahāvapīsa says not a word. The whole period was filled with wars against the Portuguese and their protegē Dharmapāla which were carried on both sides with the greatest bitterness and even cruelty. In A. D. 1594 the Sinhalese destroyed a Portuguese force which had advanced to Kandy. Three years later Dharmapāla died after reigning nominally in Kotte 47 years. In his will he left his kingdom to the King of Portugal. The Portuguese solemnly took possession of the lowlands in the name of their sovereign. The kingdom of Kandy maintained its independence. During the reign of Vimaladhammasuriya the Sinhalese came for the first time into contact with the Dutch through the embassy under *Joris van Spilbergen* which coming from the east coast of the Island in 1602, visited the court of Kandy. For the whole subject cf. PIENIS 2, p. 112-165; CODRINGTON, HC., p. 105 ff.

power<sup>1</sup>. And yet such a discerning man whose highest good was religion<sup>2</sup>, fell under the power of Māra: when one has once realised the permanent condition of misery and of all other (suffering), one must find his joy in unwearied striving.

Here ends the ninety-fourth chapter, called «History of King Vimaladhammasuriya», in the Mahāvaiśa, compiled for the serene joy and emotion of the pious.

<sup>1</sup> The first two lines of the strophe resemble in wording the final strophe of 93.

<sup>2</sup> The sing. *caturo saddhādhano tādiso* must be referred to *mahipo*; *iti* is, as so often, placed within the sentence, instead of behind *tādiso*.

RAMA VARMA RESEARCH INSTITUT  
TRICHUR, KERALA, STATE.

2 MARCH 1931

## CHAPTER XCV

### HISTORY OF KING SENĀRATANA

After Senāratana by name had received consecration as 1 king, dowered with meritorious works, such as generosity and the rest and at all times full of reverence, he inclined his 2 subjects to him by the four heart-winning qualities. He celebrated a festival for the Tooth Relic and a great alms-giving. The mahesi of the (late) king who had been his elder 3 brother<sup>1</sup> he made his own first mahesi and dwelt in that same town (of Sirivadhan).

At that time merchants in the seaport of Kolamba who 4 had sojourned there a long time, had become puffed up with pride<sup>2</sup>. They were, all of them, the so-called Parāngi<sup>3</sup>, haughty evil-doers, cruel and brutal. They spread themselves over several fair provinces, laid waste fields and gardens, 6 burned down houses and villages, destroyed the noble families and in this wise brought ruin on Sihala. They broke into 7 the towns, into the relic shrines and monasteries, destroyed the image houses, Bodhi trees, Buddha statues and so on, did 8 great harm to the laity and the Order, built at various places

<sup>1</sup> The wife of Vimaladhāmanasuriya I. (see note to 94.22) Dona Catherina, who was considered the rightful heiress to the kingdom of Kandy. Vimala had married her to give his reign a semblance of legitimacy. PERRIS, 2, p. 125.

<sup>2</sup> P. ussannaka, W. "they waxed very strong", which is of course also possible.

<sup>3</sup> I. e. Franks, designation of the Portuguese who are mentioned here for the first time at a period when their power was declining. What is said in the sequel about the Portuguese agrees with what we know about Azavedo's procedure.

9 forts<sup>1</sup> and carried on war<sup>2</sup> unceasingly. King Senāratana brought the Tooth Relic to a safe place in the province called Pañcasata<sup>3</sup>, almost impassable owing to forests, mountains and rivers, made people dwell there who were entrusted with the preservation of the relic and thus protected the Tooth Relic well, showing it the usual reverence. Then he left the city (Sirivadžhana). Movable goods, the sons of the former king and the admirable Maheśī, excellent by wealth and virtue, who was pregnant, he took carefully with him in a litter<sup>4</sup> and betook himself to Mahiyaṅgava<sup>5</sup>. While he sojourned in this town the Queen bore under a particularly favorable constellation, a splendid son<sup>6</sup>, dowered with brilliant marks. At that time the leader of the foe saw at night a terror-stirring dream. From the east<sup>7</sup>, from that town (Mahiyaṅgava) there came a spark of the size of a glow-worm. Growing ever bigger it came to the centre of Kolamba, waxed here to unmeasured size and burned up everything at once. On that day in consequence of its splendour, the enemy who had penetrated to Sirivadžhana, took flight with the haste of those who are threatened with peril. The Ruler of men guarded his son

<sup>1</sup> P. *balakottake bandhitra*. Cf. the name of the town Jayavadžhana-kotta (91. 7), called Kotte for short.

<sup>2</sup> P. *yujjhāmāna thita*, a periphrastic formation corresponding to the Sinh. combination of the present gerund in *min* with the verb *sitinačā*. See GUICK, Literatur und Sprache der Singhalesen § 63a. The root *thita* expresses a continuous state.

<sup>3</sup> I. e. Pansiyapattu or Dunbara, N.E. of Kandy.

<sup>4</sup> P. *yoggena*, no doubt rightly explained by W.

<sup>5</sup> In the year 1611 A. D. the Portuguese general de Azavedo advanced as far as Kandy. He found the town deserted and placing a garrison in Balano to secure the entrance to the mountains, he returned to Colombo. This is connected no doubt with what is related in v. 11-12. The date of the prince's birth must have been 1612 (see next note).

<sup>6</sup> This is the son of Senāratana and Dona Catherina, the widow of his predecessor. He was called Maheśī-Āsthāna and later as king called himself Rajasīha. His stepbrothers Kumārasīha and Vijayapāla were the Queen's sons by her first marriage. See below v. 22.

<sup>7</sup> P. *parathinadisābhāgā*. Wrongly translated "from the western side" by W.

who grew by degrees like another moon, and the other (sons) with the greatest care, and when he saw that the right time had come, he took all his possessions and returned to the city of Sirivalihana. When his sons, namely the sons of the former king and his own son, were grown up he, because his heart clung to them in love, was minded to divide amongst them his mountain-girt provinces, had (their names) properly written on three leaves, laid the leaves near the Tooth Relic<sup>1</sup>, led the princes thither and made them take their choice. Then when the Ruler beheld the leaves which fell in this wise: to the eldest Kumārasīha the province Uva, to Vijayapūla the province Mūtula and to the youngest Rājasīha the five highland provinces<sup>2</sup> — he when he saw that the lot with the five highland provinces had fallen to his own son, rejoiced greatly and he said: "He hath great merit."

The Ruler of men thus gave over the divers provinces to his sons. Then, giving alms and performing other meritorious works according to his capacity; for the furthering of the people and the Order, he lived (yet) seven years<sup>3</sup>.

The Ruler who out of love had divided the provinces among his own and his other sons in order to protect Laṅkā and this our Order was doomed then to inevitable death.

Here ends the ninety-fifth chapter, called «History of King Senāratana», in the Mahāvamsa, compiled for the serene joy and emotion of the pious.

<sup>1</sup> The lottery becomes in this way a sacred action, an oracle. The division of the Kandy kingdom took place in 1628.

<sup>2</sup> I<sup>t</sup>. *udha puñca rāṭṭhakā*. These are districts lying round about Kandy, the most important parts of the kingdom with the capital. Uva embraces the eastern, Mūtale the northern districts. It should be noted that the form *Mūtula* for Matale is only found in the latest part of the Cūlavampsā (96. 4, 98. 65); in 66. 71 we have *Mahātila*.

<sup>3</sup> The year of his death is therefore 1635 A. D. The Rājāv. gives 1555 of the Saka era = 1633/4 A. D. One must assume that from 1628 to 1635 Rājasīha was reigning along with his father. Kumārasīha had died before Senāratana, as is pointed out by the Rājāv. The struggles with the Portuguese lasted with fluctuating success throughout Senāratana's reign. Of importance are the negotiations of the Sinhalese King with the Dutch which began in the year 1612. For a time (in 1620) the Danes tried to get a footing on the island. For the whole subject see PIERRIS, 2, p. 171-221; CODRINGTON, I. c., p. 109 ff.

## CHAPTER XCVI

## HISTORY OF KING RĀJASĪHA

1 Now while these Rulers of men, sojourning in different  
 2 places, enjoyed for a short time the pleasures of the royal  
 3 dignity in harmony, they carried on war against the Parāṇigas  
 4 and gained here and there victories<sup>1</sup>. But then they quarrelled  
 5 among themselves, the three brothers, the Lords of men. One  
 of them, the renowned Rājasīha by name, dispossessed the  
 4 older brothers and made them his vassals. After one (Kumāra-  
 5 sīha) had been put to death by poison, the other (Vijayapāla  
 who dwelt) in Mātula, mounted a chariot, and started off with  
 one man whom he took with him and betook himself after  
 crossing the frontier of the province, abroad<sup>2</sup>. But the other,  
 Rājasīha<sup>3</sup>, a man whose commands were not lightly to be

<sup>1</sup> In the year 1630 A. D. the princes won a brilliant victory at Ramenivila in lower Uva over the Portuguese who had occupied Badulla and had plundered and set fire to the town. The Portuguese general, Constantino de Sa y Noronha fell himself in the battle. Four years later (1634) Kumārasīha was removed by poison, and to this time belong the first disagreements between Vijayapāla and Rājasiha. There must however, have been a reconciliation, for Vijayapāla took part in the battle of Gannoruva in 1638 and the victory of the Sinhalese was largely owing to him. The Portuguese under the leadership of their captain-general Diogo de Mello had occupied and destroyed Kandy, but they evacuated the town and on their retreat were surrounded and annihilated. See below note on v. 22. The successes in war of the Sinhalese against the Portuguese are glorified in the poems Kostantinī-  
 haṭanē and Mahāhaṭanē. See A. DA SILVA, JRAS. C. B. xxiv, No. 68 (1915-16), p. 56.

<sup>2</sup> For Vijayapāla's tragic fate according to Portuguese documents, see P. E. PERERA, The Prince Vijayapāla of Ceylon, 1634-1654, Colombo 1928.

<sup>3</sup> Or perhaps "the second (aparō) Rājasīha".

slighted, difficult to attack, hard to vanquish, of a lion-like courage, took possession of the kingdom as it had at the beginning belonged to his father; as if he had been created by gods, pious in the faith, for the furthering of laity and Order, he was mighty, dowered with the bravery of war-skilled heroes.

Once upon a time indulging in youthful sports, he went a-riding with a companion who had mounted an other horse, himself on horseback. At a given sign, the horse ran along the street, but sank in a marshy place. Determined and courageous, the powerful (prince) sprang aloft, swung himself on to the horse of his next companion throwing off its rider and rode on his saddle further. At the dangerous ford of the Gaṅgā, which is called Suvaṇṇatthambha<sup>1</sup>, he sprang from the rock on this side and reached the rock on the opposite bank.

After manifesting in this and in many other ways, his strength, the greatly renowned (prince) cherished the wish to care for the furtherance of laity and Order. He prepared every kind of implement of war and the rest, took in order to open the fight, the battle-equipped Sihalas and set forth under a favorable constellation, at a happy moment from the town of Sirivalḍhaba with elephants, steeds and princely retinue, with great warriors and so on, with great dignitaries and so on, with foot soldiers who bore bows, swords, spears and other weapons, in front the music with drums, kettledrums and other instruments. In order to acquire merit by the giving of alms and the like, the King took also the sons of Buddha<sup>2</sup> with him, marched hither and thither, made the sound of the war drums resound like the terrible clash of thunder and fearless began the fight. At first he fought a great battle with the foe in the five highland provinces<sup>3</sup>, slew many of

<sup>1</sup> Now Ranten-tota, ford over the Mahaveliganga.

<sup>2</sup> I. e. bhikkhus.

<sup>3</sup> P. pañcudharaṭṭhagehe. Here we have another example of the influence of the Sinhalese language. -gehe is equivalent to the Sinh. -ge, the genitive suffix, and is used as postposition with local meaning. As to the beginnings of such forms in an inscription of the 10th century see WICKREMASINGHE, EZ. 1. 182.

18 the miscreants and drove the powerful wretched enemies from every place; breaking down their strongholds, the Ruler of  
 19 men remained victorious. The foes fled, looking on every side (for safety), tortured with fear, flung themselves from the  
 20 mountain precipices, sprang into the mountain gorges and were scattered as cotton in the wind, when he rushed into the  
 21 battle-field like a terrible lion that has broken into a herd of elephants<sup>1</sup>. After fighting again and again in different places with the sue and killing and putting to flight numbers  
 22 of people on the side of the enemy, he conquered several provinces, freed them from oppression, destroyed the strong-holds and so manifested his great power<sup>2</sup>.

23 There were however, many of the enemy who tortured by fear, had hidden themselves and escaped. They stayed for a time in the fortresses at the various places near to the sea, then these heretical villains began again and again to plunder  
 24 the different provinces. When Rājasīha whose commands were not lightly to be slighted, heard thereof, he betook himself  
 25 to Dīghavāpi<sup>3</sup> which lies to the East. While he, experienced in all the statecraft taught by Manu, sojourned there, he  
 26 received news of the Olandas<sup>4</sup>. He thought that good, sent

<sup>1</sup> The language of the passage is in the form in which the MSS. have it and as I have adopted it in my edition, absolutely incorrect. It is however very doubtful whether we are justified in altering it, as the fault may lie with the author. The Col. Ed. alters *mīgarāja* *ra nibbhayo* into *-rāje* *ra nibbhaye*. I should nevertheless prefer to keep these words and to read *sampatto* in v. 20a instead of *sampattr*, which may be influenced by *yāñhamūhi*.

<sup>2</sup> There can be no doubt that the preceding verses refer to the victories of the Sinhalese arms mentioned in the note to v. 2. But the events are described in quite general terms.

<sup>3</sup> For the district Dīghavāpi see 74. 89 and note.

<sup>4</sup> Vimaladhammasuriya I. had already been in touch with the Dutch (see note to 94. 22). Under Rājasīha II. Dutch envoys already appeared in 1937, and the King on his part sent three of his own people to Admiral Westerwold, who lay with his vessels at Goa, to blockade it. Dutch vessels appeared at Batticaloa where a Portuguese garrison lay, and the united forces of the Sinhalese and the Dutch forced the Portuguese to surrender the fort (18th May, 1938). A treaty was made with

two dignitaries to their fair land, had a number of people fetched from there in many ships and when these arrived in 28 the rich, prosperous, thickly populated coast lands near Dighavāpi, he showed them favour. As he wished to display to them 29 the military forces of his Laṅkā, he sent them the command to look quietly on. Then he began the fight with the foe 30 stationed near, slew a great mass of the foe and captured the 31 stronghold. The Ruler of men made over the place to the inhabitants of Olanda and showed them many other favours and made everyone contented.

From this time onward the Ruler of Laṅkā began at the 32 head of both armies<sup>1</sup>, to carry on war by land and water on every side. He destroyed the fortresses situated at different 33 places and protected by massive stone walls, slew the enemy, erected in the whole of Laṅkā strongholds garrisoned by strong 34 forces and after absolutely annihilating the foe who had ravaged so long (in Laṅkā) and freeing (the country) from their 35 oppression, he in order to ward off the enemy, charged the inhabitants of Olanda with the protection of Laṅkā in the places situated on the sea. After arranging that these were 36 to appear before him every year with presents of divers kinds, the Ruler of men returned, like Vajirapūri<sup>2</sup> when he had 37 conquered in the battle against the Asuras, with his retinue to his town (of Sirivajḍhana)<sup>3</sup>.

Westerwold which was ratified in Batavia whither Rājasīha sent two envoys. It enabled the Dutch to gain a firm footing on the island. These are the events to which vv. 25 ff. refer. The narrative describes in one-sided fashion — not surprising in chroniclers — the achievements of the Sinhalese. That they alone conquered Battienloa is not in accordance with the facts. The chief merit belongs to the Dutch guns. PIERIS 2, p. 227 ff.; CODRINGTON, DC., p. 117 ff.

<sup>1</sup> That is the Sinhalese and the Dutch.

<sup>2</sup> Name of Indra; "who carries the thunderbolt (*vajira*) in his hand."

<sup>3</sup> Here again in the Mhv. only the one-sided Sinhalese standpoint is given. In diplomacy the Dutch were without doubt superior to King Rājasīha, while on the other hand, he was a very unreliable ally for them. Rājasīha's reign was not so void of friction after the treaty with the Dutch as one might assume from our chronicle. It was disturbed

- 38 Now while the Ruler of men, Rājasīha, dwelt here in safety, the wise (prince) sought out in fitting manner those people who were worthy of a position and granted them various positions  
 39 such as that of senāpati and the like. Villages, fields and so on, everything that had belonged to the Buddha and the gods, in accordance with tradition, the Ruler of men gave  
 40 back as it had been formerly. He brought kings' daughters hither from the town of Madhurā, and after holding sway  
 41 powerfully for fifty and two years<sup>1</sup>, the mighty Monarch Rājasīha, who had guarded as his own eye in the best way the Order of the royal Sage of the line of the Sun and the laity, he the best of men went over to the king of death.
- 42 Thus this exceeding mighty King, the ruler, who understood how to annihilate hostile forces, was yet unable with his strength and his other qualities to gain the mastery over death. When the discerning have grasped from the first, at the very beginning this superiority of Mūra, they must with great zeal continually do meritorious works, such as alms-giving and the rest.

Here ends the ninety-sixth chapter, called «History of King Rājasīha», in the *Mahāvansha*, compiled for the serene joy and emotion of the pious.

internally by risings, as in 1641 by that plotted by Vijayapūla. The struggles between the Portuguese and the Dutch went on, the luck being sometimes on the one side sometimes on the other. Finally the Dutch triumphed. With the capture of Colombo (A. D. 1656) the fate of the Portuguese dominion was sealed. Immediately after that there was a breach between Rājasīha and the Dutch. The conflicts of the years which follow were multiplied for Rājasīha by inward strife. Lasting peace was not achieved, in spite of a peace favorable to the Sinhalese being signed in the year A. D. 1677, until the death of the King ten years later. PIERIS 2, p. 228-290; PIERIS 3, p. 1-35; CODRINGTON, HC, p. 118 ff., 133 ff.

<sup>1</sup> From A. D. 1635 (death of Senāratana) till A. D. 1687. Rājāv. makes the mistake of giving 1614 of the Śaka era = 1692/3 A. D. as that of Rājasīha's death.

## CHAPTER XCVII

HISTORY OF THE TWO KINGS, OF VIMALADHAMMA  
AND HIS SUCCESSOR

Now his son Vimaladhammasuriya became king whose 1 ornament was his faith and other virtues, who was a friend of the three jewels. As his first māhesī he took the daughter 2 of the māhesī in the town of Madhurā who had been fetched thence, gladdened his subjects by the four heart-winning qualities and protected uninterruptedly in peace and justice 3 the realm of Laṅkā as a lord of men whose ornament was his virtue.

Having attained his consecration as king, the King in pious 4 faith in the doctrine of the Victor, prepared in divers ways everything needful for a sacrificial festival for the Tooth Relic. In 5 honour of the Tooth of the Prince of the wise he erected a fair, three-storeyed pāsāda, resplendent with all kinds of (artistic) work, and for the sum of five and twenty thousand 6 silver pieces he had a reliquary made which he covered with gold and ornamented with the nine precious stones. In this 7 great reliquary that resembled a cetiya of precious stones, he laid the Tooth of the Victor.

As the Ruler thought to hold the festival of admission to 8 the Order, he prepared fair garments and other articles of use, five hundred of each kind, made everything over with 9 gifts and the like, together with a royal letter to prudent officials. These he sent to the country of Rakkhaṅga and 10 invited<sup>1</sup> the bhikkhu community with the therā Santāna at

<sup>1</sup> The embassy to Rakkhaṅga (= Arakan, see note to 94.15) took place in the year A. D. 1697. The Dutch supplied the vessels for conveying the monks from Burma to Ceylon, which contributed not a little

- 11 the head. Thus he brought thirty-three bhikkhus to the beautiful town of Sirivaddhana, made them amid tokens of respect, take up their abode there and provided them with the four necessities. Then after he had erected in the right way, as formerly, a building at the landing-place of the 12 Gaṅgā, within a boundary drawn in the water, he brought the bhikkhu community thither, had the ceremony of admission performed on thirty-three sons of good family and 13 so helped the Order of the Victor to attain new glory. Then full of faith he had one hundred and twenty sons of good 14 family appointed to the position of sāmañeras, provided them abundantly with the four necessities, had them instructed in the true doctrine and thus laid up a store of merit.
- 15 Thinking of the great merit that lies in the use of the feet<sup>1</sup>, he betook himself to the Sumanakūṭa and celebrating 16 with jewels, pearls and the rest, with offerings of gold and precious stones and with divers stuffs and so forth, a great festival, he tarried there seven days.
- 17 He sheltered with a great umbrella of silver the foot-print of the Sage which was stamped on the Sumanakūṭa and celebrated a great festival.
- 18 Day after day he listened to (the sermon of the) doctrine and since even on days which were not uposatha days, he 19 kept the ordained fasts, he did much good. In this and many other ways, longing for good, he day and night unweariedly 20 did much good. The King having thus cared for the welfare of the lity and the Order, fell under the power of death after a reign of twenty and two years<sup>2</sup>.

to the friendly relations established between them and the court of Kandy. The ceremony of the *upasampudā* took place again (*pure viya*) at Ganthambatthā (Getumba). The description in v. 8 ff. has a great resemblance also in the wording to that describing analogous circumstances under Vimaladhammasuriya I. (94. 15 ff.). Compare for instance, v. 12 c d with 94. 17 c d, v. 15 a b with 94. 20 c d.

<sup>1</sup> I. e. the merit of the pilgrimages. See 92. 15 ff. where the pilgrimages of Viravikkama to Mahiyangaya and to Adam's Peak are described.

<sup>2</sup> Vimaladhammasuriya II. reigned from A. D. 1687-1707. He was

Generous in all that is good, as in the giving of alms and 22  
the like, with great wisdom, full of devotion he helped the  
excellent teaching of the excellent King of the wise, the one  
and only guide of the world, to attain glory. Help ye, there-  
fore also evermore and unweariedly the excellent doctrine to  
attain glory.

Thereupon his son Siriviraparakkamanarindasīha he- 23  
came king. This King who was an abode of discernment and  
manly virtues, in order to protect the royal dignity in Lankā, 24  
fetched princesses from the town of Madhurā and made them  
first malēsiś. He performed meritorious works such as the 25  
giving of alms and the like, celebrated daily a festival for the  
Tooth Relic and thus laid up a store of merit. He showed 26  
care for the bhikkhus who had been admitted to the Order  
during his father's life, had many sons of good family submitted  
in faith to the ceremony of world-renunciation and thus  
lurthered the Order. In order to venerate the Mahiyāngāna- 27  
cetiya that was erected already in the lifetime of the Buddha,  
the mighty King betook himself thither, sacrificed to the cetiya 28  
with all kinds of coloured stuffs and while celebrating a sa-  
cerdotal festival with silver and golden flowers, abundantly 29  
with divers fragrant blossoms of the kind that grow on land  
and in water<sup>1</sup>, with food solid and soft, he laid up much merit.

At the head o' a great army he went forth twice to the 30  
same Mahiyāngāna and celebrated a great sacrificial festival.  
Twice the Lord of men went in faith to Sumanakūṭha, sacrificed 31

extraordinarily pacific compared with his predecessor. Although at first he had again and again to remonstrate with the Dutch about the non-fulfilment of obligations to which they had pledged themselves in the treaty of 1677 (see CODRINGTON, HC., p. 135; PIERIS 3, p. 46 f.) and al- though the Dutch managed to put the King off, there was no war during this whole period.

<sup>1</sup> The compiler must have had something of the sort in his mind. But I am doubtful if we should simply change *jātaka bahum* into *jākehi ca*, as does the Col. Ed. It might be better to assume an obscure expression on the part of the author. His knowledge of Pāli was by no means excellent. It is also hard to imagine that the second reading, if it did stand there originally, could have been corrupted into the first.

32 there and so laid up a store of merit. At the head of a great retinue he left the great city, went forth to the great (city)  
 33 Anurādhapura and celebrated a great sacrificial festival. He  
 had a robe made the size of the robe of the Deliverer<sup>1</sup> and  
 sacrificed to the Tooth of the Deliverer in divers ways with  
 34 articles befitting the sacrifice. Not far from the capital<sup>2</sup>, on  
 the fair bank cliff of the Gaṅgā, the Lord of men laid out  
 35 in a great cocopalm plantation a suburb by name Kūṇḍasālā  
 and dwelt there<sup>3</sup>. And there at that self-same spot he had  
 dwelling huts put up in fitting manner and made sāmaṇeras  
 take up their abode in them. He performed day by day many  
 36 good works like the giving of alms and the rest, had books  
 copied and when he saw that the temple which his royal  
 37 father had erected in the capital for the Tooth Relic, had  
 fallen into decay, his heart was grieved. The Lord of men  
 38 had the beautiful (temple) rebuilt, two-storeyed, splendid; he  
 provided it with a portal resplendent with all kinds of bri-  
 lliant ornaments, made it so that with its stucco coating it  
 39 resembled a mountain of silver, provided it with a graceful  
 roof and had thirty-two jātakas depicted in coloured painting<sup>4</sup>  
 on the two walls of the courtyard: the Vidhurajātaka<sup>5</sup>, the  
 40 Guttīlu- and Ummaggajātaka; the Dadbhivūhana-, Muñikauha-,  
 Sutanu- and Chuddantajātaka, the Dhammaddhuja-, Dhamma-  
 41 pāla- and Mahājuṇukajātaka; the Padamāpava-<sup>6</sup>, Dhamma-  
 souda-, Mahānāradakassaja-, Mahāpaduma-, Telapatta- and  
 42 Cullupadumajātaka; the Sattubhatta-, Aṇḍabhnita-, Campeyya-

<sup>1</sup> P. *sugata*, lit. "he who has gone well" who has gone ahead on the path to deliverance. R. O. FRANKE translated the word by "Pfadvollender" the "path finisher" or "path accomplisher".

<sup>2</sup> P. *mālapura*, Sirivālkhanu (Kandy) is meant. The Gaṅgā is, as often, the Mahaveliganga.

<sup>3</sup> Kundasale about four miles E. S. E. of Kandy, situated on the Mahaveliganga. The popular name for the King was Kundusala after this place which was his favorite residence.

<sup>4</sup> I am anticipating the words *ime deattimajātakē vicitacittakammēna kārapetvāna* in v. 44 d, 45 a.

<sup>5</sup> The Vidhurapāṇḍitajātaka, no. 545 of the FAUSHÖLL edition.

<sup>6</sup> Padakusalamāpavajātaka, no. 432 of FAUSHÖLL.

and Sasajātaka, the Visayha-, Kusa-, Sutasoma<sup>1</sup>, Sivi- and 43  
Temajātaka<sup>2</sup>; the Culladhanuddhara<sup>3</sup> and the Saccampikiraka- 44  
jātaka, the Dummedbhajātaka and the Kālingabodhijātaka;  
the Silavajātaka<sup>4</sup> and the Maṇḍavyajātaka<sup>5</sup>, as well as the  
Vessantarajātaka. While thus having these thirty-two jātakas 45  
faultlessly represented in coloured painting, the Lord of men  
laid up an immeasurable store of merit.

In the midst of the town he had erected round the great 46  
Bodhi tree, the cetiyas and the temple of Nāthasura<sup>6</sup> -- en-  
closing them on all sides — a fine wall of stone, massive, 47  
lofty, brilliant in its coating of stucco, like to a necklace of  
pearls adorning the necks of the ladies of the town and created  
thereby for himself an abundance of renown.

Among the sāmāyeras who lived at his own time (was one) 48  
who was dowered with the virtue of a moral life, who ever  
rejoiced in unweariedness, in the many works of elucidation 49  
and in the words of the Enlightened One, a poet, one learned  
in the scriptures, ready of speech, teacher of a host of disciples,  
renowned, who devoted his life to his own and to others' weal, 50  
who shone like the moon in the heaven of the Order in Laṅkā.  
For this sāmāyera, Sarapāṇkara by name, who was an abode 51  
of faith and of knowledge, rejoicing in unweariedness, the  
Ruler — distinguishing him again and again by honours 52  
spiritual and secular — had a reliquary made one and a  
half cubits high for preserving the reli of the King of the 53  
wise, the Enlightened One, the highest Protector of the world.  
He covered it with gold, set it with 700 jewels and made  
over the shimmering casket to the sāmāyera together with 54

<sup>1</sup> There are two jātakas of this name, the Mahū- and Cullasutasoma-  
jātaka, no. 537 and 525 of FAUSBÖL.

<sup>2</sup> Temiya- or Mūgapukkhajātaka, no. 538 of FAUSBÖL.

<sup>3</sup> Culladhanuggahajātaka, no. 374 of FAUSBÖL.

<sup>4</sup> Silavanāgajātaka, no. 72 of FAUSBÖL.

<sup>5</sup> Apparently the Kaṇhadīpāyanajātaka in which the ascetic Maṇḍavya  
plays the chief part. No. 444 of FAUSBÖL.

<sup>6</sup> Like Nāthadeva (100. 248) the name of Viṣṇu as the protecting  
deity (*nātha*) of the island.

the relic as well as many books about the true doctrine and  
 55 so distinguished him. The Lord of men granted him clothing  
 and other necessaries as well as numerous people for service  
 and honoured him thus with secular gifts.

56 To procure a long existence for the true doctrine, the Lord  
 of men invited (that same) Saranāmpkara in befitting manner  
 57 and had composed by this discerning sāmanera who strove  
 after pure enlightenment, that work on the true doctrine  
 entitled the Sāratthasampgaha, furnished with eleven thousand  
 58 sections<sup>1</sup>, further a commentary in the tongue of Lañkā on  
 Bhesajjamaijñīsā<sup>2</sup>, as well as a commentary on the work  
 59 Janibuddopī<sup>3</sup> by that discerning thera, assiduous in well-doing  
 60 who was head of the (bhikkhus) dwelling in the Pañcapari-  
 61 vēpa<sup>4</sup>, with the wish that thus those who have devoted them-  
 selves to the spiritual life should be spared illness. After the  
 62 wise (prince) had performed these and many other meritorious  
 works and had carried on the government for thirty and three  
 years, he fell into the power of death<sup>5</sup>.

<sup>1</sup> P. *grantha*. The meaning "section" is uncertain. In no case are we justified in referring to WILSON, as does W., according to whom the skr. *grantha* denotes a distinct number of syllables (32), because WILSON is speaking of a metre, which however W. himself admits.

<sup>2</sup> For this see GEIGER, Pāli, p. 25, no. 29. 2; MALALASEKERA, Pāli Literature of Ceylon, p. 156 ff. Whether by Saranāmpkara's "commentary" (*atthavaṇṇanā*) the Eju-Bodhiyāpsa is meant seems doubtful.

<sup>3</sup> "Medicine-chest". Probably a collection of recipes of the character of the Indian Bhaiṣajyaratnāvulī (Jou.v. Medicin, p. 2).

<sup>4</sup> Parakkamabāhu II. is meant.

<sup>5</sup> A monastery called Pañcapariveramūla is mentioned 67. 61. One could also translate: "of the bhikkhus living in the five pariveyas".

<sup>6</sup> The Chronicle concerns itself solely with the king's relation to the Church and is fulsome in its praise of his merits. It does not mention a single word about the conspiracy which nearly cost him his life. As little does it mention the very unsatisfactory conditions existing for the most part in the territories occupied by the Dutch nor the conflicts arising out of questions of commercial policy, between the people of

After the King had attained the highest bliss on the island of Laṅkā, he left behind his kinsfolk, his friends and his life, and went to that state where all that is left behind. When ye have grasped that, ye remembering the truth of the oral admonitions of the highest Sage, should practise meritorious doing that surpasses all else, that brings the bliss of deliverance, that grants the bliss of the world of the gods.

Here ends the ninety-seventh chapter, called «History of the Two Kings, of Vimaladhamma and his Successor», in the *Mahāvamsa*, compiled for the serene joy and emotion of the pious.

Kandy and the foreigners. Like his predecessor Narindasīha he kept the peace. At any rate the Dutch understood by occasional gifts to keep him in good humour. *Purus 3*, p. 52—65.

## CHAPTER XCVIII

## HISTORY OF SIRIVIJAYARĀJASIHA

1 After Narindasīha's death the younger brother<sup>1</sup> of the  
 2 Mahesī of this king<sup>2</sup> became king, adorned with the ornament  
 3 of virtue. Known by the name of Sirivijayarājasiha, he  
 4 was after the attainment of his consecration as king, piously  
 5 attached to the Triad of the jewels. He was diligent in  
 6 hearkening to the sermon of the doctrine, unwearied, discerning,  
 7 ever full of zeal intent on intercourse with pious and  
 8 good people. To establish his own dynasty he fetched prin-  
 cesses from the town of Madhurā and made them his chief  
 1 mahesis. He won over the people in Laṅkā in the best manner  
 2 possible by the four heart-winning qualities and took up his  
 3 abode in the fair town (Sirivadhbhana). The Mahesīs of the  
 4 King, too, gave up the false faith to which they had been  
 5 long attached, and adopted in the best manner possible the  
 6 true faith which confers immortality. They heard the in-  
 7 comparable, true doctrine of the Buddha, the highest Protector  
 8 of the world and thus adored with constant devotion the  
 Buddha and the other (sacred) objects. In their faith they

<sup>1</sup> In *kanithabhūla* I see the influence of the Sinhalese on the Pāli of the chronicler, *vu* being added in Sinhalese at the end of attributive adjectives.

<sup>2</sup> According to 97. 24 (cf. 98. 4), Narindasīha's Mahesī was a princess from Madhurā. With the ascent of the throne by her brother a foreign dynasty is thus introduced into Laṅkā. The series of Sinhalese kings ends with Narindasīha. The succession of Vijayarājasiha meanwhile, was not undisputed. A strong party at court supported the claims of Unambuva, a son of Narindasīha's by a concubine. It seems however, that he voluntarily renounced the throne. Later on he lived safe and sound at the court of Kandy.

worshipped the Tooth Relic day by day with sacrifice, with jasmine and other blossoms and with all kinds of flower festivals, with sweet betel mixed with camphor and other things, with lamps with fragrant oil, with sweet-smelling sandal wood and so forth, with divers kinds of fragrant incense, with sugar and honey and with other drugs, with garments, ornaments and so on, with silver and golden bowls which were abundantly filled with all that one can chew, eat, sip, drink and taste, with curtains, earpits and the like, with many articles of use and with costly robes — and thus and otherwise laid up a store of merit. They kept constantly the five moral commandments<sup>1</sup> and the uposatha vows even on days that were not uposathas, diligent in hearing the (sermon of the) true doctrine. Even as the yak cows (protect their tails)<sup>2</sup>, so they preserved the memory of the Buddha and the other (sacred objects)<sup>3</sup>. They worked for their perfection, had sacred books copied. They strove after the blessing that lies in generosity. They understood to perfection the regular offering of food and other (occasional) distribution of food to wandering or sick (bhikkhus). They were not attached to acquired wealth but dispensed (it in) continual feeding and the like. They made young people renounce the world, showed them favour of many kinds. They had good instruction given in the knowledge of the sacred scriptures and of pious duties and by dispensing always what was desired they were like to a wishing-tree. Kind beyond measure and very full of pity they thought of all people in Lankā as a mother of her children, and were merciful and mines of virtue. They had images and reliquaries fashioned in the best manner

<sup>1</sup> P. *pāñcasīlam*. Cf. with this Mhv. trsl. 1. 62.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. with this passage Buddhavamsa 2. 124 f. *yathāpi cāmarī rālam kismici patirilaggitam | upeti marañam taltha na eikopeti rāladhipi || ta-theva catusu bhūmisu sīlāni poripūriya | parirakkha sabbadā sīlam cāmari riya rālodhipi* — an allusion to the legend that the yaks would rather die than have any harm happen to their greatest ornament, their tail.

<sup>3</sup> There are six different *anussatiyo* — *Buddha-, dhamma-, saṅgha-, sthā-, cāga- and devatā-anussati*.

possible and always fearing every sin and ever rejoicing over  
 20 every meritorious deed, adorned with the ornament of such  
     and many other virtues, they were highly regarded in the  
 21 whole island of Laṅkā. The King had dwelling-places erected  
     here and there and made the sāmāperas take up their abode  
 22 in them and pious as he was, he showed them full of zeal,  
     much favour with garments and other necessaries, heard the  
 23 splendid true doctrine from these sāmāperas and revered  
     (especially) the sāmāvera Saravampkara by name who strong  
     in faith dwelt in the Uposathārāma, who was a mine of virtues.  
 24 He invited him and had a commentary on the four bhāṣavāras<sup>1</sup>  
     made by him in the language of Laṅkā and thus protected  
     the knowledge of the sacred scriptures.

25 Since the Lord of men had heard from foolish people out-  
     side (of the Buddhist Order) that great evil would befall if  
 26 he were to place the relic in a new relic temple, he gave  
     orders that this should be done by other people<sup>2</sup> and betook  
     himself thence to another town. While he sojourned there  
 27 the dignitaries assembled and together with the caretakers<sup>3</sup>  
     and other people, they tried with all their might to open the  
 28 reliquary. But although they tried the whole night long they  
     did not succeed. The dignitaries went thither and told the  
 29 matter to the Great king. When the King heard that, he  
     came in haste to the splendid town and after the Ruler had  
     reverently made offerings with all kinds of fragrant flowers,  
 30 with lamps, incense and the like and shown his reverence,

<sup>1</sup> For purposes of recitation the whole of the Tipiṭaka is divided into *bhāṣavāras*, sections of equal length. There are said to be 2547 of these (CUNNERS, s. v.). It seems to me, however, as if the word in our passage is used instead of *nikāya*. The commentary would then have embraced Dīgha-, Majjhima-, Saṃyutta- and Aṅguttara-Nikāya.

<sup>2</sup> The passage is wrongly rendered by W. *Aññam puram* is not governed by *kātum* in 26 b, it belongs to *gaṇṭrā*, but *kātum* must be supplemented by the object ("it") from the preceding.

<sup>3</sup> *Vattakārakā* (meaning literally "fulfilling the duty or the task") refers I believe, to the guardians who were appointed just at that time, to look after the shrines and see that they were kept in proper condition. See PIERIS 3, p. 70.

he took hold of the lock and at once opened the reliquary without difficulty. Then after opening one after the other the 31 caskets inside it, he beheld the Tooth of the Enlightened One. "It is accomplished, with success" uttering these joyful words, 32 he assembled the inhabitants of the town, prepared a great feast and celebrated a great sacrificial festival. As he gazed 33 on the wonderful (relic) the Monarch was transported with joy and enthusiasm. As offerings he presented an elephant and a horse, jewels, pearls and the like, took the saered Tooth 34 of the Prince of the wise in the lotus of his hand, showed it forth and so caused all tu rejoice in perfect fashion. The 35 relic temple built in the time of former kings he furnished with all kinds of stuffs interwoven with gold, lit lamps with 36 divers-smelling oils, had filled jars placed about, and then in this gaily decorated temple, like to a heavenly temple, he 37 placed on a silver throne the Tooth of the Prince of the wise. He arranged a great festival, made a saerifice to the relic and 38 after cleannsing the whole town in a worthy manner and strewing it with sand he placed during this festival of the 39 Tooth Relic, round about the temple, within in the court and without on the terrace, further in the royal court and in all 40 the streets on either side with lofty poles placed upright, an unbroken series of festive arches, bound thereon banana stalks 41 and adórned them fair with areea and coconut blossoms and other flowers. With the brightly hued, gleaming and shimmer- 42 ing streamers tied bunch-wise to the points of the poles, the sky above the town looked pleasant as if it were filled with flights of 43 cranes. Here and there he placed in due order filled jars and 44 in the mayḍapas in a circle in front of the temple terrace he fastened canopies shimmering with silver and golden and other embroideries, hung thereabont brightly gleaming curtains, 45 spread there in fair fashion carpets resplendent with many a 46 work of art and also strewed around the five kinds of flowers, lāja and the like<sup>1</sup>. Then after the Ruler had put the whole 47

<sup>1</sup> P. *lājapāñcamakam*, lit. "that in which *lāja* is the fifth". See for this PTS. P. D. s. v. *lāja*. This is the name for the blossom of the

city in order so that it looked as if the former kings of Laṅkā were celebrating a festival with the thought that in like fashion the King of the gods makes a feast in the city of the gods<sup>1</sup>, he himself with royal ornaments adorned, gathered together in that town the sāmaṇeras who dwelt in Laṅkā, further the lay brethren and lay sisters, all the inhabitants of the town and the people who dwelt outside in the provinces. Out of mercy towards them<sup>2</sup> the Ruler of the earth for whom pity was the highest, flung himself on the ground in most humble posture<sup>3</sup> and so worshipped the Tooth of the Prince of the wise. Then the King took it in the lotus of his hand and his heart filled with the highest joy, he left the relic temple. With silver umbrellas, with a golden casket, with row upon row of fair fly whisks, with manifold offerings of flowers, consisting of silver, golden and other blooms, with divers jewels and pearls, with robes, ornaments and many other sacrificial articles, with the fivefold music<sup>4</sup> he celebrated a great sacrificial festival, like to a stream flowing on uninterruptedly. Then the King, the Ruler of Laṅkā betook himself

*dalbergia urhoren*. W's version is quite different (note to the passage). He takes *lāja* in the sense of "roasted rice" and remarks "Paddy when roasted bursts and the grain inside the husk expands in the shape of a beautiful white flower. These are used on public occasions and festivals as a mark of respect, for showing the ground whereon a shrine is taken or on which a high person walks over."

<sup>1</sup> The style is extremely stilted. Literally the passage should be translated thus: "showing the town in such a way that one would be obliged to say: in such wise did the former princes of Laṅkā celebrate a festival, whereby they thought: thus doth the King of the gods etc. etc." The idea is this: the King has adorned the city as magnificently as the kings of yore were wont to do on like occasions, and the splendour they displayed was due to the fact that they imitated divine models.

<sup>2</sup> He will not rob the people of the purifying spectacle of the sacred relic.

<sup>3</sup> P. *pañcavatīthitango*, lit. with a body in which five (parts of the body) lie fast. CHILDESS thus explains the term: "to prostrate oneself before a superior so completely that the forehead, elbows, waist, knees and feet rest on the ground."

<sup>1</sup> See note to 85. 30.

to the madapa outside (in front of the temple) which was adorned with divers bright ornament and standing here, displayed the sacred Tooth. Having thus given the greatest joy 56 to the mighty multitude gathered round, he brought the Tooth Relic back to its place. Thns by bringing full contentment 57 to all as if by the sight of the Buddha in person, he laid up a store of much good.

Now after the Lord of men had offered abundantly with 58 all kinds of ornament, such as gold, jewels, pearls and the like, with sacrificial offerings like elephants, horses, slaves 59 male and female, with flowers like jasmine, champaka<sup>1</sup> and other blossoms, with fragrant sandal wood and the like, he 60 bethought himself of the great blessing inherent in a sacrifice of lamps. Hence the Lord of men issued the command that in their own town and in the cetiyas in the divers provinces on one and the same day<sup>2</sup>, people should make an offering 61 of lamps, and in that selfsame night he gathered together the people and celebrated a sacrifice of lamps with seven hundred 62 and ninety thousand, six hundred lamps. Thus with burning 63 lamps the Ruler of Laṅkā made the land of Laṅkā like to the star-strewn firmament. With an offering of three hundred<sup>3</sup> 64 thirty and three thousand, eight hundred flowers he laid up a store of merit.

This King rich in virtue who found joy in causing images 65 of the Buddha to be made, had erected in Alomalena<sup>4</sup> and other vihāras in the province of Mātula, as well as here and there in the rock temples of the various (other) provinces, Buddha 66 statues in life-size, in recumbent, standing and sitting posture and new celiyas which bring happiness to living creatures, and he had many decayed image houses restored and increased 67 thereby showing favour to the people, the quantity of his merit.

<sup>1</sup> *Michelia champaka*; Sinh. *sapu-mal*.

<sup>2</sup> The words *ekāhe va* must be taken in the oratio recta.

<sup>3</sup> For *koti* which here probably means 100,000, see PTS. P. D. s. v. In has the general meaning of an extremely high number.

<sup>4</sup> Now the Alu-vihāra not far from Matale situated in the cleft of a mighty primeval landslide.

68 In the town of Sirivaijilhana the Lord of men did away with the royal palace and many other buildings that had 69 been founded formerly but had meanwhile fallen into decay. In place of these the Lord of men built new houses which 70 excelled by reason of their mason work and the like, made fine gates<sup>1</sup> and erected a magnificent gate-building furnished with iron gateways, adorned with ornaments<sup>2</sup> of divers form and consisting of two storeys.

71 While he resided in this town, he full of zeal when listening to the sermon of the doctrine, had maṇḍapas erected 72 within the royal courtyard. He furnished them completely with coloured arches and the like, put up canopies, spread 73 seats, brought then with great ceremony<sup>3</sup> many preachers of the true doctrine thither, made them be seated and lay hold 74 of their white fans. Then he hearkened to the good, heart-penetrating doctrine as it was preached by them along with enlightening explanation and the like, and filled with pious 75 joy the Ruler honoured it with gold and silver, with lamps, incense and the like, with divers coloured stuffs, (in short) 76 with sacrificial articles of every kind, the Monarch himself in common with the dignitaries and the troops and so on many occasions laid up a store of abundant good.

77 Now when the King heard through the true doctrine that spiritual offerings<sup>4</sup> are a great thing, he intent on the welfare of the people dwelling in the various provinces, had dwellings and sermon halls erected here and there in places 78 fitted for the assembling of a great multitude of people. Then the Lord of men sent to the various places numerous preachers of the doctrine and others, had the people gathered together and the true doctrine preached to them and in this way he offered a spiritual offering.

<sup>1</sup> One is tempted here to join *cārudcārāni yojetrū* with the following *ayodvārasamāgutom*, but for its giving a scarcely tolerable tautology.

<sup>2</sup> P. *latākanma*, lit. "creeper work".

<sup>3</sup> P. *mahussavena*, not as W. translates "with much trouble". That would be *mahussāhena*.

<sup>4</sup> P. *dhammadāna*, every kind of religious instruction. The opposite is *āmisadāna* "secular offering" (food, clothing etc.).

The infamous Paraṅgis, the infidels, the impious ones who at the time of King Rājasīha had still remained behind in the town and now dwelling here and there, rich in cunning, endeavoured by gifts of money and the like to get their creed adopted by others, led a life without reverence for the doctrine (of the Buddha). When the King heard thereof he became vehemently indignant, issued commands to his dignitaries, had their houses and their books destroyed and banished from the country those who did not give up their faith<sup>1</sup>.

On the Sumanakūṭa made sacred by the footprint of the Enlightened One the Ruler celebrated a sacrifice of lamps and all other festivals. In Anurādhapura, in Mahiyāngāpa and in other places he likewise celebrated a great sacrificial festival. To east and west (of the town) where water made the road impassable, he had stone bridges put up for the comfort of those coming and going.

When the Monarch realised that the Order of the Victor was declining because a bhikkhu community was not to be had in Laṅkā he was greatly moved. As he was minded to invite a bhikkhu community, he considered in every possible way where the Order of the Sage could possibly still exist. Then he heard from the Olandas<sup>2</sup> the welcome news that the Order still existed in various countries, in Pegu, Rakkhaṅga,

<sup>1</sup> The King's measures are thus directed against the Roman Catholic Church and against the Portuguese still settled in the country. For the Catholic mission in Ceylon at the time of the Dutch settlement and its ultimate suppression see PIERIS 3, p. 70 f.

<sup>2</sup> The only passage where Vijayarājasīha's relations with the Dutch are noted. If in spite of the friction caused by trade, these relations led to no open rupture, this was largely due to the easy going and at times really feeble policy of the Dutch. Their forbearance was met by increased claims on the part of the court of Kandy. An embassy to Pegu was first sent off in the year 1740. The Dutch Company placed a vessel at its disposal which was however wrecked off the coast of Pegu. A second embassy seems to have gone to Siam in 1741. Envoys of the Sinhalese king came also in 1746 to Siam and succeeded in persuading a number of bhikkhus to undertake the journey to Ceylon. Vijayarājasīha however, died 1747 before their arrival. See CODRINGTON, HC. p. 139 f. and especially p. 154; PIERIS 3, p. 71 ff.

90 Sāminda<sup>1</sup>. Now in order to test the condition of the Order of the Sage in these various countries, the King had letters 91 carefully written in the sacred language<sup>2</sup>, gave them over to ministers and other dignitaries and sent these forth singly.

When the Lord of men heard the news that in the kingdom 92 of Ayejjhā<sup>3</sup> the Order existed in all its purity and in the best condition, in order to bring from that same country sons of 93 the Victor to Laiikā, he sent dignitaries thither to whom he gave a writing together with many gifts and sacrificial implements.

94 For the placing therein of the Tooth of the Prince of the wise the Monarch had a fair, golden reliquary made one and a half cubits high and encrusted with costly jewels and pearls. 95 But before it was finished his merit was exhausted<sup>4</sup> after he had reigned eight years.

96 This prince who was adorned with the ornament of faith and of many other virtues, who was at pains to purify to the utmost the splendid Order of the Buddha, that best of men after he had done much good, went finally thither to Namuci<sup>5</sup>.

97 In this wise did the King of Laiikā whose joy was in the welfare of others, who worked for his own and others' salvation, carry on the government, as best among the best, the Ruler of men who loved virtue. Ye who wish for your prosperity in this world and for abundant happiness in the world beyond must therefore wholly give up indolence and do a multitude of meritorious works which will bring you many a happiness.

Here ends the ninety-eighth chapter, called «History of Sirivijayarājasiha», in the Mahāvamsa, compiled for the serene joy and emotion of the pious.

<sup>1</sup> Name of Siam.

<sup>2</sup> P. *mūlabhāsā* "fundamental or main language", i. e. Pāli.

<sup>3</sup> Ayodhyā, now Ayuthya, name of the old capital of Siam, north of Bangkok, situated on the banks of the Menam. Cf. J. DÄHLMANN, Indische Fahrten (1927) I. 111 ff.

<sup>4</sup> The *pūñña* in virtue of which he had attained the royal dignity. For "reigned" the original has *ṭhito* "lived (as king)".

<sup>5</sup> Skr. *namuci* is the name of one of the demons slain by Indra. In Pāli Namuci is a designation of Māra (S. I. 67<sup>10</sup>; A. II. 15<sup>10</sup>) specially of Kilesmāra (Jät. V. 455<sup>10</sup>), in our passage of the god of death.

## CHAPTER XCIX

ACCOUNT OF THE KING'S CONSECRATION  
AND OF OTHER FESTIVALS

After the passing of this Monarch dowered with splendid 1 virtues, his brother-in-law<sup>1</sup> became king of kings. Gifted with physical beauty (he was) a delight to the eyes of the people, filling the whole superb island of Laṅkā with splendour, a prince of glorious grace.

When in the island of Laṅkā the year two thousand, two 2 hundred and ninety since the nirvana of the Enlightened One had come<sup>2</sup> this Ruler of men whose joy was the welfare of 3 Laṅkā, comforted his subjects who were afflicted by their parting from the Great king. This whole people racked by 4 suffering, like to the darkness (which sets in) when the sun after it has illumined the whole world, goes down — the far-famed King made free from grief, like to the (newly) rising sun which illuminates the whole world (afresh) and having taken 5 over the royal dignity of Laṅkā, he made everyone joyful to the utmost. After attaining his consecration as king, the Lord of men who was devoted in faith to the Triad of the 7 jewels, Buddha and the others, strove unweariedly after merit. The highly famed one had the whole town (of Sirivallhana) 8 cleansed and decorated with stuffs, triumphal arches and the like. Then he gathered together the whole of the inhabitants of Laṅkā completely in the fair, glorious town and moving 9 along with royal magnificence, the Great king whose merit

<sup>1</sup> The brother of Vijayarājasiha's Mahesi who according to 98.4, came from Madhurā. He had come to the court of Kandy with his sister and with his father Narenappa Nayaker.

<sup>2</sup> = A. D. 1746. The right year for Vijayarājasiha's death is 1747.

was now having its effect<sup>1</sup>, marched round the town, his right side turned towards it, thus making known that the realm of  
 10 Laṅkā bereft of its king had again a king. The Lord of men dowered with abundant merit, resided in Sirivadḍhama.  
 11 The virtuous one had (already aforetime) made the firm resolve<sup>2</sup> to shelter the Order of the Sage and now under the name of Kittisirirājasiha he ruled gloriously this our Laṅkā. Enjoying the good fortune of the royal dignity of Laṅkā, full of discernment, recognizing that his wealth consisted in faith, he mindful of what things are of worth and of what things are worthless, prepared in piety a festival  
 12 for the three sacred objects, Buddha and so forth<sup>3</sup>. He gave up evil friends and enjoyed intercourse with the learned people; he passed his time with the good and hearkened to  
 13 the incomparable doctrine. Pious and wise as he was, the Lord of men distinguished between what should be done and what should not be done. What should not be done he avoided,  
 14 but to that which should be done he held fast. By the four heart-winning qualities he made all people well disposed to  
 15 him and he was worthy of the praise of the learned. Hearing that reward lies in a spiritual offering<sup>4</sup> and success in the hearkening to the true doctrine and merit in the copying of works of the true doctrine, as also in sacrificial festivals for  
 16 the doctrine he thought: that which is in accordance with the true doctrine<sup>5</sup> must be done. He had mayūpūs erected in

<sup>1</sup> For *pūññoraya* — here used as an adjective — see note to 37.139.

<sup>2</sup> P. *pañidhayo katvāgato*. I regard *katvāgato* again as a compound verb formed under the influence of the Sinhalese, of the type *geṇenātā*: *geṇatā*. The King had already made the resolve in a former existence. The effect in the present of his meritorious *kamma* is that he becomes king of Laṅkā (P. *patvāna Laṅkāpi imay*), and he can now carry out his resolve.

<sup>3</sup> V. 6c to the close of v. 11 is a single sentence. The construction is however, quite inorganic and it is impossible to translate the sentence as a whole. It is the same with the following.

<sup>4</sup> See note to 98.77.

<sup>5</sup> P. *saddhammato* must be understood adverbially. Cf. skr. *dharmaṭas* "according to law or rule, lawfully."

many places for sermons, made canopies therein of stuff of 17 varied colours, furnished them in every possible way with arches and other ornaments, lit lamps and spread seats, brought 18 thither with worthy service and honour preachers of the true 19 doctrine, invited them full of reverence, made them sit down 20 on the well prepared seats, made these preachers recite parts 21 of the true doctrine and listened with devotion the whole night long to many suttas, such as the Dhammacakka Sutta<sup>1</sup> and others. Since he recognized the worthlessness 22 of body, life and wealth as worthlessness and the worth of listening to the true doctrine as worth, he was pious and 23 joyful and celebrated in common with the dignitaries and the troops, a great festival with articles of sacrifice of every kind. For the welfare and blessing of the multitudes dwelling within 24 and without the town the Lord of men repeatedly had spiritual offerings offered and thus performed a meritorious work consisting in spiritual offerings.

Full of reverence towards the bhikkhu community<sup>2</sup> who 25 had come from Rakkhaṅga, towards the bhikkhus of Lanikā and towards the many sāmaṇeras, who had renounced the world, the Lord of men showed them favour with offerings 26 of robes and other necessaries and had the Paritta and other salutary texts recited by them. Thus on many occasions he 27 furthered the true doctrine, made offerings of necessities and so increased the store of his merit.

At a cost of nine thousand, six hundred (kātāpayas) he 28 in his piety had a magnificent golden book made. On its 29 golden leaves he had many Suttas inscribed such as the

<sup>1</sup> What is meant is the story of the Buddha's first sermon in Bārāgañī to the *pañcacakkyiyā bhikkhū*, the companions of his earlier period of asceticism. The account is given in the Vinaya, Mahāvagga I. 6. 10 ff. (= I. 8 ff.). Cf. S. V. 420 ff.

<sup>2</sup> Bhikkhus from Rakkhaṅga had come to Ceylon under Vimaladhammasuriya I. (94. 15) and under the second king of this name (97. 10). Kittisiri had some brought from Siam. This is narrated as a kind of appendix in 100. 54 ff. In all probability the Siamese monks are to be considered as included in this passage.

30 Dhanimacakka Sutta and others and had these recited by preachers of the true doctrine the whole night long. Honouring them with many articles, he listened repeatedly to the  
 31 incomparable doctrine. The Lord of men called scribes together,  
 made them copy out in one day the Dīgha-Nikāya<sup>1</sup>, showed  
 32 them much favour and then had the sacred text preached the  
 whole night long in the right manner. He celebrated a great  
 33 sacrificial festival, listened to (texts) and recited himself. In  
 his piety he had the Saṃyutta-Nikāya and many other books  
 34 copied and gave the scribes money. People who had renounced  
 the world and inhabitants of houses<sup>2</sup> had other sacred books  
 carefully copied and when these were shown to him he was  
 35 highly pleased, showed them with money and other gifts much  
 favour and thus in his pious zeal took a share in the merit of  
 other dwellers in Lankā.

36 Yearning for merit the Lord of men betook himself with  
 his retinue to superb Anurādhapura. Here the King sacrificed  
 37 to the Bodhi tree and the sacred cetiyas with elephants, and  
 horses, with gold, silver and the like, and thus in divers ways  
 38 laid up a store of pious works. Then too in royal splendour  
 the highly-famed Lord of men visited the Mahiyaṅgava-cetiya  
 and the superb Nakhā-cetiya and reverenced them by the  
 celebration of a great festival and so laid up a store of merit.  
 39 In order to honour with sacrifices the beautiful cetiyas and  
 vihāras erected by the Lord of men Parakkama in superb Pu-  
 40 latthinagara, the highly famed King rich in faith, betook  
 himself thither with a great retinue and sacrificed to them in  
 41 the right way. Endowed with faith and other virtues the King  
 also honoured the Rajata-vihāra<sup>3</sup> and brought together a store  
 of merit.

42 After a sacrificial festival for the lotus-hued patron god  
 and other deities such as was popularly recognized as bring-

<sup>1</sup> P. *dīghāgamā*; *ūgama* is synonym for *nikāya*. The same in 33 *saṃyuttāgama*.

<sup>2</sup> P. *pabbajitā* and *gahatīṇī*, i. e. priests and laymen. The sentence in 34-35 is linguistically quite incorrect.

<sup>3</sup> Now Ridi-vihāra, north of Kurunegala.

ing luck even in the days of former sovereigns of Lañkā<sup>1</sup>, he had for the purpose of a military display<sup>2</sup>; the whole town without exception put in order like the city of the gods. He gathered together all the inhabitants of Lañkā and in the town he had the people from the individual provinces separated and made them dwell in different places, provided with standards. Then he had the symbols<sup>3</sup> in the temples of the gods placed on the back of an elephant. He had the elephant surrounded<sup>4</sup> by divers beaters of the drum and the tambourine and by crowds of dancers<sup>5</sup>, by various groups of elephants and divers groups of horses, by people wearing the Brahman dress of various stuffs and with (divers) ornaments, by people carrying divers umbrellas and divers fly-whisks; by various groups of women and various groups of dignitaries, by people carrying divers shields and divers swords, by such as carried divers spears and various symbols<sup>6</sup>, by such as carried various stuffs

<sup>1</sup> Something of this sort must have been in the mind of the chronicler when he wrote this passage with its absolutely confused style. *Mungala-sampūtataṇi* must be taken as attribute to *yañjā* contained in the compound which follows (42 c d). The Col. Ed. tries at least to smooth away the difficulties by reading instead of the *obhīpālā* of the MSS. *obhūpū ra*. I fear this amounts to a correction of the author.

<sup>2</sup> P. *senanyadussaraththāya*, W. does not give the full sense of this expression. That a military tournament is meant is clear from verses 44-45 a b. The assembled people are divided according to the individual local contingents of which the army is made up. Each contingent has its special flag. The army thus forms the main element in the festive procession.

<sup>3</sup> P. *deratthāna-ūruñdhāni*. Skr. *āyudha* means besides "weapon", "implement" in general. W. translates quite correctly "the emblems of the gods that were in the temples".

<sup>4</sup> Anticipates *hutthīṇi purivūriya* in v. 51.

<sup>5</sup> The compound is not in the least clear. *Muddalakehi* at the end seems to be an adjective form; *sampūttaṇa* might be used substantively as is often the case with the past part = "accumulation". The wearisome repetition of *nānū* in the sequel is probably meant to express the endlessness of the procession. The same occurs in 85. 112 ff. and 88. 117 ff. The words *sōṇu* and *rūpiya* are repeated in the same way in 85. 26 ff. and 89. 19 ff.

<sup>6</sup> Here again *ūruñdhā* is used. I should prefer here to take the word

50 and various banners; by people who had come from various regions and who understood the different tongues; by such as were practised in the various arts and by divers artisans —  
 51 with such and many other people he had the elephant surrounded, ordering them to go immediately in front or behind.  
 52 Thereupon the King set forth, like to the Prince of the gods, with great (and) royal splendour and marched round the whole town, his right side turned towards it. Finally<sup>1</sup> they all arrived again and entered (the town) according to their rank<sup>2</sup>.  
 53 When our King of kings<sup>3</sup>, dowered with faith, wisdom and other virtues, was wont every year to hold the Āsālhi<sup>4</sup>  
 54 festival, he was minded beforehand to celebrate a sacrificial festival for the Buddha. He had a canopy fastened on the  
 55 back of the royal elephant beautifully ornamented with gold embroidery. Then he laid the elephant whose tusk was as  
 56 the bright moon<sup>5</sup>, decorated with ornaments and then surrounded by (other) elephants whose riders held in their hand silver umbrellas and fly-whisks<sup>6</sup> and flowers of every kind, by

in the same sense as in v. 45, as "weapons" are already mentioned in the foregoing.

<sup>1</sup> P. *nikkhile* used as adverb, as also in v. 53.

<sup>2</sup> This verse is a good example of the utter neglect of style where the subject *so rājā* (*nikkhamitvā*, *katrā*) in the same verse is followed by the plural predicate *pucisanti*.

<sup>3</sup> P. *ambākam rājārājānam*. The expression "our King" is particularly noteworthy. In the whole of the Mahāvaipuṇya it occurs only here under Kittisirirājasiha (cf. also v. 133 and 163, as well as 100, 228) and seems to prove that our section was composed under this king and during his lifetime, cf. v. 76 ff. and note to 109, 300. The construction of the sentence is again quite confused. The subject stands in the acc.; *-gupādāyo* which I regard as a transposition of *-ādīgupāyo*, is changed by the Col. Ed. into *-yupādāyo*. But does this help us much? The sentence remains in disorder.

<sup>4</sup> The āsālha month corresponds to June-July. The festival held in this month brings in the rainy season. H. KERN, Manual of Indian Buddhism, p. 100.

<sup>5</sup> P. *sūbhā-cantī-rālam*. I separate the compound thus, *cantī* seeming to me to stand for skr. *candra* or *candrin*. The explanation is however, uncertain.

<sup>6</sup> The acc. *rajataechattucāmara* is governed by *gāhaka* in the follow-

people having in their hand articles of sacrifice and wearing garlands of flowers, by people with various banners and pennons and by such as wore divers garments, by various royal dignitaries and by people come hither from various regions. Finally the Lord of men placed the splendid sparkling casket of gold in which the bodily relic<sup>1</sup> of the Buddha was contained carefully under the canopy and by the strewing of flowers let a rain of flowers rain (upon it). With the shouts of the cries of "Hail"!, with the sound of the shell trumpets and the cymbals and with the rattle of the various drums celebrating high festival<sup>2</sup>, good and pious people their hearts filled with astonishment and admiration, with hands folded before the brow, paid lasting reverence (to the relic). But the Lord of men had the Tooth Relic reverenced with all kinds of particularly costly sacrificial gifts by people who bore lumps on poles and who were festively attired. Then placing at the head the relic which holds the first place among all things worthy of reverence by gods, demons and men, he ordered all the rest, such as gods<sup>3</sup> and men to follow behind. He himself in royal splendour to the strains of hymns of praise which promised happiness, set forth in all the majesty of a Great king, with great magnificence showing men how even thus the King of the gods in the city of the gods is wont to celebrate high festival for the relics.

Dowered with faith and many other virtues, devoted to the Buddha, his Doctrine and his Order, collected, mindful of what is worth and of what is worthless, ever performing meritorious works, such as almsgiving and the like; distinguished by splendid virtues, piety, wisdom, mercy, shining over the

ing compound. Thus we have again to do with a compound resolved into its component parts (= *rajatachuttucūmarapupphagāhukārālhahuttihī*).

<sup>1</sup> Not "relics" (W.); it is only a case of the Tooth Relic.

<sup>2</sup> I am inclined to think that *kārente* which might be the direct equivalent of the skr. *kīrayautas*, belongs to the following *jāvā pājenti*.

<sup>3</sup> By *surā* are meant the figures of deities or divine symbols which are carried in processions.

island, with faith in the Enlightened One, living according to the good doctrine of the Sage, dowered with the ten powers<sup>1</sup>, ever giving alms and performing other meritorious works unweariedly and full of zeal, mindful of what is worth and of what is worthless, he ever acted in this way for the welfare of all men.

68 With great ceremony he instituted day by day a great festival for the Tooth Relic, reverential towards the triad of the jewels. His own community which had been received into the Order in his own time, he provided in pious reverence from his own property with the four articles of use. Devoted in piety to the true doctrine he listened again and again to (the preaching of the) doctrine and accumulated in pious reverence numerous meritorious works. He furthered during the lifetime of the Buddha the Order of the Victor and increased the happiness of the people dwelling in Laṅkā. When he heard of the doings of former kings, of Parakkamabāhu and others, he recognized it as right and imitated their doings.

73 He learned the duties of a king, was filled with reverence for kingly duties, shunned the (four) false paths, schooled himself in the four heart-winning qualities, showed his brothers and others all favour by befitting action, made them contented and won their hearts by caring for them in the right way.

75 In this manner the Sovereign of Laṅkā, the Lord of men, whose joy was in the welfare of others sheltered in the best way, ever unweariedly the Order of the Master as likewise the laity, and when he learned the history of the many rulers of men who had formerly been kings in Laṅkā, he mused on their deeds and made the resolve: "I also will fulfil the duties of a king." In making this resolve he thought of the work, entitled *Mahāvamsa*<sup>2</sup>, in which the ancient history of the kings of the great dynasty as of those of the lesser dynasty is narrated in the form of verses, from *Mahāsaṃmata* to (the

<sup>1</sup> See PTS. P. D. s. v. *bala*.

<sup>2</sup> For this passage see my edition of the *Cūlavamsa*, I, Introduction p. IV-V.

kings of) Hattisclapura<sup>1</sup>. And the King of Laṅkā caused an 78 examination to be made in due order of this book existing on the island of Laṅkā and<sup>4</sup> of the same chronicle of the kings of Laṅkā brought from the Sāminda country — of these two 79 books separately — and when he heard that the Mahāvāipa 80 was deficient, he also caused the unknown history of the kings of the latter time — beginning with Parakkamabāhu up to the kings of the present time — to be written down and to be continued (thus) the royal chronicle.

Thus while he neither transgressed the commandments (laid 81 down) for a king nor the precepts of religion, the Lord of men carried on the royal government in justice and peace. In 82 accordance with the duties of a king he daily did good, such as almsgiving and the like, mindful of the sublime religion, practising the four heart-winning things, practising generosity 83 and friendly speech and care for the welfare of others, and constant in condescension. To show the world that he respected 84 his royal brothers<sup>2</sup> as himself he assigned the two uparājas vehicles and retinue and every kind of distinction, made them 85 thus completely contented and thus showed forth in the best way the fourfold heart-winning qualities. These two who 86 in this wise attained distinction, celebrated each for himself a great festival for the Tooth Relic. They had books copied

<sup>1</sup> I. e. Kurunegula. According to this passage the chronicle came down to the time of Parakkamabāhu IV., who resided in Kurunegula. The MSS. confirm this where after 90. 102 a new section begins. The mode of expression in this passage (v. 80) is only in so far inexact as the reign of Parakkamabāhu IV. does not begin the new part but stands at the close of the old. That the Siamese Mahāvāipa goes further than the original Mahāvāipa of Mahānāma is not expressly stated. The Mahānāyaka of the Malvatu-vihāra in Kandy, Tibbatuvava, was entrusted by the King with the task of comparing the two chronicles and of completing the Sinhalese Mahāvāipa (cf. P. E. PERIS, 3, p. 142). In all probability, therefore, he was the author of chapters 90. 104 to 100 of the Mahāvāipa.

<sup>2</sup> The King had two brothers of whom the one was brought with him and his sister to Ceylon by their father Narenappa Nayuker (PERIS 3, p. 73) while the youngest was born there.

87 and gave the scribes money. They invited the bhikkhu community and each for himself continually gave them alms, such  
 88 as constant maintenance and the like. By listening to the pious doctrine they learned to distinguish between what should  
 89 be done and what should be left undone, abhorred sinful  
 90 actions and were full of zeal for meritorious deeds. By testing they discovered the ablest, most skilful and most pious sāmaṇeras;  
 91 and to these sāmaṇeras they presented as gift the eightfold necessities<sup>1</sup>, so that they were worthy of a king, had the ceremony of admission to the Order performed for them and took care that they were rightly instructed in the precepts of monastic discipline and in the suttantas. Then they had dwellings erected which was a great blessing<sup>2</sup> (for themselves),  
 92 made the monks dwell therein caring for them meanwhile in worthy fashion full of reverence. They considered in every way what should be done for the laity and the Order, developed in accordance with the intentions of the King, kindness towards the good and sternness towards the bad, according to  
 93 their deserts, strove in this wise and with other means after good and acted according to the intentions of the King as good friends of the laity and of the Order.

94 Many former kings for the sake of gaining the royal dignity or for other reasons did not look on each other as  
 95 brothers or otherwise (as friends), but fought one another and as a result of their discord their subjects were even so minded. But these three (brothers) who had yet attained such royal power, shunned all discord and showed no weaknesses. They dwelt together in one town and were ever friendly with one  
 96 another as their own shadows. Thus there was never the least enmity among them on account of the royal dignity and they developed the virtues of the Bodhisatta in the Silavajātaka<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> See note to 60. 71.

<sup>2</sup> On account of the merit, the *puñña*, inherent in such performances.

<sup>3</sup> Cf. Mahāsilavajātaka (Nr. 51), FASERÖL I. 261 ff. The point of the comparison lies in the fact that the Bodhisatta as King Mahāsilava of Benares, although his position was threatened by the Kosala king, undertakes no deed of violence in order to preserve his kingdom.

The Licchavis too of Visālā carried on the government in 98 harmony and without discord and won thereby the victory<sup>1</sup>. Rulers of men of little discernment, infatuated by the beauty 99 of the maiden Laṅkā, did what they ought not to have done and fell in consequence into much misfortune. But, rulers of 100 great discernment, made happy by the beauty of the maiden Laṅkā, did what they ought and were thereby happy and famous. As rulers of this kind have these three Lords of men 101 held fast to harmony, and I say: that was wonderful.

When the Great king, rich in virtue, saw his brother to 102 whom he had granted the umbrella and other distinctions enter (in pomp) with royal retinue, he rejoiced, gazed at him 103 again and again and realized thus in himself the unique, sublimest spiritual perfection<sup>2</sup>.

As the highest in the dynasties of the princes of the earth, 104 as supporting pillars of the Order, possessed of immeasurable virtue, living according to the pious doctrine, shunning to follow the path of evil, associating with pious friends, desirous of reaching the road to the salutary path of deliverance — thus 105 these Rulers dowered with pious virtue, who saw in faith their highest good, did honour with sacrifice in piety to the Tooth of the blessed Enlightened One and to the Doctrine and the Order, accumulated abundant merit assuring the fullest salvation and piously sheltered the Order of the Sage and this stainless Laṅkā. For ever (therefore) shall one honour this 106 Ruler of Laṅkā, distinguished by virtue, who ever remembers the fulness of valuable qualities of the Sage, the sole Lord protector of the world, having piously accepted them in his heart, and who then further remembers<sup>3</sup> his sublime doctrine and his Order<sup>4</sup>.

<sup>1</sup> Visālī, name for Vesālī (note to 37, 80). Our verse alludes to the fact that the Licchavis were able to maintain themselves against the advancing Kosalas while the Sakiyas succumbed to them. RAY DAVIDS, Buddhist India, p. 259—60.

<sup>2</sup> P. *bhārayit . . brahmabhāvanāy ekakayi*. W. translates freely "only turned his mind to contemplate the virtue of benevolence to all men."

<sup>3</sup> I translate *anussarantam* thus in contrast to the preceding *saratam*, the former being a necessary corollary of the latter.

<sup>4</sup> *Dhammagāṇam* is a dyandva compound and *gāṇa* = *saṅgha*.

107 Thus this Monarch dowered with great royal power, the great King of kings, protected the Order of the Sage and this stainless Laiikā in pious fashion; making men of all countries contented and dispensing to them great happiness he made gods and men beam with joy, discerning, strong in merit, miraculous power and dominion.

108 While the highly famed Great king, dowered with great power, resided in the great town and protected the laity and  
 109 the Order, the powerful Olandas, sea merchants who had been entrusted with the protection of Laṅkā at the time of King Rājasīha<sup>1</sup>, fulfilled the task of envoys to the kings who ruled  
 110 in Laṅkā. Every year they were wont to bring with great reverence and great ceremony as gifts and lay before the King  
 111 varions stuffs, made in different countries, along with many other articles, fitted for the use of a king, which they had  
 112 carefully chosen out. In consequence of former actions of the inhabitants of Laṅkā or in consequence of their neglect of  
 113 the laity and the Order, they were now angered in the highest degree and in every way cruelly tortured the inhabitants of Laṅkā<sup>2</sup>. When the highly famed Great king heard  
 114 of these events he thought this was not as it should be, and  
 115 sent dignitaries forth. The dignitaries set forth with the people living in Laṅkā, fought a fearful battle with the Olanda  
 116 people, destroyed the foe, burned down his strongholds and terrified him in every possible way.

117 Now when the enemy were thus tortured by fear a cruel treacherous man<sup>3</sup> placed himself at their head, low-minded,

<sup>1</sup> Rājasīha II. Cf. 96. 35.

<sup>2</sup> The meaning is this: The inhabitants of Laṅkā have obviously failed in their duty to the deities who like Viṣṇu are the protectors of the country; they have neglected their worship. To punish them the offended deities rouse the wrath of the Duteh for the oppression and injury of the people of Laṅkā in every possible way.

<sup>3</sup> Baron van Eck is meant here. He succeeded Schreuder as governor of Ceylon in 1762. The word *khiṇḍaya* is an allusion to the fact that van Eck died suddenly, immediately after the unfortunate campaign against Kandy. Cf. v. 135.

a villain, the end of whose life was near, and with a great 118 following consisting of Jāvakas and many other people he laid waste in every (possible) way the various provinces and villages, the vilūras and the temples of the gods, the bridges, rest-houses and the like. The dignitaries charged by the Ruler 119 of Laṅkā fought here and there in every way with their war-skilled troops, but although they defeated the foe in various 120 places, the enemy were not to be warded off, and they advanced against the town. The war-equipped high dignitaries 121 hindered the foe on the way by every means, took up a frontal position against them and checked their gradual advancee. The discerning Great king, the Ruler of Laṅkā, who 122 understood the conditions of the time, thought: it is impossible to stop the advancee of the foe who are like a forest fire, and he entrusted the two uparājas with the sacred Tooth Relic, 123 the Mahesi, his sister and all valuable treasures, to watch over them well and sent them to a province which was 124 scarcely passable owing to mountains, forests and difficult roads. Thereupon the hostile hosts like cruel armies of yakkhas, 125 forced their way into the town and destroyed the sacred books and everything else. Surrounded by his great digni- 126 taries like the senāpati and others, and by war-skilled heroes who knew the right occasions from the wrong, the Great 127 king took up a position at the head of his great army here and there in the suburbs situated not far from the capital, and invested the town on every side. The people dwelling 128 in Laṅkā who had remained true to the teaching of the Buddha adopted the plans of the King and cut down here and there many of those who had gone over to the enemy, whomever 129 they caught sight of, but the envoys of the King and the other officials and the community of the bhikkhus they took under their protection. The bold warriors gifted with heroism 130 who were on the King's side played the war game, and as their aim was the protection of the Order of the Victor, they fought 131 surrounded by their warlike men in every way with the enemy who were posted at various positions on the road, put them 132 to flight, began then to fight also with those who lay in the

133 town and repeatedly caused them great losses<sup>1</sup>. I think it  
 was no wonder that men adopted the plans of our King: the  
 134 deities did the same. Hence after a short time the greatly  
 deluded leader of the enemy was smitten with fear, horror  
 and delusion which came over him owing to the might of the  
 135 gods and owing to the power of the merit (of the King). He  
 left the fair town, fled without prestige and landed in the  
 136 fire of death. Victims of the power of infatuation all the  
 hostile armies who had advanced, were helpless and shelterless,  
 137 and came to a bad end. Some were visited by illness, some  
 tortured by hunger and disease, some were slain in fight,  
 some had lost themselves in mountain and wilderness: thus  
 were the miserable people on the enemy's side destroyed.  
 138 "Protected in such wise by gods, men and others", one said,  
 "this Monarch is certainly of great power: he is rich in  
 139 merit. Who in the world will be able to neglect the com-  
 mands of so mighty a king who is so rich in merit<sup>2</sup>?"

<sup>1</sup> Verses 130—132 describe the guerilla tactics employed by the Sinhalese. The attacks are directed first against the communications in the rear, the positions in the line of march. The troops in Kandy are thereby isolated and so exposed to attack.

<sup>2</sup> The whole section vv. 108-139 (cf. vv. 159 ff. and note) is perhaps historically the most valuable part of the latest Cūlavaṃsa. It refers to the military events of the year 1765 (see H. W. COMMENGTON, HC., p. 142 f.; P. E. PIENIS, 3, p. 118 ff.). The causes of the conflict again lay in the sphere of trade policy. The King wanted to secure his share in the areca and elephant trade, and to compel the Dutch to yield this he harassed and hindered the business of the Dutch Company in every possible way, particularly in their export of cinnamon which was for them specially important. At first the Dutch sought to keep the peace by weak surrender. It was not until 1763 under the Governor van Eck that they decided on warlike measures. Their first venture in this year was a failure. Two years later the Dutch troops entered Kandy, but suffered so under the perpetual attacks of the Sinhalese that they were soon obliged to evacuate the town and withdraw with the severest losses to Colombo. Three facts are passed over by the chronicle in silence: 1) There was a conspiracy in 1761 against Kittisiri, important so far as it was obviously the work of the nationalistic circles at Court and was directed against the Dravidian dynasty. 2) At the beginning of the hostilities the King started negotiations with the

When after the hosts of the enemy had been done away 140 with, the Great king no longer beheld a hostile army, the Ruler had the fair town<sup>\*</sup> cleansed as formerly and in fitting 141 manner the temple of the Tooth Relic and the other sanc- tuaries specially beautifully decorated. He was filled with 142 pure reverence towards the sublime doctrine of the Enlightened One, meditated ever on the sublime words of the Enlightened One, was filled with remembrance of the virtues of the sons of the Enlightened One and ever reverenced the Tooth of the Royal Enlightened One. The Ruler of men who in such wise 143 was completely devoted to the three sacred objects, could not bear the pain accruing to him from his separation from the Tooth Relic. So the Great king, strong in faith, betook himself<sup>1</sup> with his retinue to the most impassable part of the province, and when there he caught sight of the reliquary, 144 he reverenced it piously, his heart full of astonishment and admiration. He bent his head to the ground, worshipped (the 145 relic) with his head, greeted reverently the community of the bhikkhus and so chased away his pain. Filled with good 146 comfort, he raised the casket with the relic to his head, held a great feast and celebrating with the sound of the cries of 147 "Hail"! and the fivefold musical instruments a great cere- monial festival, he entered into his town. Then when the 148 people of Lāṅkā saw the Ruler with the relic, they rejoiced greatly and sent forth their cries of "Hail!". He brought 149 the relic into the former Tooth temple and instituted all the former festive customs in increased measure.

The Samgharāja<sup>2</sup> and many other sons of the Buddha in 150

British, which however, led to nothing. The British emissary to the Court of Kandy was Pybus. 3) A famine in his own country caused by the neglect of agriculture during the war forced Kittisiri in 1766 to make a peace treaty with the Dutch very unfavourable to himself. By this treaty he made over to the Dutch the whole constal district of the island, so that the kingdom of Kandy was completely cut off from the outer world and absolutely dependent on the good will of the Company.

<sup>1</sup> One expects of course a *gantā* to govern the acc. *mahāduggam rattham*.

<sup>2</sup> This was the Saranampkara mentioned in 97. 51 and 98. 23. The

all the monasteries of the town who saw that the danger of  
 151 the cycle of rebirths is far greater than the danger of the  
 foe, had not given up the monastic life but had departed  
 152 with books, relics and articles of use, and dwelling outside  
 of the country had protected the Order. The King of kings  
 153 brought them all speedily back to the town, had the mo-  
 nasteries in the town cleansed and made the bhikkhus take  
 up their abode in them. Then he sought out from among  
 those who were charged to school themselves in the study of  
 the scriptures and in the carrying out of the commandments,  
 154 the appropriate preachers, invited them and listened ever and  
 again to the Rājovīda<sup>1</sup> and other portions of the sacred  
 scriptures.

155 The many Olanda people who had been our foes thought  
 156 of the custom of the country. They all came together, took  
 counsel with one another and said: "to capture the whole of  
 Lankā is impossible." After they had finally realised this  
 157 they consulted ever and again: "The people here who rebelled  
 against the King, the ruler of Lankā have gone to perdition;  
 158 it will be the same with us. It is fitting therefore, that we  
 dwell here in the town with humility, love and reverence  
 159 towards the sovereign of Lankā." Together with gifts for  
 the King they took full of reverence the beautiful, empty  
 160 silver reliquary which had been carried away by the great  
 fool and which sparkled like a cetiya, as well as the golden  
 161 canopy<sup>2</sup>. They thought: we shall seek pardon for the wrong

title of *savigharāja* borne by the head of the whole priesthood but  
 which had fallen into disuse since the 15th century, had been conferred  
 on him by Kittisiri in 1750. P. E. PIENIS 3, p. 76.

<sup>1</sup> I. e. "Admonishing of the King" Perhaps this is the same as the Rājavagga of Āṅguttara, III. 147 ff.

<sup>2</sup> When the Dutch under van Eck advanced on Kandy the Sinhalese secured the Tooth Relic (v. 123 f.), but the *karandaka*, in which it was preserved and the *sivikā* erected over it in the temple fell into the hands of the enemy. Van Eck took them with him on his retreat to Colombo. His successor however, J. W. Falck, returned these highly sacred objects. The result of this prudent and conciliatory policy was

committed by our countrymen and shall from now onwards live (in peace), betook themselves to the Ruler, praised him, showed him reverence and spake many friendly words. The 162 King, the sovereign of Laūkā, pardoned them their great wrong and showed them distinction in every way. In this 163 wise by friendly negotiations our King achieved with them firm and lasting<sup>1</sup> friendly relations. The Olanda people also 164 became thoroughly reconciled with the King of Laūkā and were wont every year to present him along with valuable gifts, the products of various countries, with a royal letter which had been handed to them. But the Ruler had the 165 sacred casket which had fallen into the hands of the infidels, covered with gold and silver and set with jewels. After having 166 thus made its beauty like to that of the sun<sup>2</sup> he had the Tooth Relic placed therein and reverenced it as the King of the gods.

Thus was the pride of the wicked hosts of the infidel foe 167 destroyed. Ha, (so great was) the power of the merit of the pious, believing Ruler of the Sihalas. Thinking of this astonishing, wonderful thing, people should devote themselves full of reverence to the virtue of the true faith which is incomparable, praised by the good, splendid.

Since at that time there was not a single bhikkhu on the 168 fair island of Laūkā, he had after taking over the burden of government, residing in Sirivadhanā, made many sāmañeras 169 and as many sons of good family go through the ceremony of renunciation of the world and of admission to the Order. Of these bhikkhus some were preachers of the doctrine and 170 acquainted with the precepts of monastic discipline, some led a life of contemplation or that of hermits. After he had thus 171 ordained so many hundreds of bhikkhus dowered with this and other virtues<sup>3</sup> he beautified the whole of Laūkā (formerly)

that the beleaguered garrison left behind in Kandy and reduced to sore straits, was granted a free passage.

<sup>1</sup> P. *thirap kateāna* must, I think, be referred to *mettibhācam*.

<sup>2</sup> P. *satarāmisi*, the "hundred-rayed", name of the sun.

<sup>3</sup> Pāda a is of course defective. We expect *eramādīgnayutte*. But

172 bereft of bhikkhus. Day by day he performed meritorious works, invited the community and dispensed to it daily food and food for the sick, mindful of the welfare of the bhikkhu community.

173 For bhikkhus and sāmayeras there were two kinds of disease, such as had to do with the body and such as affected the mind. To cure mental disease the best of men had the Vinaya 174 texts and the Suttantas preached. After he had had the bhikkhus instructed in the Vinaya and the Suttantas which are the cause of the removal of desire and other diseases among mental 175 diseases, the Ruler — when suffering arises through bodily disease it is difficult for the bhikkhus to school themselves in the study of the scriptures and in the carrying out of the 176 commandments<sup>1</sup> — to calm disease like fever<sup>2</sup> and the like for this reason invited the community. He appointed for them 177 two physicians, well schooled in the medical art, and nurses.

To these he granted villages and fields and facilities in the 178 way of garments, ornaments and the like, and as price for medicines he gave them yearly a hundred (money pieces) from 179 the royal treasury. In the various monasteries the Ruler asked after the health or ill-health of the sāmayeras and the bhikkhus and gave them the requisite care.

180 In this wise also the King of kings dispensed gain for the community. "Of all gains<sup>3</sup> the gain of health is the highest 181 and best", thus the Buddha taught and therefore even he also dispensed<sup>4</sup> it. He furthered in the best way the Order of the Enlightened One by making it lustrous.

emendation is inadmissible. The fault is the author's, the MSS. are not to blame.

<sup>1</sup> V. 175 is a kind of parenthesis. In correct language the sentence would be accompanied by an *iti* or *iti cintiya* as a reflection of the King's. Cf. note to 100. 52.

<sup>2</sup> W. is probably right in connecting *jara* here with skr. *jrara* (not P. *jarā* "age").

<sup>3</sup> Note that *labbha* means a gain or advantage of an external kind.

<sup>4</sup> *Apūjyā* is here used as synonym for *dāpayi* in 180 b.

Formerly the rulers of Lañkā, the best of most excellent 182 men, the supports of the Order, removed the infidelity of the hosts of the foe and then bore the burden of the royal dignity. When the King heard thereof and himself compassed in spirit the doctrine revealing itself to him and fraught with immeasurable blessing, he performed continually meritorious works, unweariedly, a support of the Order<sup>1</sup>.

Here ends the ninety-ninth chapter, called »Account of the King's Consecration and of Other Festivals», in the Mahā-vamsa, compiled for the serene joy and emotion of the pious.

<sup>1</sup> The panegyric character of many strophes occurring in this chapter of the chronicle seems again to prove that it was composed when the king Kittisirirājasīha was alive. The poet flatters him with the conventional phrases.

## CHAPTER C

## THE HISTORY OF KITTISIRIRĀJASĀHĀNA

1 The highly famed Lord of men<sup>1</sup> honoured the Tooth Relic with constant reverence even as (a world ruler) his wheel<sup>2</sup> and worshipped it in every way sacrificing<sup>3</sup> with all kinds of flowers, such as sumana, campaka, punnāga, nāga, kauṇikāra,  
 2 ketakī<sup>4</sup>, white and blue lotus flowers and the like, as well as with perfumes of every sort, such as sandal and aloe wood;  
 3 with divers kinds of fragrant incense<sub>1</sub> with sugar, honey and so forth and with delicious remedies like betel nut<sub>1</sub> camphor  
 4 and betel leaves; with various prepared dishes such as sweet food, rice and cake, with golden bananas and rose-apples, with bread fruits<sub>1</sub> mangoes and phārusa fruits<sup>5</sup>, with date  
 5 plums<sup>6</sup><sub>1</sub> oranges<sup>7</sup> and sweet munḍakas, with yellow and green

<sup>1</sup> I anticipate the subject *mahāyaso* (v. 8 c) and *janinibh* (v. 12 a). The sentence goes on to v. 22 in which the first finite verb appears. Various gerunds occur before this and the subject "the King" is repeated several times.

<sup>2</sup> P. *cukka*. This is the first of the seven jewels (*ratanāni*) peculiar to the *rājū cakkavatti*, the world-ruling king (cf. for this D. II. 172 ff., III. 61 ff.; M. III. 172; PTS. PD. s. v. *ratana*), a marvellous chariot that carries him victoriously over all countries.

<sup>3</sup> I anticipate *pūjetrū* in v. 8.

<sup>4</sup> The botanical names are successively: 1) *jasminum grandiflorum*, 2) *michelia champaka*, 3) *rottleria tinctoria*, 4) *mesua ferrea*, 5) *pterospermum acerifolium*, 6) *pandanus odoratissimus*.

<sup>5</sup> Cf. also Mhv. 89. 43 and note.

<sup>6</sup> P. *timbarūsaka* a kind of *diospyros*. The fruit called *timbaru* is compared in Ja. VI. 457<sup>1</sup> to the youthful female breast. We do not know what the *phārusa* is.

<sup>7</sup> P. *nūraṅga* = skr. *mūraṅgu* which is borrowed from the Persian *nārang*. *Munḍaka agnī* is unknown.

coconuts, with ripe pomegranates, with dates, grapes and various other fruits, with many fine roots<sup>1</sup> and sprouts of every kind. With such and other offerings, with the five kinds of musical instruments, with many of the things taken over from former kings and with new thereto he worshipped the Tooth Relic day by day, thereby intent on merit, increasing the store of his meritorious works. With gold and silver, with fair precious stones and pearls, with countless, brightly embroidered, gleaming stuffs; with canopies, curtains and robes, with many articles of use and manifold ornaments, with many elephants and steeds, as well as with cattle and buffaloes, with many slaves male and female and with numerous villages and fields he sacrificed full of zeal to the Tooth of the Enlightened One and when the Prince of men beheld it he was filled with pious joy. He was minded to have the golden casket completed which had been begun under former kings but had never been finished. After a splendid, jewel-encrusted<sup>2</sup> casket had been made for two thousand suvappas and seven nikkhlas<sup>3</sup>, the Lord of men ever intent on meritorious action, had a costly, splendid, magnificent, large diamond placed on the point; one hundred and sixty-eight beautiful, costly, splendid (smaller) diamonds, well worth seeing, and one hundred and seventy-one topazes<sup>4</sup> he had put on it, further he had it set with five hundred and eighty-five blue sapphires and four thousand eight hundred and eighty rubies, also he had it set with seven hundred and seventy-eight pearls, and when the costly casket

<sup>1</sup> P. *sādhukandehi*. The word *kamla* „root” (skr. the same) is missing in CUNDENS and also in the PTS. P. D.

<sup>2</sup> P. *manicappa*. The word *rappa* does not mean “colour” here, but “beauty, ornament”, as is often the case.

<sup>3</sup> *Sarappa* as well as *nikkha*, as also skr. *suvarṇa* and *niṣku* denote a weight and a coin. The *nikkha* is = 15 *suvappa* (PTS P. D. s. v.).

<sup>4</sup> P. *puppharāgamapiratane*. It is true that *puppharāga* by itself means “topaz” (= skr. *prāparāga*). What is expressed however, is the fundamental meaning “flower coloured”. Thus we have in the same way *nilamāṇi* “blue gem” (17 d) for “sapphire” and *rattamanīratana* “red gem” (18 c d) for “ruby”.

20 was finished he had two further caskets made in which to place it and had these also set with costly splendid, beautiful  
 21 jewels. The Ruler of men had the casket made by the famous  
 22 King Vimaladhammasuriya<sup>1</sup> overlaid with gold. Then the  
 23 Ruler of men, celebrating a great festival, placed the Tooth  
 23 of the Sage in these same (caskets). Full of pious joy the  
 Ruler dedicated a large village, Akarabhaṇḍa by name, to the  
 Tooth of the Prince of the wise.

24 At the festival of the relic the Ruler in his mercy thought  
 25 to show the Tooth Relic to the inhabitants of Laṅkā. After  
 the Ruler had had the whole town of Sirivadḍhana carefully  
 26 cleaused and decorated throughout with arches of many-  
 coloured stuffs, with rows of arches of banana leaves, with  
 bunches of coco blossoms and with all kinds of flags and  
 27 pennons, he gathered together in the town all the people of  
 Laṅkā. The Ruler of men himself, adorned with all the royal  
 28 ornaments, like the King of the gods, betook himself after  
 he had previously celebrated many great sacrifices of all kinds,  
 to the temple of the Tooth Relic, sacrificed to it in every  
 29 possible way, worshipped it, he the Ruler by throwing himself  
 in humble posture<sup>2</sup> to the earth out of reverence for the  
 30 Tooth Relic of the King of the wise. Then he took the  
 golden lotus flower together with the Tooth in the lotus of  
 31 his hand and went forth from the temple with it. With sa-  
 crificial ceremonies, celebrated<sup>3</sup> with silver umbrellas and fly-  
 whisks of yak tails<sup>4</sup>, with golden and silver flowers, with the  
 32 five kinds of flowers, laja<sup>5</sup> and so forth, with many jewels  
 and pearls, with gold and silver, with various coloured stuffs

<sup>1</sup> In Mhv. 94. 11 ff. it is related that he brought the Tooth Relic from Labujagāma to Kandy. Nothing is said in the passage about the making of a *karaṇḍa*.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. 98. 50 and note.

<sup>3</sup> P. *kāriyamānapūjāsu* in v. 34 c.

<sup>4</sup> P. *camaričāmārehi*. The fem. *camari* is also employed in Skr. (BR. s. v. *camara*). See above 98. 14, as well as Jāt. IV. 256 *camariṇaṅguṭṭha*.

<sup>5</sup> Cf. 98. 46 and note.

and many kinds of ornaments, with divers fragrant flowers, 33  
 with many lamps and incense, and amid the sound of the five  
 musical instruments, the shell trumpets, the cymbals and the  
 rest, and amid the noise of the many thousandfold cries of 34  
 Hail! — it was like foam-crowned billows<sup>1</sup> — the highly 35  
 famed King marched in procession like a world ruler in his  
 chariot<sup>2</sup>. In the superb, beautiful maṇḍapa, decorated with 36  
 all kinds of brightly embroidered cloths, like a heavenly  
 maṇḍapa stood the King, the Ruler of men, like the King of 37  
 the gods at the head of the company of the gods, and then  
 the King showing the multitude of the people the sacred  
 beautiful Tooth of the Prince of the wise, right hard to attain  
 in hundreds of thousands of world ages, filled them all with 38  
 bliss, heaped up a store of merit and laid (the relic) again  
 in the casket.

In this wise, feeling every kind of bliss, as at the sight 39  
 of the living Buddha, the multitude also increased the store  
 of their merits.

Intent on good, he repeatedly exhibited the Tooth Relic 40  
 in the same way and so stored up much good. Of villages 41  
 and fields devoted by former kings of Laṅkā to the Tooth  
 Relic he took not away the very least. Day by day holding 42  
 a great sacrificial festival in joyful faith, he dedicated many  
 elephants and horses and in the same way bulls and buffaloes,  
 as well as a prosperous, populous village by name Rajakatthala, 43  
 and another large village by name Muttāpabbata<sup>3</sup> and gained  
 thereby for himself the value of meritorious works.

He was mindful of the purity of the Order. Amongst the 44  
 bhikkhus who were formerly present on the splendid island  
 of Laṅkā, and amongst all the sāmāperas who had undergone

<sup>1</sup> P. *kallolamalīnum ra* stands quite independently of the construction  
 of the sentence, as a kind of parenthesis. It refers to the whole  
 procession.

<sup>2</sup> See note to 100. 1, Note 2.

<sup>3</sup> There is a village Radagolla in the Kandy District, Medapalata  
 Korale, a village Mutugala in the Kurunegala District, Udukuha Korale  
 West (Census 1921, II, p. 60, 328).

the ceremony of world renunciation, were some who had fear  
 45 of evil, respected the true doctrine, living in good moral discipline, in pure fashion. Others cherished evil, were of  
 46 bad moral living, followed false doctrine, took pleasure in the maintaining of women and children and in domestic duties and devoted themselves to unseemly professions such as astrology, medical activity<sup>1</sup> and the like.

47 When the Ruler heard tidings of such unprincipled (bhikkhus) he sought out<sup>2</sup> with care from among the pious 48 (bhikkhus) who were on the side of the high principled, the respected sāmañera, named Saranāmpaka, who led a pure life, dwelt in the wilderness, took pains for the furthering of the Order of the Victor, was careful of moral discipline, virtuous, 49 well instructed, experienced in the interpretation of the words 50 of the Enlightened One. With the reflection that this was the right thing to do, the Ruler with his support, ordered according to precept, an investigation, took strong measures against 51 them and had them seriously admonished that from now onwards those who had renounced the world should for ever avoid unseemly task, like astrology, medical activity and the like and 52 should foster<sup>3</sup> the study of the words of the Buddha. As the King was minded to further the Order which had fallen into 53 decay, he strengthened the influence of the high principled, 54 and in many ways gave the Order support. The Ruler was appalled at the thought that with the lack of bhikkhus on whom the ceremony of admission to the Order had been performed, the pure Order of the Victor should perish on the

<sup>1</sup> That is the activity of the *kapurāla*, the sorceror or devil-priest whose help is sought in cases of illness and for warding off the harmful influence of the planetary deities.

<sup>2</sup> P. *sammā vijñetrā* cannot belong to *pavattim*, as W. seems to think, but must govern the following accusatives. For Saranāmpaka cf. above 97. 51, 60; 98. 23; as well as note to 99. 150. The Saṅgharāja died in the year 1778.

<sup>3</sup> The construction of the sentence is quite wrong. It would be right if instead of *rakkhitum* in 52 b we had *rakkhantūti* whereby vv. 51 and 52 a b would be characterized as *oratio recta*.

whole island, and with the reflection: if a Ruler like myself carries on the government in the island of Laṅkā, then the 56 Order of the Victor ought not to perish, — further with the reflection: the furtherance of the Order which was not attained in the time of former rulers in spite of their sending 57 hither and thither for bhikkhus, this will I now bring to pass, the Ruler of men, the Monarch, rich in merit, since he de- 58 sired a long continuance of the Order of the great Seer, when 59 the year two thousand two hundred and ninety-three after the final nirvana of the Prince of the wise<sup>1</sup> had come — sent messengers to whom he gave besides gifts of many kinds and 60 many sacrificial articles, a splendid royal letter, to the superb town of Ayojjhā<sup>2</sup>, to fetch hither sons of the Buddha. In 61 this wise the Ruler of Laṅkā who was minded to purify the Order of Buddha, began the furtherance of the Order of the Prince among victors.

The dignitaries took the royal letter and the rest and 62 started with great ceremony and with great zeal on their way. With the Olanda people who were entrusted with the protection of Laṅkā, they embarked and sailed to the land of Sāminda. When the town of Ayojjhā was reached the Ruler 63 of men in that country accepted the royal letter and the rest, as was the custom. In best fashion the prudent one showed 64 the dignitaries the honour befitting them and took note of the excellent royal letter. When the Ruler of men Dhammika 65 by name, who striving after the dignity of a Buddha, fulfilled the ten pāramis<sup>3</sup> and took the Order under his protection,

<sup>1</sup> = 1749 A. D. What is meant is the time of the close of the embassies to Siam which had already begun under Kittisiri's predecessor Vijayarājasīha. We have an interesting account of these embassies by a member: "An Account of Kirti Sri's Embassy to Siam in 1672 Saka, 1750 A. D., published by P. E. PERRIS in JRAS. C. B. xviii, nr. 54, 1903, p. 17 ff. I see no reason to doubt the genuine character of the document. The relations established by the coming of the bhikkhus from Siam are potent in their influence even to-day. The Siamese sect is the wealthiest and the most influential in the island of Ceylon. For the vicissitudes experienced by these embassies see PERRIS 8, p. 71, 73, 75 ff.

<sup>2</sup> See note to 98. 91.

<sup>3</sup> See for this note to 37. 180.

67 heard the news of the decline of the Order of the Victor in Laṅkā, and of the other (evils) he was most deeply moved.  
 68 The Ruler thought: "I will be a Helper in order to achieve there the furtherance of the Order of the Enlightened One."  
 69 He summoned the Samgharāja in the Sāminda country and many other well instructed Grand theras, versed in the doctrine and acquainted with the rules of the Order, who had for a  
 70 long time renounced the world, who were capable of carrying out the business of the Order and took counsel with them  
 71 carefully about the matter. He called together a Chapter consisting of a group of ten (bhikkhus), an abode of virtues, easily satisfied and content, dowered with the virtues of a life of piety and discipline, and besides the Thera Upāli as head.  
 72 These the Ruler who was well inclined to the Great king on the island of Laṅkā — like to King Vessantara<sup>1</sup> — sent<sup>2</sup> to  
 73 Laṅkā, to the splendid relic temple of the Victor and (with them) books on the doctrine and on monastic discipline which  
 74 did not exist in the island of Laṅkā, further a golden image (of the Buddha) and a superb golden book, a magnificent royal letter, gifts of various kinds and dignitaries of the King of  
 75 Ayojjhā (as envoys)<sup>3</sup>. The great vessel<sup>4</sup> which after the golden image and the other gifts had been put in order, was sent off came without disaster over the sea<sup>5</sup> rich in perils, hiding many  
 76 a disaster, to the fair, splendid island of Laṅkā and reached  
 77 the harbour of Tikoṇamāla<sup>6</sup>. When the Great king, the Ruler of Laṅkā had tidings of this, he had all the inhabitants of

<sup>1</sup> The last human incarnation of the Bodhisatta; cf. *Vessanlarajātaka* (Nr. 547; VI. 479 ff. in FAUSBOELL's edition).

<sup>2</sup> All the accusatives in vv. 71-74 are governed by *apesesi*, to those in v. 71 must be added the gerund *nimantayitrāna*. The gifts, among them the golden image, are enumerated in the narrative quoted above (note to v. 59). The number of the theras with Upāli at their head, is however given as twenty-one, with eight sāmaṇeras in addition.

<sup>3</sup> Three in number according to the narrative.

<sup>4</sup> The subject *nācā* in 75 c is repeated with *mahānāvī* in 76 d. The language in the whole section is extremely careless.

<sup>5</sup> P. *gambhire*, used substantively and supplemented by *samuḍde*.

<sup>6</sup> I. e. Trincomalee.

the town of Sirivallhana called together. In joyful faith the 78 Ruler of men celebrated a great feast. From the sea as far as superb Sirivallhanapura he had the road put in order and 79 rest-houses<sup>1</sup> erected at various places. Then the Ruler sent forth the Mahāsenāpati and other dignitaries and made them fetch 80 in the right order the golden image and the sacred books, the bhikkhu community and everything else. When with great 81 pomp and great ceremony they making their way had reached the vicinity of the Mahāvālukagāngā which comes down from 82 the Sumanakūṭa, the Ruler of the town Sirivallhana, the Ruler 83 of men desirous of gaining the reward accruing from the festive reception of the three sacred objects<sup>2</sup>, the highly famed Great king intent on merit, went forth with the army in piety to meet 84 them with elephants, steeds and so forth. He showed reverence to the august Grand thera and to the others and at the same 85 time greeted the great community. Having exchanged with them in the best way possible the customary speeches of welcome, he came with the three sacred objects at the head, to 86 his town. In the fair Pupphārāma<sup>3</sup>, in a graceful brick-roofed building erected by him, in this decorated monastery he made 87 the august community of monks take up their abode. Then he provided them in fitting manner with the necessaries and 88 charged officials to enquire day by day after their health or ill-health. The Ruler of men accepted the splendid royal letter 89 sent by the King of Ayojjhā and he made the royal envoys who 90 had arrived and the other officials take up their abode in a sitting place and showed them all the distinction to which they were entitled. In the year two thousand two hundred and 91 ninety-six after the final nirvana of the Enlightened One<sup>4</sup>,

<sup>1</sup> P. *ārāme*, thus buildings which were specially intended for the sojourn of the monks.

<sup>2</sup> In the train of the envoys from Siam there were 1) a golden figure of the Buddha (*Buddha*), 2) sacred books (*dhamma*) and 3) the bhikkhus with Upāli at the head (*samgha*).

<sup>3</sup> "Flower monastery" the now so-called Malvatu-vihāra situated immediately on the lake of Kandy.

<sup>4</sup> = 1762 A. D.

92 in the month Āsālha<sup>1</sup> when it was full moon, the all-powerful  
 93 Great king, dowered with vast royal power, betook himself  
     to the monastery. He had seats carefully spread in the middle  
 94 of the fine Uposatha house contained therein. Then he invited  
     the Grand thera Upāli, dowered with the quality of a life  
     led in moral discipline, experienced in all clever methods, who  
 95 had his pleasure in the welfare of all beings, and second to  
     him the Thera Āriyamuni<sup>2</sup> together with the (rest of the)  
     community and bade them be seated. Then with the cele-  
 96 bration of a great festival the Ruler of men, the Ruler of  
     Laṅkā, made these perform on the most distinguished of the  
     sāmāyeras of Laṅkā the ceremony of admission to the Order.

97 From that time onwards he was wont to fetch hither  
     sāmāyeras and others who were versed in the linguistic text-  
     books on the sacred scriptures, and have performed on them  
 98 the ceremony of admission to the Order. In the same way  
     he sought out rightly all those who were worthy of the  
     ceremony of world renunciation and of admission to the sublime  
 99 Order of the Enlightened One and had the ceremony of world  
     renunciation and of admission performed on them according to  
     precept. Among the bhikkhu communities who thus had become  
 100 numerous in Laṅkā, he again sought out those bhikkhus who  
     were full of lasting zeal in preserving the study of the sacred  
     scriptures and of the rules of monastic life and who were  
 101 qualified for and worthy of the position of a teacher, and  
     charged them to take instruction from the brethren of the  
     Order who had come from Ayojjhā. Now among those high  
     principled bhikkhus who carried out the commands of the  
 102 Victor, there was one who<sup>3</sup> had long been at pains to make

<sup>1</sup> The month June-July.

<sup>2</sup> In the narrative (p. 34) quoted above (note to v. 59) the Grand thera Āriyamuni is mentioned as second to Upāli.

<sup>3</sup> All the relative sentences beginning with *yo* in vv. 102-107 refer to *tāpi* in v. 107 c. This part of the long-winded sentence is but loosely connected with the preceding which ends with *niyajiya*. If we might alter *niyajiya* into *niyojaya* and put a full stop after it, the construction of the sentence would be all right.

lustrous the Order of the Sage which for a long time had been on the verge of ruin in Laṅkā, — who in accordance 103 with his insight, as far as possible untiringly, day and night, made lustrous the sacred scriptures of the Prince of the wise and his rules for monastic life — who also instructed as dis- 104 ciples many others in the sacred scriptures and the rules for monastic life and thus in worthy manner brought splendour to the Order, — who striving for his own salvation and that 105 of others, with the wish to obtain long continuance for the Order of the Sage, ever took pleasure in a pure life, — who 106 as regards virtue, discipline and devotion to duty was as a mirror for all the sons of the Victor in Laṅkā who were intent on their salvation, — who during the time that he was a 107 sāmavera was called Sarayampkara: this son of the Victor living in pious discipline now that he had been admitted to the 108 Order, he (the King) invested with the dignity of a Sam-  
gharāja<sup>1</sup>. Amongst the bhikkhus who had joined him, he sought out in both monasteries<sup>2</sup> such as were skilled and well versed in the carrying out of the duties of the Order of the 109 Master and assigned them positions of rank. Explaining to them: ye all who live out the doctrine of the Victor, should 110 act in harmony, day and night unweariedly, in accordance with the rule of the Order and according to the sacred scriptures, the Ruler showed them much favour and in this wise made 111 the Order lustrous so that it should continue for long in Laṅkā.

The royal envoys too, arrived from the Sāminda country, 112 and the others sought out the King, handing over to him the royal letter and the other gifts. The Great king, the Ruler 113 of Laṅkā, accepted everything, and after the Monarch had made a close inspection of the superb royal document he highly 114 pleased, had favours conferred on them. Now the Ruler who for his own good, the good of others and the good of the Order, had again and again performed meritorious works, who 115

<sup>1</sup> See above note to 99. 150 and to 100. 69.

<sup>2</sup> In the Malvatu and the Asgiriya vihāras in Kandy, which are the seats of the two mahānāyakas, the heads of the Church of Ceylon.

was devoted to the true doctrine, a light of the Order, greatly  
 116 wise was wont to visit the monastery and to test in every  
 way in the midst of the community, the means for long con-  
 tinuance of the Order. As he wished to make lustrious the  
 117 Order, he invited in fitting manner the Grand thera Upāli  
 and listened with believing heart from the Dīgha-Nikāya, the  
 118 Saṃyutta-Nikāya, the Saddhammasaṃgaha and from various  
 other books, the (sections on the) tenfold royal duties and the  
 119 four heart-winning qualities. To faith awakened, of deep  
 discernment, he thus learned to distinguish between what ought  
 and what ought not to be done, between what is meritorious  
 action and what is sin, what is blameworthy and what is not  
 120 blameworthy, and he left undone all things which should not  
 be done, which are sinful and blameworthy, and strove as  
 best he could after the things which ought to be done and  
 121 are not blameworthy. Almsgiving and other meritorious works  
 he performed day by day, and after he had had the whole  
 122 town decorated as formerly he full of reverence invited the  
 dignitaries who had come from Ayojjhā and all the people of  
 Laṅkā, the Grand thera (Upāli) with the other bhikkhus (from  
 123 Saṃinda) as well as the bhikkhus from Laṅkā, the sūmāpuras  
 and all the others, and celebrating as formerly with royal  
 124 ornaments and all kinds of other sacrificial gifts a great festival  
 he exhibited the Tooth Relic for the salvation, blessing and  
 happiness of them all.

125 Since the royal envoys wished to do reverence to the  
 Mahiyangāna-cetiya and the other cetiya places, he sent them  
 126 in the company of Laṅkā officials, to the various places, let  
 them as they desired, perform their devotions and sent them  
 127 home after showing them to the utmost befitting favours. In  
 the same way giving them sacrificial articles and appointing  
 officials (charged with their care), he enabled the bhikkhu  
 128 community with Upāli at the head, to visit the sixteen sacred  
 places<sup>1</sup> in Laṅkā, Mahiyangāna and so forth, as well as the

<sup>1</sup> According to W. these were: 1) Mahiyangāna, 2) Nāgadīpa, 3)  
 Kalyāṇī, 4) Samantakūṭha, 5) Divāguhā, 6) Dīghavāpi, 7) Mutiyangāna

cetiyas in Sirivaddhana and other towns. Then he had sacred 129 boundaries<sup>1</sup> fixed, and intent on the good of the bhikkhus, Uposatha houses and dwellings erected here and there. Devoted 130 in faith to the bhikkhu community he had in three years monasteries founded and made bhikkhu communities take up their abode in them. In the periods of the rainy season<sup>2</sup> he 131 provided the fitting maintenance, listened to the sermon of the true doctrine and kept the uposatha fasts. When the 132 bhikkhus were presented<sup>3</sup> with the various necessaries he gave them in addition to the otherwise customary robes<sup>4</sup>, kathina robes<sup>5</sup>. In the course of these three years he had the cere- 133 mony of admission to the Order performed on seven hundred persons in the august community, and for three thousand sons 134 of good families he caused the granting of the ceremony of world renunciation as sāmaṇeras for the good of mankind.

For the good of the world the King, the Ruler of men, 135 effected the furtherance of the Order: for that reason must all gracious Brahmans, Suras and Asuras grant the Monarch happiness and long life!

In the year that bears the name of Sūkara the Ruler of 136 men Dhammadika the sage, who had helped so much to further the Order in Laṅkā, since he strove after the dignity of a Buddha, sent once more from the town Ayojjhā a group of 137

(in Badulla), 8) Tissamahāvīhāra (Tissamahāvīma in Mahāvīma, Rohaṇa) 9) the Bodhi tree, 10) Marieavaṇṭī-cetiya, 11) Ratanavāluka (Mahāvīpa), 12) Thūpārāma, 13) Abhayagiri, 14) Jetavana, 15) Selacetiya (9 to 15 in Anurādhapura), 16) Kājaragāma (Rohaya).

<sup>1</sup> P. *kūretvā baldhāsimūgo*, lit. "he had fixed boundaries made". The expression *simay handh* is used for the fixing of the territorial boundaries of a monastery which was carried out with particular ceremonies (Mhv. 15. 181 ff.; 78. 61 ff.).

<sup>2</sup> P. *antocessu*. That is the rainy period lasting three or four months which the bhikkhu along with his companions, must spend in a settled abode (in the monastery).

<sup>3</sup> P. *pacāritsu*. What is meant is the Pavāryā ceremony held at the end of the rainy season.

<sup>4</sup> P. *parirāracīruchi*. *Parivāra* here has the sense of "ingredient accessories" (PTS. P. D. s. v.).

<sup>5</sup> See note to 44. 48.

more than ten priests with two theras at the head — the Grand thera Visuddhācariya<sup>1</sup>, who was an abode for the virtue of a life lived in discipline, whose ornament were faith and 138 the other virtues, who was a mine of virtue, and the capable, 139 learned second thera Varanāyamuni — to Laṅkā for the furtherance of the Order in Laṅkā. When this community arrived 140 the highly famed King of Laṅkā accompanied them as formerly with great honours into the town, made them take up 141 their abode in the Pupphārāma and dispensed to them daily regular food and everything else as formerly.

142 After accumulating a store of merit the distinguished Thera Upāli who during these three years unweariedly day and night 143 had done all that was to be done for the furtherance of the Order, was severely troubled by a disease of the nose which 144 befel him. The Sihala Ruler had the best medical treatment given to the incomparable Grand thera (thus) seized by illness. Again and again the highly famed King went to the 145 monastery, visited the Grand thera and when he learned, his 146 heart deeply moved, that the disease was incurable he celebrated with sacrificial objects of every kind, a sacrificial festival for the Buddha and ascribed the merit of it<sup>2</sup> to him (the 147 Grand thera). When the Thera was dead the Ruler of men had the corpse with great ceremonial laid in a covering of 148 fine stuff, had many sacrificial ceremonies performed, the corpse brought to the pyre and the prescribed rites carried out and thus accumulated merit.

149 The King was aware of how helpful the Ruler of men, Dhammadika, the sovereign of the Sāminda country, had been in the furtherance of the Order of the King of the wise in Laṅkā, by twice sending a pious bhikkhu community and by 150 bringing about the presence of many hundreds of bhikkhus, whereas formerly there had not been a single bhikkhu on the

<sup>1</sup> As regards the word *mahācisuddhācariyattheram* we must I think, join the *mahā* with *theram* in order to get the counterpart to *amatheram* in 138 b.

<sup>2</sup> For *pattidāna* see note to 42. 50. In this case the *patti* is transferred to a dying man, not one already dead.

island of Laṅkā and by sending books of every kind which 151 were lacking. He thought: "To a man like that who has 152 given me so much help I will also pay in besetting manner 153 fitting honours." He ordered ministers forth to whom he gave a model of the Tooth of the Sage fashioned out of a costly jewel and many varied gifts such as a likeness of the 154 Victor, a shell curved towards the right<sup>1</sup> and other things, and also a splendid, specially artistic royal letter, and sent 155 with them the bhikkhu community who wished to return to their own country (Sāminda). With great reverence all the 156 dignitaries received this and journeyed forth to the country of Sāminda. When they arrived<sup>2</sup> there King Dhammika was 157 joyful in heart. He gazed to his hearts content at the likeness of the Tooth of the Sage and at the rest, and full of joy as 158 if he had (himself) received the Tooth of the Enlightened One, he celebrated day by day a great festival. Then when he heard and had taken note of the many words expressed in 159 the royal letter: the transference<sup>3</sup> of the merit of the furtherance of the Order and so forth, he put glad confidence in the King of Laṅkā. He gave over (to the envoys) many books 160 which were not in Laṅkā, a beautiful likeness of the sacred footprint<sup>4</sup>, as sacrificial gifts for the Tooth of the Victor golden 161 canopies and umbrellas and all kinds of beautiful and splendid presents, suitable for the royal use, as well as a royal letter 162 in which expression was given to the share in all merits as his own admission to the Order<sup>5</sup> and the like, wherein the

<sup>1</sup> Such shells are very rare and precious. Their possessor is supposed to be exceedingly lucky. Shells of this kind are mentioned among the gifts exchanged between King Devānampiyatissa and King Asoka (Mhv. 11. 22, 30).

<sup>2</sup> The acc. pl. *sampatte* is governed by *apasesi* in v. 163 c. Vv. 166-169 certainly form a most clumsy sentence.

<sup>3</sup> This refers to what is related in v. 146.

<sup>4</sup> Cf. with this the note to v. 254.

<sup>5</sup> I assume that *attāpasampadā* means that Dhammika belonged himself, if only for a time, to the Order, as is customary even to-day in the royal family of Siam. With this he had acquired great merit a part of which was to accrue to Kittisirirājasīha.

163 reasons for the friendly relations between the two kings found expression, and sent all that to fair, holy Lankā.

164 All this the highly famed King of Lankā accepted. When he beheld the books of the good doctrine and the gifts like 165 the footprint of the Sage, he rejoiced greatly and paid great honour to the gifts. He celebrated a great festival and showed 166 them to all the people. Then when he had looked at the royal letter and taken note of the many words expressed in it, such as the transferree of merit and the like, also the 167 friendly relations mentioned, the Ruler of the Sihalas was filled with the highest bliss by satisfaction at the transferred 168 merit<sup>1</sup>. He thought: "The reward accruing from the meritorious works like furtherance of the Order I have experienced in this 169 life, what shall one say of that which may be perfectly enjoyed in a future existence?" In this wise the Ruler believed 170 firmly in the three sacred things. The Ruler of Lankā betook himself to the monastery and heard the sermon of the true doctrine preached by the Grand theras who had arrived the 171 second time. He charged those bhikkhus who had been admitted into the Order by the chapter of monks who had arrived first, to take instruction from the bhikkhu chapter at whose 172 head Visuddhācariya<sup>2</sup> stood, and had the ceremony of admission to the Order performed in proper fashion by those theras on numerous sons of good family.

173 Of the bhikkhus in Lankā some whose ornament was their virtue, learned with the Grand Thera by name Visuddhācariya, absorption which is the way to nirvana; others learned 174 with the second Thera Varanayamuni the content of the doctrine and monastic rules, as well as linguistic knowledge. Thus the King pledged the bhikkhus of Lankā to the study of the 175 saered scriptures and to the practise of moral discipline and so sheltered the Order of the Enlightened One. And the 176 bhikkhus of Lankā were zealous and discerning. Received into

<sup>1</sup> P. *patti-anumodanena* stands as is shown by the preceding verse, for *patti-anum*<sup>2</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> See above v. 136 ff.

the branch of those ascetics who are without wants, who have taken upon themselves a life of discipline, unwearied, never indolent, they made of the doctrine of the Victor a reality, zealous by day and night, absorbed in difficult texts; and the King showed them honour by the dispensing of dwellings and the like. The chapter of bhikkhus which had come the second time and wished to return to their own country he sent away with Olandu merchants. On a firmly fixed rock situated on a beautiful spot not too far to the east of the town of Sirivadjhana he had hewn out by skilful workers, masons and others a splendid standing image of the Victor nine enubits<sup>1</sup> high and he had the radiant, shining stone image overlaid with gold plates so that it resembled the living Sage. Round about this Buddha statue he had erected a lofty, massive, beautiful stone wall and superb stone pillars placed and a splendid, beautiful two-storeyed temple built fair to look at, as well as a roomy court, outer walls, mandapas and so forth set up in the best way. Then he put thereon canopies and curtains of all kinds of coloured stuffs. Round about he placed arches one after another and provided them in every way with much ornament. Here and there he set up various flags and pennons and on the day of the sacrificial festival of the eyes<sup>2</sup> he lit a row of lamps, placed filled jars (about) and carried out in blameless fashion the various customs prescribed for festivals. To the people who supplied the coloured paintings, he dispensed abundantly robes, ornaments and the like and satisfied their wishes in every way. Then he made the splendid loud clang of the musical instruments, like shell trumpets, kettledrums and so forth resound, like the roar of the wide sea, and under a good constellation, at a good hour, on a good day determined as favourable he put in the eyes and celebrated a great festival. Numerous silver bowls and many silver vessels, costly necessaries and valuable monks'

<sup>1</sup> I. e. 13—14 ft.

<sup>2</sup> What is meant is the putting in of the eyes in the Buddha statue which always took place with quite special ceremonies.

193 robes, banners, white umbrellas, shields, fly-whisks and fans —  
 194 all these and other fair objects of sacrifice the Ruler offered,  
     mindful of the reward accruing from a sacrifice to the Buddha,  
     with the thought that it was as if it took place in the pre-  
 195 sence of the still living Prince of the wise, with a heart full  
     of the joy of faith, intent on merit. Many and manifold foods  
 196 also such as sweet dishes, rice, solid dishes and others, sugar,  
     honey, betel, lime, camphor and so forth, also remedies and  
 197 perfumes of every kind like sandal<sup>1</sup> and the like, beautiful  
     flowers, like jasmine, campaka blossoms and others — all these  
 198 and other objects of sacrifice he offered in pious fashion. The  
     makers of the Buddha image and the other people he rejoiced  
 199 by an offering of many animate and inanimate things, elephants,  
 200 cattle, buffaloes and so forth. If one reckons the sums spent  
     in the making of the Buddha statue and the other offerings  
     on the occasion of this vihāra festival according to their  
     money value, the result was sixteen thousand one hundred  
     and fifty (kahāpapas).

201     The large, beautiful vihāra, well worth seeing, which is  
     known as Gaṅgārāma because it was built on a fair spot near  
 202 the Mahāvälukagangā was founded by the King under the  
 203 name of Rājumahāvihāra. This vihāra, thus superbly furnished  
     with glory and splendour, was also destroyed by the enemy<sup>2</sup>  
 204 who had penetrated into the town. The King had it in the  
     best way restored to its original condition, and just as he had  
 205 held a solemn ceremony at the former eye festival, so (now)  
     he held another eye festival. After the Ruler of men had  
     dispensed in great abundance to the painters and so forth  
 206 garments, ornaments and other articles and had sacrificed  
     with many sacrificial gifts, he erected near by a fair monastery

<sup>1</sup> I think *sāragandha* should be taken in this sense like the corresponding skr. word.

<sup>2</sup> Thus we learn here that all these festivities described in the foregoing took place before the capture of Kandy by van Eck in 1765, that on this occasion the Gaṅgārāma founded by the King, was also destroyed, but as related in the following, restored after the destruction of the Dutch expedition, when the change of name possibly took place

for the community and made a chapter of bhikkhus who 207 devoted themselves with lasting zeal to the study and the ful-  
filment of moral duties, take up their abode there, providing 208 them in every way with what was necessary. Then by hold-  
ing in the way described formerly, full of reverence for the  
Triad of the jewels, a sacrificial festival for the Buddha, and 209 at the same time sacrificing to the chapter of the bhikkhus,  
he increased the fulness of merit for himself and theinity.

Now in order that this beautiful fair vihāra, worthy to 210 be seen, that was erected in this manner, and all the numerous sacrificial ceremonies inaugurated there and the many meri- 211 torious works such as the offerings to the community — should be continued for a long time in the right way, the Ruler determined a village situated near the vihāra by name Arnp- 212 pala, and many other villages and fields, and gardens also, as well as the large, populous village by name Udakagūma<sup>1</sup> 213 in the district of Māyādhanu and granted them (to the mo-  
nastery). And the King confirmed this in perpetuity by 214 having an inscription graven on the beautiful mountain (in  
the stone).

In this way the King of kings dowered with splendid 215 virtues, since he realised the worthlessness of acquired wealth, in his piety had sacrificial festivals celebrated for the Buddha and sacrificial festivals for the community of the excellent sons of the Victor and so performed perpetually all valuable, meritorious works<sup>2</sup>. Therefore should ye all also perpetually perform without wearying, meritorious works.

In the fair, splendid suburb by name Kujdasālā, the Ruler 216 of men had erected in a charming garden a vihāra fair to look on, supplied in the best way possible with outer walls 217 and many apas, and brought thither relics and images of the

<sup>1</sup> Now Diyagama. Three villages of this name might be the one in question: 1) Diyagama in the Kalutara District, Vuddubadda; 2) Diya-  
gama in the Magul Otota Korale, Kurunegula; 3) Diyagama in Deyal-  
adahainuna Pattuva, Kegalla (Census 1921, II, p. 48, 282, 514).

<sup>2</sup> Lit. "the full value of meritorious action" (*sāram* in contrast to *asāram* in a).

218 Sage. Then he dedicated (to the vihāra) the garden that was adorned with bread-fruit trees, mango trees, coconuts and other fruit trees, as well as many fields and villages and people  
 219 for the service of the monastery, and celebrated, intent on merit, day by day all sacrificial ceremonies, such as offerings of food and the like.

220 The wicked king known by the name of Rājasīha in the town of Sītāvaka<sup>1</sup> who had committed paricide and destroyed the Order of the Victor, as he could not distinguish what it  
 221 was right to do, but adopted a false faith, was devoted to the adherents of the false faith and ordered them to take for themselves the income accruing from the worship of the sacred  
 222 footprint of the Enlightened One on the Sumanakūṭa. From that time onwards the adherents of the false faith destroyed  
 223 everything there. When the highly famed Great king heard of these things he realised, reverently devoted to the En-  
 224 lightened One, that this was unseemly. He commanded the  
 225 adherents of the false faith from now onwards not to do so, and charged the sons of the Buddha to carry out in the right  
 226 way the many sacrificial ceremonies which should be performed there. He dedicated the flourishing, populous, large village  
 227 named Kuttāpiṭi to the sacred footprint and to shield it from the heat of the sun, he erected above it a mayūlapa with curtains, adorned with an umbrella on the point, fastened it with iron chains and accumulated much good by the celebration of sacrificial ceremonies. But the income accruing therefrom he assigned to the Order.

228 In this manner did our happy, sublime<sup>2</sup> Sihala Ruler in the knowledge that what that deluded king had done, because he knew not the virtues of the sublime Sage — was unseemly, put away all the wrong and by entrusting the spotless bhikkhu community of the sublime sons of the Buddha therewith, he

<sup>1</sup> Cf. for this 93. 8 ff. especially v. 12. Line 220 a agrees in wording with the line 93. 6 a.

<sup>2</sup> Note that in this strophe the word *javaro* occurs in each of the four lines.

celebrated a ceremonial festival for the Buddha which granted sublime immortality.

The Majjhavela-vihāra<sup>1</sup> built by the ruler, King Vatta-gāmāyī, which had fallen into decay, and the cetiya belonging to the vihāra he had rebuilt in the finest way and granted it the village called Siugatthala<sup>2</sup> that had been long separated from it. Day by day he celebrated there in the right way a sacrificial ceremony and so smoothed the road to heaven which he would have to tread in the future.

To the Dutiyasela-vihāra<sup>3</sup> the Ruler of men granted the village by name Rutanadoyi<sup>4</sup>, having learnt from the record of a stone inscription that it had formerly belonged to it but had been severed from it, and he the highly famed, intent on merit, celebrated a sacrificial festival.

For the restoration of the Majjhapalli-vihāra<sup>5</sup> the Ruler conferred distinction on the bhikkhu Sungharakkhita in pious fashion. He caused a great recumbent image (of the Buddha) to be made and finally he had a great festival celebrated there and the festival of the eyes held. In order also to perform the (customary) sacrificial ceremonies he dedicated the village called Mālāgāma<sup>6</sup> (to the monastery) and had a sacrificial festival celebrated daily according to rule. To the sāmavera called Siddhattha the Ruler granted the large Rajata-vihāra<sup>7</sup> erected by King Duttthagāmī when inspired<sup>8</sup> by the wish

<sup>1</sup> W.: Medavela-vihāra.

<sup>2</sup> Probably Singagoila, Kinigoda Korale, Kegalla District (Census 1921, II, p. 514).

<sup>3</sup> W.: Devanagala-vihāra.

<sup>4</sup> Perhaps Ruvandeniya, Galboda Korale, Kegalla District (Census 1921, II, p. 520).

<sup>5</sup> W.: Meddepola-vihāra.

<sup>6</sup> The Census 1921, II, p. 293, 363 mentions a village Malagamuva and another Malgomuva. Both are situated in the Kurunegala District, the first in the Galboda Egoda Korale, the second in the Medapattu Korale East. The latter seems to be meant here.

<sup>7</sup> See note to 99. 41.

<sup>8</sup> P. *patthetē āyatena* is a composite verb formed after the Sinhalese model (*gegenarā*, *gepācō*).

for the august position of a chief disciple of Metteya<sup>1</sup>, the  
 239 King of the wise. After the Ruler of Laṅkā had caused the  
 ceremony of admission to the Order to be performed on him,  
 he granted this bhikkhu and all the sons of the Victor dwelling  
 240 in the Uposathārāma rank and showed them favour in  
 every way. Then in order to restore this vihāra which had  
 long been in the state of a ruined house, the Ruler of men  
 241 in Laṅkā assigned it divers artisans, painters and others, as  
 well as much fine gold wherewith to gild the Buddha images,  
 242 and all handiwork and so forth. That prince among ascetics  
 — Siddhattha — accepted all this and removed in the best  
 243 possible way everything that had been destroyed by age. He  
 had a lofty, massive stone wall and a fine plaster floor built  
 244 in the house, and outside a mandapa, as well as (a picture)  
 the figure of the Buddha in combat with Māra above on the  
 rock face. Then when he had caused creeper work of flowers  
 245 to be applied in the best manner possible and had caused a  
 vast image of the recumbent Buddha to be fashioned out of  
 good bricks, lime and clay and also many sitting and standing  
 246 images of the Victor, he had represented in the best way  
 possible in painting on the beautiful inner wall, enlightened  
 247 ones like Muhiuttamni<sup>2</sup>, a thousand in number. And at the  
 foot of the vast statue of the recumbent Buddha he had placed  
 248 one after the other beautiful images, that of the Buddha's  
 constant servant and protector of the true doctrine<sup>3</sup> — Ānanda,  
 that of the Bodhisatta Metteya, that of the sublime patron  
 249 deity (Viṣṇu), and that of King Gāmāyi. He overlaid the five  
 250 great images of the Buddha with gold, and when he had thus  
 in every possible way finished the works which were to be

<sup>1</sup> Metteya is the future Buddha. Each Buddha has two pre-eminent disciples ascribed to him (*aggasāvakā*). Those of the historical Buddha were Sāriputta and Moggallāna.

<sup>2</sup> I do not know who is meant here. W. omits the name in his translation.

<sup>3</sup> Saddhammarakkhino refers to Ānanda. It is he who according to Vin. II. 287, was questioned as to the *dhamma*, by Mahākassapa at the first Council.

made in the inside (of the shrine), he had pourtrayed also outside on the wall a series of glorious figures of gods and Brahma figures with flowers in their hands, which looked as 251 if they had appeared for worship. Then too he caused a great, beautiful triumphal arch to be made, well worth seeing, further 252 two lion figures on either side of the portal and in the empty interstices of the wall figures of demons. Also he had pictures 253 pourtrayed in coloured painting of the sixteen holy places<sup>1</sup>, Mahiyaṅgaya and the others, further of the famous foot-print 254 on the Saccabuddha mountain<sup>2</sup>, of the ten pūramīs<sup>3</sup>, of the three forms of (right) action<sup>4</sup>, as well as of many jātakas in which subjects like the five great renunciations<sup>5</sup> are treated of. In the maṇḍapa he had all kinds of figures introduced, 255 series of lions, series of elephants, series of geese and creeper work of flowers. In the delightful cave above in the same rock 256 he built a vast image house, well worth seeing, splendid, beautiful with many sculptures fashioned to perfection and so forth. 257 There he had a beautiful, vast, life-like sitting Buddha made — splendid was this figure and fair to look at — and on either 258 side well fashioned, upright standing statues of the Bodhisatta 259 Metteyya and of the lotus-hued god<sup>6</sup>. He also caused many other figures to be set up: figures of sages, figures of many 260 hundreds of the perfect<sup>7</sup>, the four and twenty Buddhas, the

<sup>1</sup> See note to 100. 128.

<sup>2</sup> This is a sacred mountain in Siam, called Saccabandhana in the narrative (p. 31) mentioned above (Note to 100. 59). There was a footprint of the Buddha on it which had come there miraculously. King Dharmika had sent a model of this footprint along with other gifts to the King of Lāñkā.

<sup>3</sup> See note to 37. 180.

<sup>4</sup> P. *tidhā cariyam*. The three forms are *lokathacariyā*, *nātathacariyā* and *buddhicariyā* "action for the advantage of the world, for the advantage of one's kinsfolk and for one's (own) enlightenment." See DhCo. III. 441<sup>10</sup>.

<sup>5</sup> P. *pañcamahāpariccaṭayā*. The surrender of the five precious possessions, the wife, the children, the royal dignity, life, limbs. DhCo. I. e. CHILDERS, PD. s. v. *pariccaṭa*, <sup>6</sup> See note to 83. 49.

<sup>7</sup> P. *asekkha* "he who no longer undergoes training", synonymous with arahant.

261 whole of the Bodhi trees in the same number, the four and twenty intimations<sup>1</sup>, the sixteen holy places, fair forms of spiritual beings and others, the five great Councils<sup>2</sup> and yet  
 262 divers other beautiful pictures well worth seeing. Then he  
 263 brought thither relics of the Sage and had a cetiya erected,  
 adorned with a golden finial. In the image house itself he  
 264 had placed on the lofty vaulted<sup>3</sup> ceiling a sitting figure of  
 the Sage surrounded by his five hundred followers, Sāriputta  
 265 at the head. In the court he had walls and mayapapas erected  
 at different places, as well as several gate-buildings and here  
 266 and there stairs and other fine buildings, partly the restoration  
 of much that had suffered by age, partly also many new  
 (buildings).

267 All these fine structures the King dedicated (to the mo-  
 268 nastery) at the festival of the eyes by dignitaries whom he  
 had sent<sup>4</sup>, and in addition clothing, ornaments and much else.  
 He had rows of various triumphal arches without gaps put  
 269 up, placed on them the necessary ornament, gave orders for  
 270 the sacred ceremonies and while celebrating in worthy fashion  
 a great rite, he carried out the festival of the eyes under a  
 lucky star and at a favourable hour.

<sup>1</sup> Each of the 24 Buddhas who according to the legend, precede the historical Buddha — they are enumerated Mhv. 1. 5 ff. — has his special sacred tree under which he attains enlightenment. To each in a former existence on a particular occasion, a Buddha gives the intimation (*ryākuraṇa*) that he too shall in time attain the dignity of a Buddha.

<sup>2</sup> The Mhāvīpsa 3, 4 and 5. 268 ff. gives an account of the three first Councils (*dhammasaṃgiti*) in Rājagaha, Vesālī und Pāṭaliputta. Of the two other Councils the one is the Church reform under Parakkamabāhu I (Mhv. 78. 1 ff.), the other perhaps that under Parakkamabāhu II (Mhv. 84. 7 ff.). We get an idea of what the representation of such a council might have looked like from a fresco from Qyzil near Kutscha (Central Asia) the subject of which is the first Council. See A. von Le Coq and E. Waldschmidt, Die buddhistische Spätantike in Miltensien VI. p. 79 und Tafel 14.

<sup>3</sup> *P. uddham pabbhāra-m-uttava*. Very likely a picture on the ceiling.

<sup>4</sup> The construction of the sentence is quite irregular. It seems to me, however, that *pesite 'macce* is acc. pl. which like the preceding accusatives is made to depend on *datrāna*.

From that time onwards there came hither many inhabitants of the whole kingdom from all quarters, like the sea when it overflows<sup>4</sup> the land. When all the people who had gathered there beheld the many golden and other works of art which had been carried out, there their hearts were filled with joy, as if they saw the Enlightened One at the mirae of the double appearances<sup>1</sup>. In joyful and high spirits they celebrated amid cries of Hail! a great festival and thus paved their way to Heaven. At that festival he invited the bhikkhu community of the vihāra, had seats prepared in the inner room of the vihāra, made bhikkhus who were preachers of the true doctrine sit down thereon, and had the Mahāmaṅgalasutta<sup>2</sup> and other sacred texts worth hearing recited by them and thus celebrated in worthy manner a sacrificial festival of the doctrine<sup>3</sup>. All the people who saw and heard this, in that they at one and the same time beheld the Enlightened One<sup>4</sup> and heard the true doctrine, were filled daily in every possible way with the highest joy and ecstasy, as if by a sermon of the living Sage. Thus he made manifest both: the beauty of his form and the charm of his sermon.

Outside in the court he placed pillars of stone, erected a maṇḍapa, spread seats therein and after establishing the great multitudes gathered round the maṇḍapa in the five major and other commandments relating to moral discipline, he made them listen daily to abhijñat texts. Full of reverence he also invited the preachers of the doctrine to preach the doctrine repeatedly during the three watches of the night.

<sup>1</sup> The *gāvukam pāṭīherom* is often mentioned, as is the case in the ancient Mahāvaipsa (See my translation, note to 17. 41; cf. DhCo. III, p. 199 ff.; Samantapāśādikā, ed. TAKAKUSU I, p. 88 ff.).

<sup>2</sup> In the Suttanipāta, Gāthavagga, Sutta 4 (ed. by DINES ANDERSEN and HELMER SRIMI, p. 46).

<sup>3</sup> P. *dharmapāḍā*. The *dharma* itself is the *pūjñrattha*, the "object of sacrifice", because the sacred texts are recited.

<sup>4</sup> I. e. the images of the Buddha in the Rajala-vihāra

<sup>5</sup> The subject from v. 274 onwards is throughout the King. W. quite unnecessarily takes Siddhattha (see v. 238) as the subject of *nimantiya* in 281 b.

282 In the year two thousands three hundred and one after the final nirvana of the Enlightened One<sup>1</sup> he had the vihāra called  
 283 Rajata restored and the great festival celebrated. He then thought of repairing the splendid cetiya erected on a clear,  
 284 fine large slab of rock to the south of the vihāra but which was so dilapidated that it resembled a heap of dust. Therefore he had fetched from all quarters lime, brieks, stones and so  
 285 forth. Hereupon he had a fine, square throne built of stone in the best possible manner whereon he placed a relic of the  
 286 sublime Enlightened One. At the restoration of the cetiya, he erected on a neighbouring<sub>1</sub> particularly beautiful piece of land for the community whom he invited thither in  
 287 sitting manner for the purpose, setting up a marked out boundary, a monastery with an Uposatha house and other  
 288 (buildings) provided with a brick roof and so forth. On the land round about he laid out beautifully a large park adorned with divers blossoming trees<sub>1</sub> with divers blossoming creepers,  
 289 with divers fruit trees and the like, and where there were many bathing-ponds. And full of zeal as he was, he piously made the sons of the Victor dwell there and devote themselves to study and religious exercises.

290 In such wise was the place restored by royal power, visited (in days of yore) by great saints and honoured by the  
 291 former rulers of Laṅkā. When the highly famed King heard thereof he fixed the boundary of the vihāra solemnly in the  
 292 same way (as before), performed there all the solemn ceremonies, arranged in still more abundant measure (than before) for an almsgiving to the community and the like and laid up  
 293 a store of merit. Near the Dohala mountain<sup>2</sup> adorned with rows of trees like pūga, punnāga, nāga<sup>3</sup> and others, resounding with the sweet twitter of all kinds of birds, provided  
 294 with cool, spotless white stone slabs, enlivened with herds of  
 295 divers animals, there was in the fair monastery situated there

<sup>1</sup> I. e. 1757 A. D.

<sup>2</sup> Mentioned in 44. 56. See note to the passage.

<sup>3</sup> For the tree names cf. 73. 98, 74. 204, 79. 3.

which bore the name of Sūkara<sup>1</sup>, an image house of the Victor, erected by a dignitary who was charged therewith by the King. There the councillor Suvappagāma setting up 296 stone pillars, built an Uposatha house and dedicated it to the sons of the Sage. He also had supplies of wood collected 297 for pillars and the like and numerous dwellings built there. To the bhikkhus to whom dwellings had been assigned there, 298 the Lord of men devoted many villages, fields and so on for the provision of what was necessary. After that Ruler of men 299 had caused all this to be brought about he kindly dedicated it to that prince of ascetics, Dhammarakkhita.

After the Ruler of men had in such wise stored up divers 300 kinds of merit he passed in the thirty-fifth year of his reign from this world thither in accordance with his deeds.

When one reflects on the worthlessness of wealth and of the 301 life of the flesh one utterly rejects the yearning thereafter. Ye also, revering the Trinit of the sacred things, ought to perform good works such as spiritual exertions and the like<sup>2</sup>.

Here ends the hundredth chapter, called «The History of Kittisirirājasīha», in the Mahāvamsa, compiled for the serene joy and emotion of the pious.

<sup>1</sup> The Col. Ed. reads *sūkarārājanamāhi* instead of the *sukarachnayānamāhi* of my MSS. W. gives Varuvāla as the modern name of the monastery.

<sup>2</sup> The whole of the hundredth chapter has the character of a supplement to chapter 99 and treats especially of the services of the King to the Church. It repeatedly alludes to events which have been touched upon in the foregoing (cf. 98. 91 with the note to 100. 59, also the note to 100. 203). I have already pointed out (note to 99. 53) that Tibbotuvave's contribution to the Cūlavamsa (see note to 99. 76) which deals with the reign of Kittisirirājasīha is composed in praise of this king and completed during his lifetime. This is the case too with the greater part of the hundredth chapter. Here too in v. 228 we meet with the expression *anbhākōm Sihalinda* and the benediction in v. 185 sounds as if it were addressed to a living person. At the end however Kittisiri's death is mentioned. The last part of the hundredth chapter must thus have been added later, whether by Tibbotuvave himself or by another author. The break cannot be fixed with certainty, it might possibly be at v. 228.

## CHAPTER CI

SUPPLEMENT<sup>1</sup>

1 On his death, his younger brother Sirirājādhirājasīha<sup>2</sup>  
 2 received consecration as king in Laṅkā. After attaining his  
 consecration as king, he devoted himself with pious joy to  
 the Triad of the Jewels, zealous in listening to the true doc-  
 3 trine, unwearied, discerning. The Ruler of men continued, as  
 formerly without abatement that furtherance of the laity and  
 4 the Order which his brother had carried out. The highly famed  
 offered meat and drink and so on as before to the sublime Tooth  
 5 Relic without depriving it of anything. He commanded that  
 the regular almsgiving which had been established for the  
 sons of the Victor should be given to them in the order in-  
 6 troduced by the (former) king. The bhikkhus who with the Thera  
 Upāli at their head had arrived from Sāninda, came to the  
 7 town of Sirivadhanā. Here those bhikkhus who had come from  
 there, with the Thera Upāli at their head, established a sacred  
 boundary to the south of the town in the so-called Kusumā-  
 8 rāma<sup>3</sup>, according to the nātālutiya process<sup>4</sup>. When he saw

<sup>1</sup> Chapter 101 of the Mhv. has been composed and added to their edition of the chronicle (1877) by H. SHIMANALA and BATHWANTIDAWA. See MALALASEKERA, Pali Literature, p. 142. No MS. however of those which I could examine, reaches beyond v. 292 of ch. 100, and I do not know on which authority the vv. 100, 293–301 are based.

<sup>2</sup> Reigned 1780–1798 (cf. v. 18). It was during the reign of Rājādhirājasīha that the capitulation of Colombo took place (15th Feb., 1796) and with that the passing of the dominion from the Dutch to the British. Cf. PIERS, 3, p. 142 ff.; CODRINGTON, HC., p. 133 ff.

<sup>3</sup> Synonym for Pupphārāma 100, 86, 141, now the Malvatu-vihāra.

<sup>4</sup> This is a particular form of a *sanghakamma* or ecclesiastical act. See Vin. II. 89<sup>2</sup> and 91<sup>37</sup> (= Culav. 4. 14 2 and 11).

that the Uposatha house built formerly by King Kittisiri, was decayed, the Ruler of men who was intent on merit, first of all raised the ground on all sides and then by the adding of still more stones he put up the walls inside the boundary. He put up stone pillars and so built the Uposatha house which the Ruler made over<sup>1</sup> to the community from the four regions of the heavens.

The King was acquainted with various literary works, works in Pāli and Sanskrit, he rejoiced in the continuous giving of alms, was in form like the god of love<sup>2</sup>. As expert in the text books relating to language he made a poem in the Sihala tongue out of the *Asadisajātaka*<sup>3</sup> and had it written down. With a heart full of faith he revered<sup>4</sup> the Tooth Relic in faith with a hundred thousand lamps which he had lit in a single night. Hearing of the great merits of a kāṭhina offering over all gifts of alms, he every year presented kāṭhina<sup>5</sup> robes to the community. He had an image of the Aṅgirasa<sup>6</sup> made in bronze in the proportions of the King and since he strove after the dignity of a Budhā, he erected in the monastery called Gaṅgārāma which was held to be pious, a graceful cetiya well worth seeing.

<sup>1</sup> The description of the building is obscure. V. 9 seems to refer to the securing of the whole base, v. 10 to the laying down of a walled terrace and v. 11 ab to the building of the house itself.

<sup>2</sup> P. *makarabdhaja* = skr. *mukundhrajit* "whose badge is the makara, the dolphin".

<sup>3</sup> Jātaka nr. 181 in FAUERH. II, p. 86 ff.

<sup>4</sup> I believe that here we should read *sāgatānesi* instead of *samānesi* as the meaning of the latter can hardly be harmonized with *ātāpūḍāṇi*. The instr. *dipasubhūtassena* would also not fall within the construction of the sentence. We must, it is true, put up with a slight disturbance of the metre, when reading *sāgatānest*.

<sup>5</sup> See note to 44. 48.

<sup>6</sup> Aṅgiras in the Rigveda is the designation of "beings half gods half men who act as intermediaries between the two, as sons of Heaven, as ancestors of men, as those who impart to mankind the gifts of the gods" (GUASSMANN). The expression *aṅgirasa* is already used of Budhā, Therag. 1252 (quoted S. I. 196). Cf. also A. III, 239<sup>25</sup>; Jū. V. 141<sup>1</sup>.

18 After the Ruler had accumulated these and other merits he passed after an eighteen years' reign from this world in accordance with his deeds.

19 The sister's son of Rājādhiraṇasīha, the Lord of men, Sirivikkamarājasīha<sup>1</sup>, the discerning ruler of the country hearkened to the doctrine preached by the Victor. The Ruler found pleasure therein and sacrificed to the sacred Tooth Relic jewels, pearls and other (valuables) and many villages and fields. To the community whose head is the Buddha, he dispensed often delicious foods and so strove after eternal happiness. These and other merits the Ruler accumulated.

23 But as he indulged in intercourse with impious people he changed (for the worse). He had the chief councillors, the great dignitaries and many other officials gathered together and destroyed his subjects like a devil. He had the people, many hundreds in number, brought to different spots and had them impaled, merciless as death. Much wealth that had come to the people by inheritance, the King had confiscated like a thief that robs villages. And because the Ruler committed in this way many evil deeds the Sihalas and the inhabitants of the town of Colombo<sup>2</sup> rebelled. They all came hither, captured the criminal king alive when the eighteenth year after his consecration had passed, and brought him to the opposite coast<sup>3</sup>. After they had brought the King, the torturer of his people, to the opposite coast the Ingrīsi by name seized the whole kingdom.

End of the Mahāvamsa  
May there be prosperity!

<sup>1</sup> Reigned 1798-1815. For the rise of the British power in Ceylon during the reign of this king and for the reign itself see CORRINGTON, HC. p. 155 ff., where also on p. 169 f., 182 there is a list of the bibliography of the subject.

<sup>2</sup> This means the British.

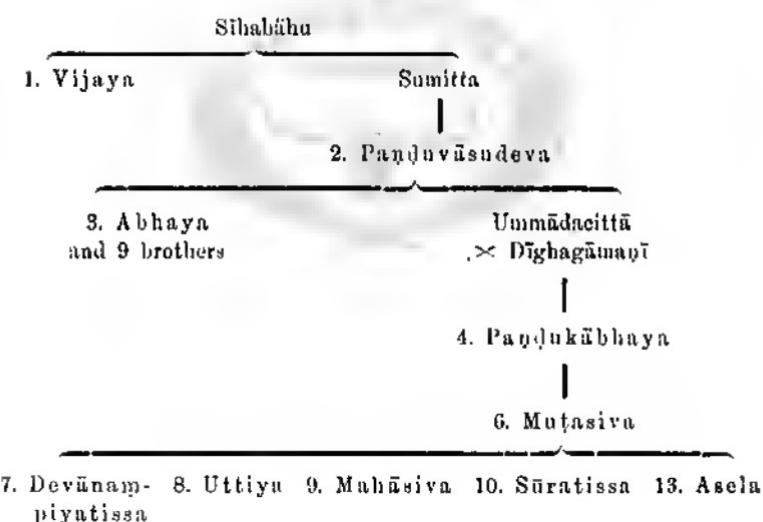
<sup>3</sup> I. e. To the Indian mainland.

## Genealogical Tables

### A The Oldest Part of the Mahāvamsa

I

#### From Vijaya to Asela

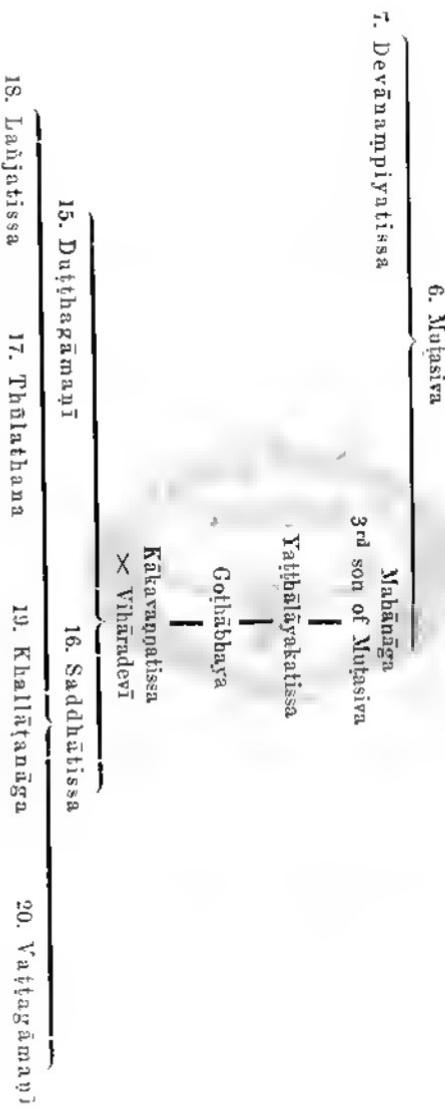


Asela's predecessors are the Damīṭa usurpers Sena and Guttika (11, 12),  
his successor is Elūra (14).

## II

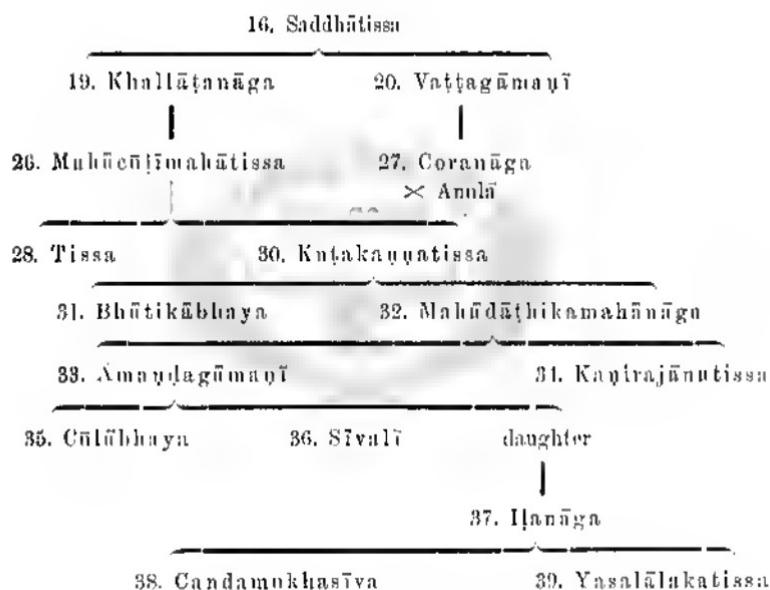
### Duttīgāmāmī;

his descent and his successors



Vatīgāmāmī's reign was interrupted by that of five Damila usurpers (21—25).

## III

**From Mahācūlīmahātissa to Yasalālakatissa**

The successors of Tissa (27) are the paramours of Queen Anulā 1. Siva, 2. Vaṭuka, 3. Dārubhatikatissa, 4. Niliya and Anulā herself (29). — Yasalālakatissa's successor is the usurper Subharāja (10).

## IV

**From Vasabha to Mahāsena**

## 1.

41. Vasabha, a Lambakunḍa  
 |  
 42. Vañkanāsikatissa  
 |  
 43. Gujabāhukagūmaṇī

## 2.

44. Mahallanāga  
 father-in-law of 48  
 45. Bhātikatissa      46. Kuniṭṭhatissa  
 47. Khujjanāga      48. Kuñcanāga

## 3.

49. Sirināga I.  
 brother of the consort of 48  
 50. Vohārikatissa      51. Abhayānāga  
 |  
 52. Sirināga II.  
 |  
 53. Vijayakumāra

## 4.

54. Samghatissa, a Lambakunḍa  
 55. Sirisamghabodhi,    "  
 56. Goṭhābhaya,        "  
 57. Jetṭhatissa      58. Mahāsena

## B The Oldest Part of the Culavamsa

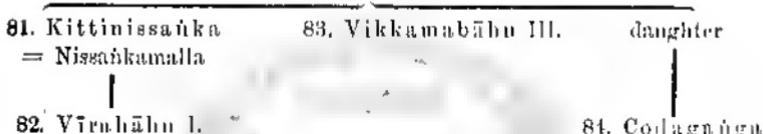
See Culavamsa trsl. I, p. 351–358.

## C The Later Parts of the Culavamsa

### I

#### From Kittinissaṅka to Codagāṅga

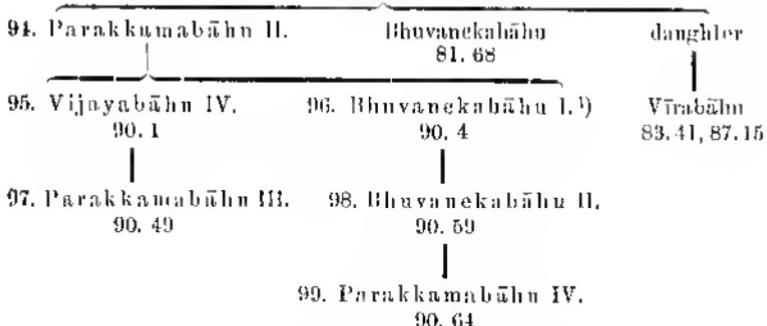
Kūlīnga Prince



### II

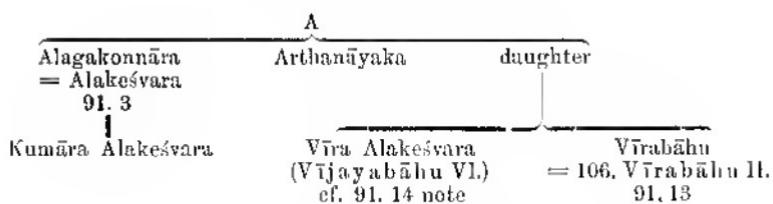
#### From Vijayabāhu III. to Parakkamabāhu IV.

Vijayabāhu III.

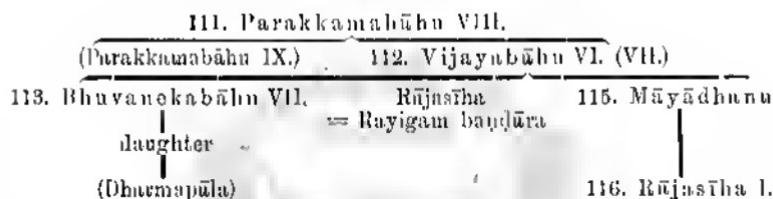


<sup>1)</sup> Other sons of Parakkamabāhu II. are Tilokamalla, Parakkamabāhu and Jayabāhu (87. 16 f.)

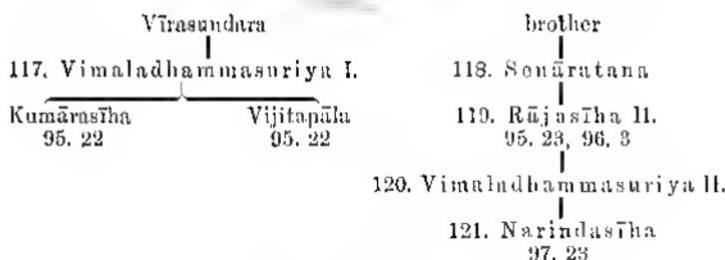
## III

**The family of Alagakkonāra**

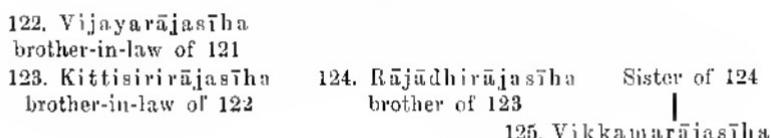
## IV

**From Parakkamabāhu VIII. to Rājasīha I.**

## V

**From Vimaladhammasuriya I. to Narindasīha**

## VI

**From Vijayarājasīha to Vikkamarājasīha**

## Indices

The indices refer not only to the Cūlavaipsa but also to my edition and translation of the old Mahāvamsa so that the whole chronicle is comprised within. The abbreviations are: M. ed. = The Mahāvamsa, edited by W. G., PTS. 1908. — M. tr. = The Mahāvamsa, translated by W. G., PTS. 1912. — C. ed. I = Cūlavaipsa, being the more recent part of the Mahāvamsa, vol. I, PTS. 1925. — C. ed. II = the same, vol. II, PTS. 1927. — C. tr. I = Cūlavaipsa &c., translated by W. G., vol. I, PTS. 1929. — C. tr. II = the same, vol. II, PTS. 1930.

### I. List of words

- |   |  |
|---|--|
| akkhapavedhin 72. 245<br>akkhamīlā 46. 17; 57. 6<br>akkhi "oxle" 38. 94<br>agati 37. 108; 99. 73, 104<br>aggikapalla 60. 70<br>ahna — saka 47. 10, 14<br>atthamūlavihāra 61. 59<br>atthiyatamāni 84. 4, 18<br>adībhayoga 88. 93, 118<br>adhikārin 66. 66; 70. 278<br>anūlaya 42. 42; 46. 4<br>anuyyāna 68. 58<br>ānussati 98. 14<br>annapāsana 62. 53<br>antarnīgadhura 69. 32<br>apāya 72. 306<br>appamaññā 39. 18<br>abhiññā 4. 12; 52. 38<br>alhisamaya 1. 32; 12. 27<br>amaramantar 42. 3; 52. 38 | arahant (M. tr. p. 292) 1. 14<br>āgāmiya 44. 148<br>ājira 35. 3<br>ādi (in proper names) 44. 6, 122; 46. 1; 48. 50; 91. 2; 98. 2<br>ādipāda 53. 13<br>āyubbeda 73. 42<br>ārūmika 37. 63<br>ālinda 35. 3<br>ājambara 69. 20<br>āvaraṇa 79. (27.) 69<br>āvindha 99. 45<br>iti (in the oratio recta) 37. 114; 44. 16, 90; 45. 20; 48. 30, 116; 74. 64; 77. 99; 94. 23<br>itthāgūra 59. 33<br>iriyāpatha 3. 25<br>udakukkhepasimā 89. 70; 94. 17; 97. 12 |
|---|--|

upacāra **60**. 82  
 upanayana **64**. 13  
 upanissaya **5**. 45, 172  
 upasampatti **84**. 42; **89**. 50  
 upāya **66**. 143  
 upāyā (the four) **58**. 3  
 upāsana **24**. 1; **51**. 100  
 uposatha (M. tr. p. 296) **37**. 201  
 ubbhāhikā **4**. 46 f.  
 eka- **61**. 13  
 ekatthambhakapāsāda **73**. 92  
 elakatthambha **60**. 11  
 odakantika **72**. 238  
 kañkūtthaka **32**. 6  
 kañcuka **48**. 140  
 kaññvedha **62**. 53  
 katamañgalā **35**. 111  
 kapparukkha **51**. 124  
 kappiyakāraka **37**. 173  
 kamāgata **69**. 30  
 kalanda **37**. 204  
 kavāṭaka **35**. 25  
 kiñkipijāla **73**. 68  
 kumbhaḍjaka **12**. 20  
 kulambaja **36**. 26  
 kusalodaya **71**. 24  
 kūṭagāra **73**. 62  
 ketu **85**. 100  
 koṭisa **88**. 109  
 koṭthaka **1**. 56  
 koṭhabaddhanijjhara **79**. 28  
 khaggalatā **72**. 102  
 khayla **66**. 108

khandhāvāra **73**. 57  
 khīpāsava (M. tr. p. 292) **3**. 9  
 gaṇa **51**. 52; **74**. 48  
 gaṇasamgaṇikā **60**. 17  
 gati **37**. 51; **72**. 286  
 gantha **97**. 56  
 gandhabbi **74**. 216  
 gabbaññaparihāra **62**. 36  
 gamiyabhatta **51**. 61  
 garnbhañjāni **84**. 39; **85**. 105  
 gāvuta **65**. 4; **73**. 157  
 giriseta **79**. 24  
 gopā (the five) **26**. 26  
 gokarṇa **70**. 36  
 gopura **60**. 12  
 cakkhumana **81**. 26  
 eñjña **72**. 252  
 catuññigū **70**. 217  
 catussūlā **73**. 23  
 cumbaṭa **24**. 31  
 celnikkhepa **72**. 288  
 corayuddha **75**. 135  
 chidda **66**. 63  
 jaṭila **1**. 16  
 jara **99**. 176  
 jāṭakamma **62**. 45  
 jālakavāṭa **78**. 40  
 jetṭhabpacāyaka **41**. 9  
 tapassīn, tapovana **41**. 99  
 tādin **15**. 62  
 tālāvacara **17**. 7  
 tikkhaggapada **66**. 87

- ticīvara 41, 29  
 tilaka 87, 67  
 tivāṅka 78, 39; 85, 66  
 tulāyatṭhi 88, 97  
  
 thūpikā 76, 105, 118  
  
 daṇḍissara 52, 3; 53, 30; 60, 22  
 dūrīkaroti 85, 44  
 deñjubha 37, 132  
 doñi 76, 91  
 dosā (the five) 26, 26  
  
 dlianajāta 58, 8  
 dharmnakamma 39, 57  
 dhammadāna 98, 77; 99, 15  
 dhammadhātu 41, 37  
 dharmapālhata 84, 14  
 dharmasampaha, -sañgīti 3,  
     17; 4, 63  
 dhātuka 57, 69  
 dhātugabbha 60, 56; 68, 28  
  
 nandana 63, 38; 73, 29  
 nandin 85, 50  
 nāñjavāra 76, 91  
 nāñlo 76, 261-2  
 nāmakaraya 62, 52  
 nāyaka 62, 56  
 nikkhalu 76, 18  
 niggatika 74, 22  
 nijavañjhita 67, 90  
 nijjhara 79, 28, 66  
 niñhite 99, 52, 58  
 nidāna 37, 133  
 nibandha 90, 21  
 niyatti 48, 108  
  
 niyojeti 72, 207; 77, 59, 82  
 nirodha 35, 104  
 nisseyigaha 39, 3  
 nīta 67, 96  
 nettika 60, 14  
  
 pakatatta 78, 25  
 paccayā (the four) 37, 76  
 paccekahattim 72, 248; 76, 244  
 pañcapatiñhitāṅga 98, 50; 100,  
     29  
 pañceacakamma 5, 261  
 pañipatti 20, 30  
 pañiyatta 78, 35  
 pañivedha 20, 30  
 pañpāli 79, 27  
 pañikata 72, 91  
 pañupalasa 45, 5  
 pattanikkujjana 45, 31  
 patti 42, 50; 44, 109; 52, 69;  
     73, 47; 100, 146, 159  
 patthapñila 60, 3  
 padakkhiñam karoti 37, 196  
 parikkhātā (the eight) 60, 71  
 pariccheda 42, 39  
 paribhoga 51, 20  
 parivattana 73, 71  
 pariveña 37, 63 (M. tr. p. 291  
     is misleading)  
 parisā (the four) 70, 106  
 pavivita 73, 116  
 pavivekin 71, 27  
 paveyigama 60, 75  
 pākasāsana 72, 186  
 pāñava 72, 103  
 pāñihāriyapakkha 37, 202  
 pādajāla 38, 64; 52, 65; 53, 50

pādamūlaka **66**, 66  
 pāpuratharaṇāni **54**, 24  
 pāpena (pāpakammena) **52**, 77;  
     **53**, 8, 10  
 pāmaṅga **11**, 28  
 pāramitā (the ten) **37**, 180  
 pāsāda **37**, 59; **72**, 244  
 piṭṭhipto karoti **70**, 314  
 piṭṭhipāsāpa **68**, 27  
 piṭṭhasappin **49**, 19  
 pīti (five kinds of) **81**, 21  
 puṇihakiriyā (the ten) **37**, 180  
 puṇihodaya **37**, 139; **53**, 23  
 pupphālāna **30**, 51  
 pubba (= ādi) **73**, 122  
 pubbakāra **64**, 15  
 puratthā **38**, 110  
 pessiya **67**, 58; **84**, 5  
 pharati **72**, 251  
 balipalṭa **57**, 7  
 bāhūja **59**, 12  
 bodhikotṭhaka **79**, 72  
 bodhighara **38**, 43  
 bhatti **74**, 213; **85**, 33; **93**, 9  
 bhaya **74**, 49  
 bhava **4**, 66  
 bhavavibbava **91**, 19.  
 °bhājana **44**, 70; **84**, 16.  
 bhāṇḍavāra **98**, 21  
 bhāṇubandhu **85**, 101  
 bhāva **66**, 39, 42  
 bhūmi **64**, 41

makara **73**, 92  
 maṅgalikāni (the eight) **27**, 37  
 maṇḍapa **37**, 103  
 marumba **29**, 8  
 mahacca **74**, 225  
 mahārūkkha **72**, 11  
 mātulā **57**, 28  
 mukha **70**, 156, 217  
 °mukha **50**, 58  
 mukhabhāṅga **63**, 30  
 muttagāgin **60**, 81  
 muddhavedī **32**, 5  
 mulūpī **89**, 60  
 mūla<sup>o</sup> **74**, 1  
 mūlaghaccampī **58**, 56  
 medavaṇṇapāsāpa **1**, 39  
 yaṭṭhimadhuṭṭa **32**, 46  
 yathācārapī **60**, 1  
 yavana **76**, 264  
 yogga **42**, 8; **44**, 84; **70**, 207;  
     **95**, 12  
 yojana **38**, 68; cf. C. Itr. p. 319  
 raṅgabhuṇi **31**, 82  
 raṅgamāṇḍala **85**, 42  
 ratṭha **57**, 71  
 ratanavāluka **76**, 101  
 randha **70**, 212  
 rasa **72**, 94  
 rājadhammā (the ten) **37**, 107  
 rājapābhata **84**, 14  
 rājavesibhūjaṅga **73**, 91  
 rājinī **50**, 58  
 rāyara **76**, 94

- laya 73. 79  
 läjapaincamaka 98. 46  
 lina 78. 13  
 lekha 49. 21  
  
 vātaīpsa 11. 28  
 vad̄hita 67. 52  
 vad̄hieti 50. 66  
 vattakāraka 98. 27  
 vattati 54. 59  
 vaļabhi 88. 97  
 vasavattin 86. 9  
 vassahāra 23. 74  
 vātaroga 56. 5  
 vītūhādha 37. 141  
 vāriputa 48. 118; 68. 35; (79.  
     66, 67)  
 vāseti 74. 218  
 vāha 68. 30  
 vāhana 74. 225  
 vāhinī 72. 255, 295  
 vijumbhati 90. 71  
 viṭānka 88. 97  
 vidhunita 67. 96  
 vibhutta 71. 24  
 vimāna 72. 323; 73. 107  
 vilivakñraka 88. 105  
 visodheti 38. 53  
 vedaṅga 62. 33  
 vedikā 27. 16; 73. 88; 76. 117.  
     Cf. M. tr. p. 296  
 vessa 76. 261  
 vopanāmika 67. 45  
 vyādhā 69. 20  
  
 saṃrambha 72. 18  
 saṃkhata, saṃkhāra 4. 66
- | saṃkhyā 89. 4  
 | saṃgaha 91. 27  
 | saṃgahavatthūni (the four)  
     37. 108; (41. 56)  
 | saccakiriyā 18. 39; 25. 16;  
     (51. 56;) 70. 209; 82. 16  
 | satthavaṭṭi 37. 150  
 | satthāgama 67. 88  
 | sanāthikata 73. 67  
 | santi 73. 71; 85. 50  
 | saṃdhibhedā 70. 168  
 | sannira 39. 16; 74. 261  
 | sūmayū 59. 21  
 | samuttha with gen. 48. 20  
 | samavuttī 42. 3  
 | samāpatti 5. 123  
 | samī 72. 9  
 | saraya 1. 32, 62  
 | sahaṇvad̄hītī 67. 52  
 | sahoḍīn 23. 11; 35. 11  
 | sādhukāra 74. 223; 85. 48  
 | sāpadānaṇp 37. 203  
 | sābhimata 61. 50  
 | sāmayera 39. 48  
 | sāragandha 100. 196  
 | sāhicca 82. 3  
 | sikhāmaha 63. 5  
 | sivikāsotthisalā 10. 102  
 | su° before a finite verb 50. 27  
 | sugaṭhika 49. 34  
 | sudhākara 84. 41  
 | śūri 60. 19  
 | sekha 3. 24  
 | sogata 76. 11; 83. 37  
 | sonyā 85. 33  
 | sotāpatti, -panna 1. 33; (12.  
     21)

hammiya 88. 93, 118  
 haraṁharam 76. 114  
 hassa 66. 56; 73. 117

hemavaḍḍha 38. 63  
 homa 62. 33

## II. Names of Persons

- |   |   |
|---|---|
| Ajātasattu and successors 4. 1 ff.                    | Dhamminika 100. 66, 136 &c.                             |
| Alagakkonāra 91. 3, 9 N.                              | Nandā 5. 15 ff.; 64. 45                                 |
| Alattūru 76. 180 N., 184, 214                         | Narasīha 47. 4, 7 N.                                    |
| Asoka (Dhammadisoka) 5. 19 ff.,<br>11. 18; 38. 41 &c. | Nālā 50. 9  |
| Āriyamuni 100. 95                                     | Nigrodha 5. 37 ff.                                      |
| Udaya I. 49. 1, 45                                    | Patañjali 37. 217                                       |
| Upāli 100. 71, 91, 117, 142                           | Panūda see Mahāpanūda                                   |
| Okkāka 2. 11 ff., 45. 38; 80. 32;<br>87. 34           | Parakkamacamūnālha 80. 49,<br>52                        |
| Kālāsoka 4. 31, 63; 5. 14                             | Bimbisāra 2. 25 ff.                                     |
| Kuṭṭhaka 51. 88                                       | Buddhaghosa 37. 215 ff., 224                            |
| Kumāradāsa (and Kūlidāsa) 41. 1                       | Bhaddajī 31. 7 ff.                                      |
| Kulasekhara 76. 76, 80 N. —<br>90. 47                 | Mandhūtae 2. 2; 37. 53; 81. 28                          |
| Kuvaṇṇī 7. 11 ff.                                     | Muhākassapa 3. 4; 5. 1; 78. 6                           |
| Koṭalla 64. 3; 70. 56                                 | Mahādhammakathin 37. 175                                |
| Gokāṇṇa 63. 31; 66. 35                                | Mahānāma 39. 42   |
| Cauḍavajji 5. 120 ff.                                 | Mahāpanālu 2. 1; 31. 8; 37.<br>62; 51. 9                |
| Cāṇakka 5. 16; 64. 45                                 | Mahāsañgmata 2. 1, 23; 47. 2;<br>99. 77                 |
| Cittā 9. 1, 13 ff.                                    | Māna, Mānavamī 57. 4, 14, 25                            |
| Coḷakonāra 76. 145, 173, 180 N.,<br>181               | Moggaliputta 5. 95 ff.; 78. 6                           |
| Tondriya 76. 180 N., 181                              | Rāma 64. 42; 68. 20; 73. 137;<br>75. 59; 83. 46; 88. 69 |
| Dāsaka 5. 105 ff.                                     | Rūvaṇa 64. 42; 75. 59                                   |
| Dighasanda(na) 15. 212; 38. 16                        | Vajiragga, Viduragga 51. 105;<br>53. 46                 |
| Duyyodhana 64. 43                                     | Varaṇāpamī 100. 138, 174                                |
| Dussanta 64. 44                                       | Visuddhācariya 100. 137, 171,<br>173                    |
| Dhammadikti 84. 11                                    |   |
| Dhammadisoka see Asoka                                |   |

Vibāradevi	22. 12, 20, 29; 24. 53	10; 85. 73; 92. 6. — 44. 83;
Sagararājino	87. 34	46. 1; 59. 10
Samāṇī	59. 21	Silāmeghavaṇṇa 44. 83 N.
Saravampkara	97. 51, 60; 98. 23; 99. 150 N.; 100. 19, 107	Sītā 73. 137.
Siggava	5. 99, 120 W.	Sunettā 91. 24
Sirisamghabodhi	36, 73 ff.; 81.	Souaka 5. 104
		Hanumant 73. 161

### III. List of Passages

1. 4. — 3. 6, 7. — 4. 30, 45, 51, 62. — 5. 23, 61, 145, 216,  
227, 262. — 7. 56 W. — 9. 8, 17, 23. — 11. 2, 5. — 12. 16,  
55. — 13. 18, 19. — 15. 27 f., 59. — 17. 41. — 19. 10, 28. —  
20. 22, 30, 37. — 21. 4 ff. — 22. 17, 53, 67, 68. — 23. 11,  
24, 37 f. — 24. 35, 48, 56. — 25. 89, 93. — 26. 23-5. —  
27. 46. — 28. 28. — 29. 2, 58. — 30. 25, 42-50. — 31. 21,  
26, 43, 53, 124. — 32. 34. — 33. 4, 42, 51, 98, 103. — 34.  
27, 36. — 35. 13, 116-8. — 36. 26, 34, 102, 116, 124. —  
37. 35, 66 W., 91, 100, 101, 111, 116, 129, 138, 159, 171,  
184, 185 f., 200. — 38. 3, 8, 9, 21, 29, 35, 59, 60, 94, 96,  
98, 110. — 39. 6, 14, 17, 23, 26, 27, 34, 42, 52, 53, 59. —  
41. 9, 44, 66, 71, 73, 82, 89, 99, 103. — 42. 1, 15-6, 26,  
28, 62, 66, 69. — 44. 7, 13, 21, 38, 44, 56, 69, 87, 88, 90,  
106, 119, 123, 151. — 45. 30, 54, 56, 70, 75. — 46. 1, 32,  
33. — 47. 2-3, 10, 40, 45. — 48. 8, 20, 25, 29, 51, 61,  
72, 79, 94, 101, 104. — 49. 1, 2, 3, 9, 18, 23, 24, 27, 47,  
52, 58, 61, 62, 74, 81, 83, 86, 93. — 50. 9, 27, 34, 52, 53,  
58, 73, 74. — 51. 20, 56-7, 98. — 52. 4, 12, 19, 22, 26,  
29, 31, 32, 43, 46, 80. — 53. 7, 44. — 54. 9, 57, 59-60,  
62, 68, 70-1. — 55. 16, 20. — 56. 16. — 57. 8, 9, 33. —  
58. 15, 45, 56. — 59. 1, 2, 22, 32, 49. — 60. 14, 26, 30,  
14, 84. — 61. 31, 36, 40, 53, 72. — 62. 10, 13, 65. —  
63. 12-5. — 64. 3, 19, 22, 28, 40, 41-7, 53. — 66. 7, 12,  
25, 47, 53, 56, 59, 62, 63, 66, 72, 78, 85, 86, 104, 109, 115,  
116, 143-5, 150. — 67. 21, 44, 45, 46, 61, 65. — 68. 1-2,  
25, 31. — 69. 20. — 70. 20, 42-4, 85, 92, 127, 128, 145,

181, 208, 289, 290, 292, 321. — 71. 10, 13-5, 32. — 72. 18, 28, 43, 58, 80, 91, 95, 101-2, 104, 106-7, 113, 122-8, 139, 140, 141-7, 152, 188, 205-14, 209, 211, 227-8, 236, 258, 318. — 73. 2-10, 12-22, 41, 57, 74-81, 95-112, 111, 124-35, 133. — 74. 22-35, 26, 55-66, 56, 64, 72-8, 79, 80, 82, 83, 96, 100, 105, 107, 129, 140, 142, 150, 165, 173, 178, 198-227, 199, 225, 228-31, 240. — 75. 19, 85, 88, 97, 120, 134-5, 143, 156, 179-82. — 76. 3, 8, 12, 18-9, 29, 31, 40, 55, 70-2, 87, 90, 98, 100, 112, 124, 130, 186, 192, 208-19, 212. — 77. 20-4, 52, 58, 81-5, 97. — 78. 2-4, 13, 52-1, 60, 62, 102. — 79. 27. — 80. 15, 33, 39. — 81. 2, 6, 19, 22, 26. — 82. 21, 33, 47. — 83. 4, 5-7, 8-9, 15-21, 33-4, 40. — 84. 14, 15, 38, 40. — 85. 1, 3-10, 4, 38, 42-51, 45, 82. — 86. 17, 22. — 87. 4, 19, 37, 39, 46, 50. — 88. 11, 86, 100. — 89. 4, 16-38, 20, 47-56, 68. — 90. 43, 46, 63, 68, 92, 101, 109. — 91. 9, 25, 27. — 92. 23-6. — 94. 23. — 95. 4, 14. — 96. 5, 19-20. — 97. 29. — 98. 14, 24, 26, 47-8, 61, 69, 73. — 99. 6-11, 11, 16, 43, 45, 46, 53, 55, 56, 60, 63, 101, 113, 163, 171, 175, 181. — 100. 1, 35, 48, 52, 71-4, 75, 102-7, 129, 137, 157, 162, 167, 215, 248, 268, 281, 295. — 101. 14.

#### IV. The Chronicle

**1) Composition** (Cf. C. ed. I, p. I ff.): 37. 51; 38. 59. — 79. 81. — 90. 102; 99. 76 II. — the author of the last portion contemporary with Kittisirirājasiha 99. 53, 133, 163; 100. 228. — — **2) Sources**: Different sources: 7. 43-5 and 9. 9-11; 73. 12 ff. and 78. 6 ff. — a new source? (the Rohana chronicle) 22. 1; 45. 37; 57. 3; — (47. 1; 81. 10). — phū-nāpotthakāni 32. 25; traces of p: dry numbers or lists of names 20. 17-28; 24. 12, 47; 26. 25; 27. 47; 32. 26 ff.; 38. 45 ff.; 60. 48 ff.; 79. 62 ff.; 82. 12 ff.; 92. 10-29; 100. 14, 200; absence of a record 37. 46. — annuals kept at court 59. 7 ff. — — **3) Chronological dates**: 4. 1, 8; 5. 21 f., 280; 20. 1 ff., 32, 49; 41. 27; 42. 41; 44. 111, 153; 47. 15; 52. 78; 53. 14; 55. 22; 58. 41; 60. 5; 80. 32; 90. 108; 91. 15;

**92.** 6; **94.** 5, 18; **99.** 2; **100.** 59, 91, 282. — — **4) Style and language** (cf. C. ed. I, p. XIV ff.). Alampkāra: 18, 14, 68; **52.** 42; **58.** 15; **60.** 41; **70.** 292; **72.** 51, 102, 144, 209, 255 f., 314, 323, 326; **76.** 160 f., 233, 311 f.; **80.** 56 ff., 60; **82.** 5, 16, 41, 41 ff.; **83.** 13, 25, 38, 40, 42; **85.** 12 ff., 35, 44 ff.; **88.** 91, 121; **89.** 2 ff.; **90.** 34, 47, 49; **96.** 20; **99.** 4, 122; **100.** 30, 34 &c. — Puns: 1, 13, 25; **5.** 256; **9.** 29; **14.** 43; **15.** 27; **17.** 8 f.; **26.** 6; **31.** 56; **33.** 65; **37.** 115; **50.** 65, 83; **51.** 108; **67.** 92; **72.** 295, 315; **85.** 87 f.; **90.** 2 &c. Metrical licenses: **37.** 135 ab, 138 ab; **62.** 49 cd; **65.** 11 cd; **66.** 14 ab; **67.** 44 cd. See also C. ed. I, p. XI ff. — Irregular grammatical forms. See also C. ed. I, p. XIV ff.: **44.** 11, 31, 44; **47.** 55; **50.** 10; **62.** 60; **70.** 262; **75.** 26; **90.** 109. — Loc. inst. of gen. **38.** 115. — Causative inst. of the simple root and the contrary: **48.** 102; **70.** 287; **75.** 156 &c.; **47.** 18; **48.** 61; **75.** 171 &c. — Simple verb inst. of passive and the contrary: **44.** 26; **50.** 18; **51.** 51; **76.** 330 &c.; **70.** 208. — Gerund inst. of Loc. abs.: **39.** 26; **48.** 79 N.; **77.** 21 N.; **88.** 67 ff. — Irregular compounds: **39.** 59; **91.** 6, 20; **99.** 16. — Irregular construction of sentences: **41.** 103; **49.** 58; **72.** 128, 219; **92.** 17, 23–26; **96.** 19–20; **99.** 6 ff., 42 ff.; **100.** 51 f. — Influence of the metre **74.** 199; **75.** 72. — Influence of Sinhalese **70.** 85; **90.** 101; **91.** 36; **95.** 8; **96.** 17; **98.** 1. — **5) Literary references.** Indian epic literature **64.** 42 ff.; **66.** 1–13; cf. II, s. vv. Duyyodhana, Dussanta, Rūma, āyurveda **73.** 42; niti literature **48.** 80, 96; **55.** 7; **64.** 3; **66.** 130 ff. (142); **70.** 56; **73.** 59; yuddhanpava **70.** 56; the rasa theory **66.** 56; **72.** 94, 265; **73.** 117; **75.** 89. — Canonical Pali literature: Quotation of a Buddha-word **73.** 143; **99.** 180 f. — Dhāminasamgīti, -samgaha **3.** 17; **5.** 276. — Tipiṭaka and Atṭhakathā: **5.** 81, 275; **27.** 44; **33.** 100; **37.** 223; **41.** 58; **60.** 6; **84.** 9, 29; **90.** 37, 83; **91.** 27. — 84000 sections: **5.** 78 (cf. **5.** 173 ff.); **33.** 12. — Navāṅgika sūsana **89.** 70. — Vinaya, dhamma, suttanta: **3.** 30, 34; **5.** 150 f.; **20.** 56; **54.** 34; **99.** 90, 170, 173 f. — Nikāyā (the four) **33.** 72; **99.** 31, 33; **100.** 117. — Saccasamyutta **14.** 58. — Abhidhamma: **5.** 150; **37.** 221; **44.** 109; **51.** 79; **52.** 49 f. — Paritta texts: **37.** 226; **51.** 80;

**99.** 26. — Single suttantas: 5, 68; **12.** 26, 29, 31, 34, 39, 41, 51; **14.** 22, 39, 63; **15.** 4, 176, 178, 186, 195, 197, 199; **16.** 3; **37.** 191, 195; **51.** 79; **99.** 20, 29, 154; **100.** 275. — Single jātakas: 5, 261; **12.** 37; **35.** 30; **64.** 41; **83.** 33 f.; **97.** 39–45; **99.** 97; **100.** 74, 251. — Peta-, Vimānavatthu: **14.** 58. — Dhammasaṅgāpi: **37.** 225; **52.** 50; **60.** 17. — Cittayamaka 5, 146. Kathavatthu 5, 278. — Younger Pāli literature: **37.** 93, 225, 236; **39.** 49, 56; **91.** 27; **97.** 57, 59; **100.** 118. — Sinhalese literature **37.** 228, 233; **90.** 78, 83; **98.** 24. — **6)** External confirmation or correction of the chronicle (cf. M. tr., p. XV ff.). a) Sinhalese books. Sirimeghavappa to Mabūnūga: **37.** 92, 105, 178, 208, 247; **38.** 1, 8, 10, 45, 50, 112; **39.** 58; **41.** 1–5, 6, 26, 27, 37, 53, 63, 91, 102. — Aggabodhi I. to Daṭhopatissa II: **42.** 13, 15, 39, 40, 67, 68; **44.** 1, 22, 63, 65, 82, 117, 144, 153; **45.** 16, 35; **80.** — Aggabodhi IV. to Aggabodhi IX: **46.** 39, 44, 46; **47.** 1, 66; **48.** 19, 25, 38, 67, 74; **49.** 37, 39, 42, 64, 82, 92. — Sena I. to Loka: **50.** 1, 85; **51.** 1, 26, 89, 131; **52.** 36, 81; **53.** 1, 4, 12, 27, 38, 51; **54.** 1, 56, 72; **55.** 33; **56.** 6, 9, 12, 14, 16; **57.** 1. — Vijayabāhu I. to Parakkamabāhu I: **60.** 91; **62.** 1; **63.** 18, 19; **79.** 86. — Vijayabāhu II. to Māgha: **80.** 14, 15, 26, 29, 30, 32, 33, 34, 42, 44, 45, 48, 51, 53, 79. — Vijayabāhu III. to Vijayabāhu IV.: **81.** 19, 44, 51, 56, 58, 79; **82.** 7; **83.** 30–1, 37, 42; **84.** 9, 24; **85.** 1–4, 95, 99, 118; **86.** 49–50; **87.** 9; **88.** 35; **89.** 71; **90.** 1. — Bhuvanekabāhu I. to Rājasiha II: **90.** 4, 59, 63, 64, 105–6, 108; **91.** 3, 32; **92.** 1; **93.** 16; **94.** 2–3, 22; **95.** 25; **96.** 40. — b) Ceylon inscriptions: **37.** 53; **39.** 11. — **42.** 3 ff.; **44.** 98. — **46.** 20, 29; **48.** 21. — **50.** 9, 45, 68, 70; **51.** 12, 26, 74, 88, 90, 105, 134; **52.** 1, 14, 13, 17, 33, 45, 58; **53.** 4, 13; **54.** 1, 7, 35, 48. — **58.** 1, 56, 59; **59.** 49; **60.** 5, 16, 21, 36, 66, 91; **63.** 19; **72.** 300; **73.** 20, 87; **76.** 68; **78.** 5, 6 ff. — **80.** 1, 18, 19, 20, 23, 24, 25, 27, 28, 32, 33, 34, 50. — **87.** 16; **90.** 108; **91.** 1, 3, 16, 24; **92.** 1. — c) South Indian inscriptions: Kassapa V: **52.** 98. Dappula IV: **53.** 9. Udaya IV: **53.** 44. Mahinda V: **55.** 22. Parakkamabāhu I.: **76.** 80; **77.** 103. Parakkamabāhu II.:

83. 52. Bhuvanekabāhu I.: 90. 47. Bhuvanekabāhu V. 91. 13. —  
d) Chinese Annals: Sirimeghavāya &c.: 37. 53, 175. Kas-  
sapa I.; 39. 27. Aggabodhi VI: 48. 42. (Vijayabāhu VI):  
91. 14.

## V. The World

**A. Cosmology.** 1. Three worlds, hell and heaven: 4. 38;  
34. 14; 37. 178; 44. 117; 60. 91; 72. 306; 90. 40; 92. 30;  
94. 21. — The moon and the tides 84. 44. — Regions of the  
heavens: 28. 13, 16, 18, 20, 36, 39; 31. 86; 63. 51; 72. 300,  
329; 74. 150; 95. 15; 96. 25. — 2. The earth: The dipas  
73. 8. — Meru (Sineru) 31. 53; 37. 79; 42. 2; 54. 43; 78. 24.  
— Cakkavāla mountains 88. 116. — Udayācalā 72. 326. —  
Uttara Kuru 1. 18; 30. 58; 51. 50. — 3. Destruction of the  
world 70. 253; 72. 93, 313; 75. 26; 83. 47. — — **B) Geo-**  
**graphy and Ethnography.** 1. India. a) Geographical  
Names:

Anotutta-lake 1. 18. Aparantaka 12. 34.

Ayojhā 56. 13. Avanti 4. 17.

Ujjeni 5. 39; 13. 8, 10 (Dakkhipagiri-v. 13. 5; 29. 35).

Uttaramadhuṇā 88. 121; 92. 25. Uravelā 1. 12, 16 E., 43.

Kaṇēipura 88. 121. Kaṇḍuveṭhi 47. 7.

Kapilavatthu 2. 15; 89. 4. Kasmīra 12. 9; 29. 37.

Kūśipura see Bārīṇyāśi.

Kusāvatī 2. 6. Kusinārā 3. 2.

Kusumapura see Pāṭaliputta.

Kelāsa 32. 53; 68. 1; 73. 62 &c.; 89. 45 (Kelāsa-v. 29. 43).

Kosambi 4. 17 (Ghositārāma 29. 34).

Gaṅgā 5. 253; 8. 23; 11. 30 &c.

Gandhāra 12. 9. Giribbaja 5. 114. Goya 94. 1-2.

Campāpuri 88. 121. Jetuttara 89. 2.

Tambaraṭṭha 84. 11. Tūmalittī 11. 23 N., 38; 19. 6.

Tiriṇaveli 76. 143, 288. Netṭuru 76. 189.

Payāga 31. 6. Palaṅkoṭṭa 77. 58. Pallavabhoga 29. 38.

Pāṭaliputta (Kusumapura, Pupphapura) 4. 31; 5. 39, 120;

11. 24; 17. 10; 18. 8, 68; 92. 23 (Asokārāma 5. 80,  
163, 174; 29. 36).

- Pāvā **4**, 17.  
 Pupphapura see Pāṭaliputta.  
 Bārāvasī (Kāśipura) **1**, 14; **41**, 37; **88**, 121 (Isipatana-v. **29**, 31).  
 Bodhimāṇḍa **29**, 41; **37**, 215; **39**, 47.  
 Madda **8**, 7.  
 Madhurā (dakkhiṇā M.) **7**, 49, 51; **50**, 12 N.; **76**, 76; **96**, 40;  
**97**, 2, 24; **98**, 4 (cf. also Uttararamadhurā).  
 Malaya **76**, 195. Mahāraṭṭha **12**, 37.  
 Mahisamāyūḍala **12**, 29.  
 Mithilā **2**, 6; **83**, 34; **88**, 121.  
 Rājagaha **2**, 6; **29**, 30; **89**, 3 (Vēluvana-v. **15**, 17).  
 Rāmīssara **76**, 97. Lūlaraṭṭha **6**, 5, 36; **7**, 3.  
 Vaṅga **6**, 1. Vanavīsa **12**, 31; **29**, 42.  
 Vitijhāṭavī **19**, 6; **29**, 40.  
 Visālī, Vesālī **4**, 9, 22; **88**, 121; **99**, 98 (Mahīvana-v. **4**, 12;  
**29**, 33).  
 Saṃkassa **89**, 4. Sūketa **89**, 3. Sāgala **89**, 2.  
 Sāvatthī **88**, 121 (Jetavana-v. **1**, 44; **29**, 32).  
 Sivaliputtūrī **77**, 41.  
 Sīhupura **6**, 35; **59**, 46.  
 Suṇisumūragiri **89**, 3. Soreyya **4**, 21. Himavant **12**, 41.

ii) Names of tribes or castes.

- Ariyā **61**, 36; **63**, 15. Āriyā **90**, 16 ff.  
 Kauṇḍīnā **55**, 12. Kallarā **76**, 246.  
 Kūlīngā **6**, 1; **37**, 92; **42**, 44 &c.  
 Kāsi **5**, 114. Keruṭā **53**, 9. Koliyā **31**, 18.  
 Colā **21**, 13; **36**, 112; **52**, 70 &c.  
 Damīṭā **1**, 41; **21**, 10 &c.; **38**, 11 f. &c.  
 Raṇḍī **7**, 50, 69; **50**, 12; **76**, 76 &c.  
 Maravarā **76**, 130, 246, 259. Yādhavā **76**, 163.  
 Yonā, Yavanā **10**, 90; **12**, 34, 39; **76**, 264.  
 Licchavī **99**, 98. Vaṅgā **6**, 1. Vajjī **4**, 9 ff.  
 Vallabhā **47**, 15, 18, 24; **54**, 12 ff.  
 Sakyā **2**, 15 ff.; **8**, 18.

## 2. Farther India

### a) Geographical names, names of tribes

Ayojjhā 98, 91; 100, 60. Arimaddana 76, 38.  
 Kamboja 76, 21. Kākadīpa 76, 57.  
 Kusumitthā 76, 59.  
 Jāvakā 83, 36 ff.; 88, 63; 99, 118.  
 Pegu 98, 89. Malayn 76, 22.  
 Rakkhāṅga 94, 15; 97, 10; 98, 89; 99, 25.  
 Rāmañña 58, 8; 60, 5; 76, 10-69.  
 Sāmīndavisaya 99, 78; 100, 63 &c.

## 3. Ceylon

### a) Physical character, climate &c.

The ocean: 22, 49, 85; 41, 79; 57, 5; 71, 18; 72, 255; 85, 44 f.; 88, 20. — Wilderness, swamps, forests, rocks: 33, 48; 39, 2; 61, 46; 66, 51; 68, 10; 70, 2 ff., 84; 81, 3, 5, 33; 86, 9; 87, 26; 95, 9. — Irregular rain: 21, 27; 70, 208. — Drought and famine: 32, 29; 36, 20, 74; 37, 189; 87, 1 ff.; 90, 43. — Wind, thunderstorms: 57, 56; 72, 3; 74, 228 ff.; 87, 7 ff. — Earthquake (as a miracle): 5, 259 ff.; 15, 26, 194; 17, 55; 18, 50; 19, 47; 29, 62; 31, 110.

### b) Products of the island (or imported)

#### 1. Minerals:

Jewels (mani, three kinds 11, 22) 28, 18, 40; 61, 6, 56; 62, 32; 64, 32; 68, 12; 72, 326; 97, 53; 98, 33, 95; 99, 165; 100, 16 ff.; and precious stones (ratana, seven or nine kinds 27, 37; 91, 18; 97, 7) 11, 8 f., 16; 22, 60; 31, 60; 34, 73; 66, 44; 69, 33; 89, 41; 90, 71; 97, 17. — Beryl (veṇuriya) 11, 16; diamond (vajira) 100, 15; ruby (kuruvinda, rattamayi, lohitāṅka) 28, 19; 100, 18; 11, 16; sapphire (indanīla, uppala, nilamayi) 11, 16; 28, 19; 100, 17; topaz (puppharāṅga) 100, 17. — Pearls (eight kinds 11, 14) 11, 16, 22; 28, 36; 34, 47 f.; 61, 6, 56; 62, 32; 64, 32; 70, 92; 89, 19; 97, 47; 98, 33, 95;

100. 19. — Gold 11. 31; 22. 64; 27. 33; 28. 14; 29. 57; 33. 11; 61. 57; 66. 139; 68. 12; 89. 19 ff.; 91. 18; 97. 17, 53; 98. 44, 75, 94; 99. 54, 165; 100. 30, 72, 75, 241. — Silver 27. 27, 33; 28. 20, 33; 29. 57; 89. 20 ff.; 90. 71; 97. 18; 98. 44, 75; 99. 55, 165. — Copper (loha, tambaloha) 23. 87; 27. 42; 28. 16; 31. 85; 36. 31. — Iron (ayo) 23. 87; 98. 69. — Rock-crystal (phaṭika) 27. 36; 29. 9. — Medavappapūsāpa 1. 39; 30. 57, 59; 31. 121. — Yellow orpiment (haritāla) 34. 52. — Cinnabar (kuruvinda?) 29. 8. — kaṇkuṭṭha, kind of earth 32. 6. — Red arsenic (manosilā) 15. 80, 114, 149; 29. 12; 34. 52. — Vermilion (hiṅguli) 27. 18. — Corals (pavāla) 27. 26, 31; 28. 37 f. &c. — Shells (saṅkhā) 71. 25; s. dakkhināvaṭṭa 11. 22, 30; 100. 154.

## 2. Trees and shrubs; fruits, flowers

Akkha (terminalia belerica) 32. 29. amba (mangifera indica) 14. 17 ff.; 15. 38; 22. 4 f.; 79. 3, 85; 100. 4, 218. asana (terminalia alata tomentosa) 23. 87. asoka (jonesia asoka) 73. 98. ādūri-creeper 17. 31. āmalaka (emblica officinalis) 5. 26; 11. 31; 28. 36; 54. 23. udumbara (ficus glomerata) 15. 112; 23. 87. kāṇ(p)ikūra (pterospermum acerifolium) 73. 123; 100. 1. kadali (musa sapientum) M. ed. p. 331, v. 5; 70. 211; 72. 318; 73. 123; 75. 61; 85. 36, 114; 98. 41; 100. 30. kadamba (nanclæa cadamba) 73. 98. kadambapupphā 17. 31; 19. 73, 75; 25. 48; 33. 85; 35. 104, 116. kapiththa (feronia elephantum) 29. 11. kamnka (areca palm) 98. 41. kuṭaja (wrightia antidysenterica) 73. 99. ketaka (pandanus odoratissimus) 33. 50; 73. 98; 100. 1. khajjūra (phoenix silvestris) 100. 6. khara-patta (tectona grandis) 32. 5. campaka (michelia champaca) 73. 98; 98. 59; 100. 1, 197. jambū (eugenia jambu) 36. 71 ff.; 73. 98; 100. 4. tamāla (xanthochymus pictorius) 73. 99. tāla (palmyra palm) 10. 59; 23. 46, 59; 73. 123; 79. 3. timbarū-saka (the tinduka tree) 100. 5. tilaka(?) 73. 98. dājima (pomegranate) 100. 5. nūga (iron-wood tree) 73. 98, 123; 85. 34; 89. 43; 100. 1, 293. nāraṅga (orange) 100. 5. nāli-kerā (cocopalm) 23. 59; 61. 65; 73. 99; 74. 204; 79. 3; 86.

5, 17, 45; 97. 34; 98. 41; 100. 5, 218 (the shell 57. 8). nigródha (*ficus indica*) 10. 35 f., 89; 15. 147. nípa (*nauclea cadamba*) 73. 98. panasa (*artocarpus integrifolia*) 28. 23; 79. 3; 85. 36; 86. 50; 100. 4, 218. picula (*tamarix indica*) 15. 28. punnāga (*rottleria tinctoria*) 73. 98, 123; 89. 43; 100. 1, 293. pūga (*areca palm*) 36. 47; 79. 3; 100. 3, 293. phārusa (?) 100. 4. bodhirukkha (*ficus religiosa*) see VIII, C, 3. · madhu, -ūka (*bassia latifolia*) 34. 56; 44. 18; 83. 18. muṇḍaka (?) 100. 5. muddikā (grape) 100. 6. ramblū (*musa sapientum*) 100. 4. rājāyatana (*buchanania latifolia*) 1. 52, 54, 67 f. labuja (*artocarpus incisa*) 90. 87; 94. 11 f. vakula (*mimusops elengi*) 73. 99. vaṭa (*ficus indica*) 6. 16. sattapāṇṇa (*alstonia scholaris*) 30. 47. sannīra (king coconut tree) 74. 204; 100. 5, 26. sāla (*shorea robusta*) 3. 2; 5. 161; 73. 98. sirīsa (*acacia sissoo*) 15. 78. harītaka (*terminalia chebula*) 5. 26; 11. 31. hintāla (kind of palm tree) 73. 123. Bamboo (veṇu) 11. 10; 70. 213. sugar-cane, sugar, molasses 34. 62; 35. 92; 61. 53; 89. 53; 100. 196. sandal-wood 11. 28; 58. 9; 61. 57; 100. 2, 196. nloe (agar) 61. 57; 100. 2. betel (tambūla) 35. 62; 54. 22, 46; 100. 3, 196. garlic (lasuna) 54. 22 f. pepper (marica, pipphali) 25. 114; 54. 23. ginger (siigivera) 28. 21; 54. 23. saffron (piyañgu) 24. 25. camphor (kappūra) 58. 9; 61. 57; 69. 24; 89. 43; 100. 3, 196. liquorice (yatthimadhuka) 32. 46. — Bean (*māsa*) 23. 51. sesam (tila) 29. 12; 34. 56. — Cotton 57. 56; 72. 3; 86. 16. — Lāja 98. 46; 100. 31. pūṭali (*bignonia suaveolens*) 73. 98. ganthipuppha 30. 59. jasmin 15. 27; 29. 61; 30. 27; 73. 99; 98. 8; 100. 1. lotus 19. 18; 22. 45, 53; 34. 47, 53 f.; 73. 102; 88. 113; 100. 1, 30 (the stalk: mn̄jali 7. 12).

### 3. Animals

Elephant, wild or domesticated 7. 56; 18. 28; 23. 8, 47, 49; 29. 4; 37. 112; 41. 23, 47 ff.; 47. 9; 51. 37, 43, 112 f.; 61. 6; 70. 219, 229, 265; 72. 3, 88, 155, 314, 325; 76. 48, 70; 89. 22; 96. 20; 99. 46 and passim. young el.s. 62. 22, 25. rutting el.s. 66. 150; 72. 321; 74. 63; 83. 13. solitary el.s. 72. 248; 76. 244. catching wild el.s. 72. 105. el.-trainer and driver

22. 63; 88. 34. batthisālā 14. 62; 15. 1. ālbaka 19. 73; 35. 24. sivigeha "canopy on an el.'s back" 99. 55, 59. el.-trade 76. 17-34. white el.s 62. 21. six-tusked race 22. 61. manigalahattī see below V, B, 3. (danta "ivory" 27. 32, 35; 37. 100 ff.) — Horse 7. 56; 70. 127, 265; 72. 315; 74. 221; 76. 112; 85. 113; 88. 34, 74; 92. 29; 99. 46 &c. h. s among the Damīlas 76. 100. horse dealing (sindhu-h.) 21. 10; 23. 71; 31. 38. — Buffalo, wild or domesticated 23. 79; 67. 2; 86. 24; 90. 76; 92. 29 (māhisā camma 25. 36). lion, not indigenous 6. 5; 27. 30; 60. 40; 66. 90, 104; 67. 6, 48; 70. 24, 141, 219; 72. 3, 68, 88, 108, 152, 155, 221; 83. 13; 96. 5 (migarājā 96. 20). tiger, not indigenous 27. 30. panther 75. 39. bear 5. 31; 67. 41. boar 10. 4; 23. 66; 54. 32; 67. 44; 83. 18. elk (gokappa) 14. 3; 23. 66; 70. 36. deer or antelope (miga, harīna) 5. 151 f.; 23. 66; 54. 32; 66. 90; 67. 48; 72. 68; 75. 39. monkey 54. 32; 68. 20; 87. 20. bare 23. 65. mouse 5. 30. cow 90. 76; 92. 29. bullock (usabha) 60. 71. dog 28. 9, 41; 36. 44; 54. 32; 60. 74 (bitch: soñi 7. 9). yak-cow, not indigenous (camari) 98. 14; 100. 31. — Vulture 75. 114. crane 98. 43. peacock 57. 7; 73. 101; 74. 229. crow 60. 74; 75. 114. parrot 5. 29. cuckoo 73. 101. goose 30. 65; 35. 97; 73. 134. kalanda 37. 204. karavika 5. 32. (birds in cages 70. 292; 72. 209). — Glow-worm 75. 29; 83. 25; 86. 22. bee 5. 31; 34. 52; 73. 97. moth (pañāga) 75. 41. — Crocodile 70. 4. iguana 28. 9 f. tortoise 75. 58. — Fish 75. 58; 88. 113. — Snakes (nāga) 5. 161; 37. 112 II. (sappa) 21. 19. (deñjubha) 37. 132. (ghoravisa) 93. 8.

### c) Geographical and ethnographical names

#### 1. Names of the Island

Sīhala, Latikā passim. — Prehistoric names 15. 59, 93, 127. — Tambapappī 7. 41; 80. 25; 85. 106; 89. 57. — Ti-sīhala 81. 46; 82. 1; 87. 25, 71; 88. 65.

2. Names of provinces (raṭṭha) and districts (maṇḍala)  
(18 provinces: 86, 11)

- |   |  |
|---|--|
| Atṭhasahassaka 61. 24; 75. 151                      | Patiṭṭhāraṭṭha 55. 22 N.; 81.<br>15 N.; 88. 87 |
| Ambavana 66. 85; 69. 9                              | Padī 83. 16; 88. 61                            |
| Ālisāra 60. 14; 70. 106                             | Pillaviṭṭhi 69. 8                              |
| Uttararaṭṭha 70. 92                                 | Puratthimadesa 41. 33                          |
| Uvaraṭṭha (see Ilūva) 95. 22                        | Buddhagāmaraṭṭha 69. 9                         |
| Erāhuja 74. 91                                      | Bodhigāmavararaṭṭha 69. 9                      |
| Kantakapeṭaka 69. 9                                 | Majjhimavagga 70. 20                           |
| Kalyāṇī 1. 63; 74; 22. 12 ff.;<br>61. 35            | Malaya 7. 68; 24. 7; 25. 5;<br>41. 10 &c.      |
| Kālagiribhāupja 72. 62                              | Mahākhetta 72. 63; 75. 50                      |
| Kirinda 74. 97                                      | Mahātila 66. 71                                |
| Knrundī 83. 16; 88. 61                              | Mahūthala 48. 3                                |
| Giribā 69. 9  | Mahāraṭṭha 72. 141, 163, 190                   |
| Girimāṇḍala 51. 111                                 | Māyāraṭṭha 81. 15; 87. 24                      |
| Guttasālā 61. 12; 74. 151                           | Merukandara 41. 19; 70. 282                    |
| Janapada 44. 56; 66. 110                            | Moravāpi 69. 8                                 |
| Tabbā 69. 9   | Ratauñkararaṭṭha 42. 18; 69. 31                |
| Dakkhiṇadesa 38. 21; 41. 35;<br>42. 8 &c.           | Rattakararaṭṭha 68. 23                         |
| Dīghavāpi 74. 89, 180; 75. 1;<br>96. 25             | Rūjaraṭṭha 52. 4; 55. 22; 61. 30               |
| Dīghāli 72. 63; 75. 60                              | Rohapa 22. 6, 8; 35. 27 f.;<br>38. 12 &c.      |
| Dumbarn 70. 8                                       | Laiķāgiri 70. 88                               |
| Dvādasasahassaka 61. 22; 75.<br>156 N.              | Lokagalla 74. 79                               |
| Dhammagāmala 74. 166                                | Sapara(gamu) 78. 8; 94. 12                     |
| Navayojanaraṭṭha 72. 61; 75. 72                     | Sūrambavana 70. 87                             |
| Nāgadīpa 1. 47; 20. 25; 42. 62                      | Ilūvaraṭṭha (see Uva) 60. 66                   |
| Nilagallaka 70. 14                                  | 3. Towns and villages                          |
| Pāñcayojanaraṭṭha 57. 71; 72.<br>57; 75. 21; 85. 81 | Āṅgamu 70. 130                                 |
| Pāñcasataraṭṭha 95. 9                               | Anurādhapura 10. 76, 106<br>and passim         |
| Pāñcuddhararaṭṭha 94. 4; 95.<br>23 f.; 96. 17       | Antaravīṭṭhi 60. 68; 61. 46                    |
|   | Ambaggāma 86. 23                               |

- Ambavana 66. 85  
 Āligāma 70. 112  
 Uddhanadvāra 61. 16  
 Upatissagāma 7. 41  
 Ullapanaggāma 86. 23  
 Kadaliñgāma 60. 66  
 Kadalinivāta 44. 6; 48. 50  
 Kammāragāma 75. 47  
 Kalahanagara 10. 42  
 Kalyāñi 72. 151  
 Kājaragāma 19. 54; 45. 45  
 Kālagallaka 90. 9  
 Kālagiribhāya 72. 62  
 Kālatittha 56. 12; 86. 41  
 Kunḍasālā 97. 31  
 Kumbugāma 75. 149  
 Koṭṭa see Jayavaññhanakoṭṭa  
 Koṭṭhasāra 61. 43; 74. 41  
 Konduruva 72. 231  
 Kolamba(tittha) 94. 1; 95. 1, 15  
 Kolambahālaka 25. 80; 33. 42  
 Khīragāma 74. 163; 79. 71  
 Gaṅgāśiripura 86. 18; 88. 48  
 Gimhatittha 75. 22  
 Gilimalaya 60. 65  
 Guttasālā 24. 17; 51. 109  
 Jayavaññhanakoṭṭa 91. 7  
 Jambukola (= Dambul) 70. 72;  
     72. 136  
 Jambukola (harbour) 11. 23;  
     18. 7  
 Jambuddoṇi 81. 29; 85. 4  
 Tambagāma 75. 90  
 Talātthala 70. 107  
 Titthagāma 90. 88  
 Tilagulla 58. 43  
 Demaṭavala 74. 139  
 Devanagara 56. 6; 60. 59;  
     75. 47  
 Dopivagga 75. 69  
 Dvāramauḍala 10. 1; 23. 23  
 Dhanapitṭhi 46. 41  
 Dhanuvillika 70. 15  
 Nandigāma 25. 14; 38. 14  
 Nālandā 70. 167  
 Nilavālatittha 75. 48  
 Parakkamapura 72. 151; 74. 15  
 Puñkhagāma 61. 26  
 Pulatthimagara 44. 122; 46. 34  
     and passim (three suburbs  
     of P. 73. 151 ff.; 78. 79 ff.).  
 Perādoṇi 91. 2  
 Bakagalla 75. 124  
 Badalatthala, -li 58. 43; 66. 43 N.  
 Buddhagāma 58. 43; 66. 19.  
 Bubbula 70. 99  
 Bodhigāmavara 66. 78  
 Bhīmatittha 85. 81; 86. 40  
 Maṅgalabegāma 67. 52  
 Majjhimagāma 74. 83  
 Maṇḍugalla 58. 43  
 Maṇḍagāma 45. 47  
 Mannāra 61. 39  
 Mallavāñāna 70. 61  
 Mahāgalla 44. 3  
 Mahāgāma 22. 8; 45. 42  
 Mahātittha 7. 58; 48. 81; 51. 28  
 Mahānāgahula 58. 39; 60. 90  
 Mahāvālukagāma 75. 36, 45  
 Mālāvaratthali 75. 68, 157  
 Muttakara 70. 63  
 Rakkhapāsāṇa 57. 67  
 Ratanagāma 42. 18  
 Rāmucchuvallika 70. 11, 14 N.

- Labujagāma 94. 12  
 Lābugāma 10. 72  
 Vattalagāma 81. 58  
 Vālikākhetta 70. 62  
 Viikkamapura 72. 147  
 Vijitapura 7. 45; 25. 19 ff.  
 Saṃkha(nātha)tthali 63. 43;  
     64. 22  
 Saraggāma 66. 71  
 Sarogāma 71. 18  
 Sahodara 74. 78, 79 N.  
 Sākhāpatta 74. 166  
 Sāligiri 90. 97  
 Sāpatagamu 74. 131, 166 N.  
 Siriyūla 66. 20  
 Sirivadḍihana(near Jambuddoṇi)  
     85. 1  
 Sirivadḍihana == Kandy 92. 7;  
     94. 6, 16  
 Sitāvaka 93. 2 N., 5  
 Simātālatthali 75. 101  
 Sihagiri 39. 2 II.  
 Suvaṇṇamalaya 75. 62  
 Sūkarālibheripāśāpa 75. 98  
 Señkhanḍelaselasirivadḍihana 92. 7  
 Hatthigiripura, -selapura 85.  
     62; 99. 77  
 Hintālavanagāma 74. 162; 75. 7  
 Huyalagāma 75. 149
4. Mountains  
 (p. = pabbata, g. = giri)
- Ariṭṭha-p. 10. 61; 44. 86  
 Kāsa-p. 10. 27; 25. 50  
 Gopāla-rock 78. 65  
 Govindamala(-sela) 81. 5
- Cetiya-p. 16. 4; 17. 23; 38. 75 &c.  
 Dola-p. 10. 11 (cf. M. tr., p. 289)  
 Dohaṭa-p. 44. 56; 100. 294  
 Dhūmarakkha-p. 10. 46; 37.  
     213 (cf. C. tr. I, p. 359, 3)  
 Pañjali-p. 32. 14  
 Paluṭṭha-p. 58. 18  
 Pācīnatissa-p. 41. 14; 44. 14  
 Billasela 81. 33  
 Mārapabbata 48. 129  
 Missaka-p. 13. 14, 20; 17. 23  
 Laṅkā-p. 66. 80  
 Vāta-g. 58. 31; 88. 43  
 Samantakūṭa, Sumanak. 1. 33,  
     77; 7. 67; 60. 61; 92. 17;  
     97. 16 ff.  
 Siridevinīga 66. 19  
 Silakūṭa (Missaka) 13. 20  
 Subhakūṭa (Missaka) 15. 131  
 Subha-p., Sundara-p. 81. 3;  
     88. 26, 61 ff.  
 Sumanakūṭa see Samantakūṭa  
 Sonṇa-g. 34. 4.
5. Rivers, Tords  
 (g. == gaṅgā, n. == nadī)
- Kacchakatittha 10. 58; 23. 17;  
     37. 213 N.  
 Kapha-n. 53. 20  
 Kadamba-n. 7. 43; 15. 10; 41. 61  
 Karinda-n. 32. 14  
 Kāla-n. 86. 10, 44  
 Kālavāpi-n. 70. 126 f.  
 Kumbhilavāna-n. 68. 32  
 Gaṅgā see Mahāvāluka-g.  
 Gambhīra-n. 7. 44; 28. 7

Gālu-n. **75**. 34  
 Gālha-g. **48**. 132  
 Gokappa see Mahāvālukag.  
 Goṇa-n. **35**. 13, 113  
 Jajjara-n. **68**. 16; **79**. 67  
 Mahā-n. **51**. 121  
 Mahārukkuhatittha **72**. 11  
 Mahāvāluka-g. (Gaṅgā) **10**. 44,  
     47; **21**. 7; **38**. 12; **71**. 17 &c.  
     (Gokappa **41**. 79; **71**. 18)  
 Mūlāgāmatittha **72**. 50  
 Yakkhasūkaratittha **72**. 21  
 Vana-n. **75**. 156  
 Sañkhavaḍḍhamānaka-n. **68**. 32  
 Sahassatittha **87**. 71  
 Indian river-names conferred  
     on Ceylonese canals **79**. 57 N.  
  
 6. Tanks (v. = vāpi)  
 Abhaya-v. **10**. 84  
 Ambāla-v. **68**. 49 N.  
 Karaviṭṭhavilatta-v. **68**. 49 N.  
 Kāla-v. **38**. 42 &c.  
 Kirā-v. **68**. 49 N.  
 Gaṅgātaṭaka **70**. 286  
 Giritaṭaka **70**. 312; **72**. 149  
 Giribā-v. **68**. 49 N.  
 Giriya-v. **68**. 49 N.  
 Tintipīgāmaka-v. **68**. 49 N.  
 Tilagullaka-v. **68**. 49 N.  
 Tissa-v. **20**. 20 &c.; **70**. 149  
 Dīgha-v. **1**. 78; **74**. 89 &c.  
 Dūratissa-v. **33**. 9; **49**. 8; **79**. 32  
 Nāgasondī **42**. 28 (14. 36; **16**. 6)  
 Paṇḍa-v. **60**. 48; **68**. 39  
 Padī-v. **79**. 34

Parakkama-samudda, -sagara  
     **68**. 40; **79**. 26, 28, 40  
 Buddhiagāmakanijjhara **68**.  
     49 N.  
 Maṇihīra-v. **37**. 47; **42**. 34  
 Maṇḍika-v. **68**. 49 N.  
 Mahākirāla-v. **68**. 49 N.  
 Mahāgalla-v. **44**. 3  
 Mahindataṭa-v. **42**. 29; **79**. 28  
 Mora-v. **69**. 8; **72**. 177  
 Rattamūlakauḍa-v. **37**. 48  
 Vāsa-v. **68**. 49 N.  
 Suvaṇṇatissa-v. **79**. 32  
 Sūkaraggāma-v. **68**. 49 N.

#### Monasteries and Monastic buildings

(vih. = vihāra, pariv. = pari-  
veṇa, c. = cetiya; A. = Anu-  
radhapura, P. = Pulathima-  
gara, M. = Mahāgāma)

Abhayagiri-vih. in A. (different  
names) **33**. 81 ff.; **35**. 120;  
**37**. 59; **52**. 13; **78**. 21. —  
**37**. 97, 123; **44**. 96; **53**. 33.  
     — **41**. 96; **50**. 79. — **42**.  
     28, 63; **50**. 26. — **48**. 135  
 Ambatthala-c. **13**. 20; **37**. 69  
 Ākāsa-c. **22**. 26  
 Ālāhana-pariv. **78**. 48  
 Aloka-leṇa **98**. 65  
 Issarasamāya-vih. **19**. 61; **20**. 14;  
     **39**. 10  
 Uttarārāma in P. **78**. 73  
 Udumbaragiri-vih. **78**. 5 N.  
 Kantaka-c. **16**. 12

- Kappūra-pariv. in A. **45**. 29; **46**. 21
- Kalyāṇī-c. and -vih. **14**. 75; **81**. 59
- Kassapagiri-vih. **44**. 98
- Kūlavāpi-vih. **38**. 50 N.
- Kūṭatissa-vih. **51**. 74
- Gāyḍalūḍoyi-vih. **91**. 30
- Ganthakara-pariv. **37**. 243; **52**. 57
- Catuvihārū in A. **53**. 37; **54**. 5
- Candagiri-vih. in M. **60**. 61
- Cittalapabbata-vih. **22**. 23; **24**. 9; **45**. 59
- Cūlagalla-vih. **35**. 13; **42**. 49
- Cetiyapabbata-vih. **19**. 62; **20**. 17
- Cetiyas of Mahinda and Samghamittā in A. **20**. 44, 53; **38**. 58
- Jambukola-vih. **20**. 25; **60**. 60
- Jambukolalena **60**. 60; **80**. 23
- Jetavana-vih. in A. (**37**. 59 N.) **37**. 33, (65); **41**. 40; **78**. 21 &c. — in P. **78**. 32 ff.
- Jetivana-vih. **37**. 65, **52**. 59 = Jetavana in A.
- Tissa(mahā)-vih. in M. **20**. 25; **22**. 23; **45**. 59
- Tissārāma **52**. 24
- Thūpārāma in A. **1**. 82; **17**. 30 &c.; **37**. 207 &c. — in P. or M. **60**. 56
- Dakkhiṇa-vih. in A. **33**. 88; **42**. 14; **44**. 140
- Dakkhiṇāgiri-vih. **33**. 7; **38**. 50 N.; **42**. 27; **52**. 60
- Dappulapabbata-vih. **49**. 1 N., 30; **50**. 80
- Dāṭhanggabodhi-pariv. in M. **45**. 42
- Dūṭbhāḍhātinghara in A. **37**. 95. — in P. **73**. 128 ff.; **74**. 198; **78**. 41; **87**. 69; **89**. 40; **90**. 55. — in Jambuddoṭī **81**. 34; **82**. 9; **85**. 91; **88**. 12 II. — in Subhagiri **90**. 46 N. — in Hatthigiripura **90**. 66 f. — in Kotte **91**. 17. — in Kandy **94**. 11; **97**. 5, 37; **98**. 35; **99**. 141
- Dīghasamāna-pariv. **15**. 212; **38**. 16
- Devanagara-vih. **60**. 63 N.
- Nāga-vih. **22**. 9; **45**. 58
- Nipannapaṭimāgnihā, Nisimapatimālēna in P. **78**. 75
- Pacchimārāma in P. **78**. 70
- Paṭhamā-c. in A. **14**. 45; **19**. 61; **38**. 9
- Papūjavāpi-vih. **60**. 63 N.
- Pappaṭa-vih. **91**. 21
- Pupphārāma **100**. 86, 111.
- Baddhasimāpāsāda, uposatha-house in P. **78**. 55 ff.
- Billasela-vih. **85**. 59
- Bhāṇḍikā-pariv. **52**. 58
- Bhīmatittha-vih. **85**. 81; **86**. 16
- Maechatittha-vih. **48**. 24
- Maṇihāra-vih. **37**. 40
- Maṇḍalagiri-vih. **46**. 29; **60**. 63 N.; **71**. 3
- Madhutthala-vih. **60**. 63 N.

- |  |  |
|--|--|
| Mayīra-pariv. (Mora-) in A.<br>37. 172; 38. 52   | Rohaya-vih. 45. 54                                 |
| Maricavaṭṭi-vih. in A. 26. 8 ff.;<br>44. 149 &c.   | Laukātilaka in P. 78. 53 f. —<br>near Kandy 91. 30 |
| Mahāthūpa in A. (different<br>names) 15. 51; 28. 3 ff.; 42.<br>32; 76. 108 &c. — 20. 19;<br>33. 21. — 15. 167; 51. 82.<br>— 80. 68 | Lohapāsāda in A. 27. 20 ff.;<br>37. 59 &c.         |
| Mahāpariv. in A. 42. 26; 48. 65  | Vijjādbara-cave in P. 78. 66, 74                   |
| Mahāpāli in A. 20. 23; 37.<br>181. — in M. 45. 42  | Veluvana-vih. 42. 43; 44. 29                       |
| Mahā-vih. in A. 15. 8 ff., 214;<br>37. 4 ff., 54 &c.   | Vessagiri-vih. near A. 20. 15,<br>20; 39. 11 N.    |
| Maliyaṅgama-c. and -vih. 1. 24,<br>42; 25. 7; 36. 34, 58; 51.<br>74; 92. 16 &c.  | Silā-c. in A. 1. 82                                |
| Māṭambiya 46. 19   | Silasobhakauḍaka-c. in A. 33.<br>87                |
| Yaṭṭhālāya-vih. in M. 22. 7  | Sotthiyākara-vih. in A. 37. 82,<br>84              |
| Rajatalena-vih. 28. 20 N., 35.<br>4; 99. 41; 100. 237 ff.  | Hathhavanagalla-vih. 85. 73 ff.;<br>86. 12, 37     |
| Ratanapāsāda in A. 36. 7; 48.<br>135 &c.   | <br><br><b>Names of tribes &amp;c.</b>             |
| Ratanāvalī-c. in P. 80. 20<br>(78. 51 N.). — in Khīra-<br>gāma 79. 71  | Pulindā 7. 68                                      |
|  | Vannī 81. 11; 83. 10 &c.                           |
|  | Sihalā passim                                      |
|  | Clan names in C. 19. 2 N.;<br>38. 13 N.            |
|  | (Paraṅgi 95. 5; 98. 80)                            |
|  | (Olandā 96. 26; 98. 89; 99. 109)                   |

## VI. King and Kingdom

### A. The king and the royal family

Cf. C. tr. I, Introd. p. XV ff.

1. The king (*rājā*, *mahārāja*, *mahīpati*, *narapati* &c. &c. *passim*). — a. Sun- and Moon-dynasty **62**. 5; **63**. 11; **72**. 121; **87**. 29; **91**. 16; **93**. 2; **94**. 1; **96**. 41; Mahāsaṃpmata as ancestor **2**. 1, 23; **47**. 2; **99**. 77. Okkūka **2**. 11 f.; **45**. 38; **80**. 32. — b. Bodily marks of a king **22**. 59; **48**. 114; **57**. 49; **59**. 34 ff.; **62**. 46 ff.; **87**. 62. cakkavattin **100**. 35. — c. Abhiseka (*molimaṅgala*) **7**. 46 ff., **72**; **9**. 29; **10**. 78; **36**. 123; **56**. 3 f.; **59**. 2, 8; **67**. 16; **72**. 312 ff.; **87**. 70; **89**. 5 ff.; **90**. 61; **94**. 10. abh. performed twice **11**. 7 and **40** f.; **71**. 19 ff. and **72**. 311 ff. — d. The king assumes a new name **36**. 98; **44**. 128; **45**. 22; **58**. 1; **94**. 6. the biruda Sirisamghabodhi **44**. 83; **46**. 1; **54**. 72; **59**. 10.

2. The queen (*rājinī* **24**. 13 &c.). — a. mahesi **7**. 47; **8**. 28; **10**. 37, 78; **22**. 7, 12, 22; **33**. 36; **37**. 211; **46**. 27; **51**. 6, 86; **55**. 8, 16; **56**. 15; **62**. 19 ff.; **97**. 2; **98**. 1; **99**. 123. two mahesis **33**. 45-7; **59**. 25, 30; **64**. 24; (**97**. 24; **98**. 4). — devī **22**. 3; **33**. 47; **34**. 86; **35**. 21; **36**. 42, 50; **48**. 113; **55**. 10; **63**. 4, 6; **64**. 24. aggamahesi **54**. 10; **70**. 33; **94**. 9; **97**. 2, 24; **98**. 4. — b. Political marriages **7**. 52 ff.; **51**. 15 ff., 92 f.; **54**. 9 f.; **59**. 27 ff., 40 ff.; **63**. 6 ff.; **87**. 28; **97**. 24; **98**. 4.

3. The princes (*rājaputta* **5**. 194; **7**. 10 &c.) a. Education **64**. 3. — b. Ādipāda **41**. 31; **49**. 3; **50**. 8, 25, 46 f.; **51**. 94, 126; **52**. 4, 8, 42; **53**. 1, 4, 13, 19, 28, 39; **54**. 1, 11; **55**. 11; **57**. 4, 61; **59**. 12; **60**. 88; **61**. 2 ff. mahādipāda **44**. 136; **50**. 10, 44; **51**. 1; **58**. 7; **67**. 94. — c. Yuvarāja **42**. 6; **44**. 123, 137; **50**. 6, 21, 31; **51**. 13, 15, 18, 53 ff.; **52**. 1 f., 6, 37, 42; **53**. 1, 4, 13, 19, 28, 39; **54**. 1, 7, 58; **58**. 1; **59**. 7; **61**. 3; **63**. 42; **67**. 26; **85**. 59. — uparāja **5**. 154; **6**. 38; **9**. 12, 14; **14**. 56; **22**. 2 ff.; **41**. 93; **42**. 6; **44**. 84, 119, 124; **46**. 24; **50**. 58 f.; **51**. 7, 12, 91; **53**. 1, 4, 13, 39; **59**. 11; **60**. 40, 80, 86 f. two

uparājas 99, 85, 124. — d. Malayarāja, -rāyara **41**, 35; **42**, 6; **44**, 53; **46**, 29; **52**, 68; **53**, 36; **69**, 6; **70**, 62, 155. Cf. C. tr. I, p. XV—XX, XXIV.

4. The princesses (*rājadhītā*, *rājakatīnā* 5, 194; 7, 59 &c.)  
a. *rājinī* as title **49**, 3; **50**, 58; **54**, 11, 63; **59**, 41; **60**, 84; **62**, 1.

5. The *bhāgineyya* **1**, 45; **5**, 169; **11**, 20; **16**, 9; **18**, 2; **48**, 90; **49**, 71; **61**, 4 N.; **62**, 60; **83**, 41; **87**, 38, 41; **88**, 5.

6. Right of succession **33**, 1—4, 20; **49**, 65, 84; **50**, 44; **52**, 37; **54**, 1; **60**, 87; **61**, 4; **62**, 59; **63**, 22; **80**, 27, 28; **90**, 1, 4, 49, 59. Cf. C. tr. I, p. XX—XXIV.

## B. Attributes of royalty; royal life

1. Residence (*rājadhāni*) **61**, 25; **74**, 1; **88**, 103; **90**, 35. palace (*pāsāda*, *rājageha*, -ghara, -mandira) **9**, 11; **10**, 74; **12**, 46; **35**, 63; **66**, 127; **68**, 42; **70**, 237, 312; **73**, 70; **92**, 9; **98**, 68. *rājadvāra* **14**, 60; **22**, 15; **25**, 105; **35**, 53, 63. *rājāngama* **5**, 47; **72**, 214; **90**, 66. royal throne (*pallaṅka*, *āsana*, *sīhāsana*) **25**, 98; **27**, 32 f.; **31**, 76 f., 88; **35**, 52, 54; **76**, 166; **85**, 111; **90**, 18, 23; **100**, 285. — 2. Royal insignia and ornaments (*rājasādhana*, -*bhāṇḍāṇi*, -*bhūṣaṇa*, -*āhvaraṇa*) **11**, 28; **35**, 102; **39**, 28; **41**, 20; **46**, 38; **48**, 89; **50**, 51; **55**, 16 f.; **56**, 10; **71**, 28; **74**, 221; **76**, 166; **82**, 50; **90**, 13 (crown **11**, 28; **44**, 145; **71**, 28; **72**, 326). *cūḍāmaṇi* **33**, 46. *ekāvalī* **44**, 127; **46**, 17. (seta)chatta **11**, 28; **17**, 7; **19**, 59; **31**, 39, 78; **33**, 40; **35**, 15, 69; **44**, 19 f.; **55**, 1; **64**, 33; **69**, 4. *cāmara* **76**, 113; **85**, 26; **89**, 19; **99**, 47, 55; **100**, 193. *vālavījanī* **11**, 28; **31**, 78; **39**, 53. *mapitālavaṇṭa* **31**, 78). royal order **15**, 188; **24**, 58; **25**, 67; **31**, 32, 114; **58**, 2, 57; **76**, 68 &c. royal treasure *bhāṇḍāṇa*) **69**, 27; **70**, 265. — 3. State elephant **14**, 6f.; **17**, 6; **19**, 72 ff.; **34**, 86; **35**, 20 f.; **78**, 60 &c. state horse **22**, 52; **34**, 86. state carriage **31**, 38; **72**, 323. — 4. The harem (*orodha*, *itthāgāra*, *antepura*) **14**, 46; **15**, 189; **17**, 63; **59**, 33; **60**, 85; **70**, 266; **88**, 74 (dancing girls **29**, 24). the king's retinue (*parivāra*, *balatthā*, *sevakā* &c.) **31**, 112; **35**, 52;

**38.** 22; **67.** 15; **70.** 254; **72.** 118 ff.; **83.** 24; **88.** 33 f.; **89.** 31 f. (*satta rajaṅgāni* **88.** 3; *rājakkammāni* **69.** 22; *rājakammikā* **62.** 34; *paricārakā* **63.** 53; \* *pāica* and *dasa pessiyavaggā* **7.** 56; **67.** 58; **84.** 5). — 5. Funeral rites, cremation of the members of the r. family **24.** 14; **25.** 72 f.; **32.** 58, 79 f.; **34.** 34; **36.** 121; **61.** 9; **67.** 89; **85.** 76.

### C. Politics

1. *Nīti*, *rājanīti* (*naya*, *sippa*) **10.** 23; **48.** 80, 96; **55.** 3; **58.** 1; **64.** 3; **70.** 56; **90.** 56; **99.** 81. *Mannnīti* **80.** 9, 53; **83.** 6; **84.** 2; **96.** 26. *dhamma*, *dasa rājadhammā* (*dasa puññā-kriyā*) **7.** 74; **37.** 107, 180; **52.** 43; **70.** 31; **97.** 3; **99.** 73, 75, 81 f.; **100.** 118. *sampalayatthīni* (the four) **37.** 108; **52.** 43; **92.** 8; **95.** 2; **97.** 2; **99.** 14, 73, 83; **100.** 118. — Support of poor subjects **52.** 3; **53.** 30; **60.** 22, 74, 77 f.; **62.** 32. of poets **60.** 75, 79. — 2. Distinctions conferred upon officials **61.** 19; **68.** 5; **69.** 30; **70.** 19, 277 ff.; **96.** 38. — Relations to foreign sovereigns **11.** 18 ff., 27 ff.; **58.** 8; **60.** 5 f., 24 ff.; **62.** 54; **67.** 95; **76.** 11 ff.; **80.** 6 ff.; **87.** 29; **88.** 87 f.; **98.** 89 ff.; **99.** 109 ff., 164; **100.** 63 ff., 151 ff. honours paid to foreign ambassadors **7.** 70; **11.** 25 f. &c. — Treaties **71.** 1 ff. — Organised espionage **66.** 130 ff.; **67.** 19. — Foes of the King, rebels, *cora* **36.** 21, 80 f., 91; **37.** 18; **59.** 4. *dāmarikā* **61.** 71; **74.** 34 ff.; **75.** 10, 34 ff.; **76.** 3.

### D. Brahmanism at court

1. Brahmins supported by the king **48.** 23; **51.** 65 ff.; **77.** 105. Brahmanical rites observed at court **62.** 33, 45 ff.; **63.** 5; **64.** 13 ff. the *purohita* **10.** 79; **11.** 26; **34.** 24; **62.** 28, 33, 46 (*dija* **11.** 20, *vippaseṭṭha* **67.** 29). care for Hindu temples **79.** 19, 22, 81; **85.** 85 ff.

### E. The king and the Buddhist order

1. Bhikkhus as advisers of the king **42.** 22; **57.** 38 f.; **87.** 39 ff., 62 ff.; as mediators in conflicts of the royal family

**24.** 50 ff.; **51.** 14; **52.** 9; **53.** 25 ff.; **70.** 328 ff. political influence of the clergy **33.** 17 ff.; **60.** 87; **61.** 1; **76.** 73 ff. — Bh.s accompany the king in the field **25.** 3; **96.** 15. — 2. Princes educated by bh.s **81.** 76 f. members of the royal family enter the order **15.** 18 ff.; **17.** 57 f.; **18.** 5; **34.** 28 f., 35; **84.** 29; **94.** 22. conversion to Buddhism of foreign mahesīs **98.** 6 ff. — 3. Kings cause sermons to be held or hearken to them **32.** 44; **41.** 58; **54.** 34 ff.; **60.** 8; **62.** 31; **92.** 11 ff.; **98.** 73 ff.; **99.** 15 ff., 20, 30 ff., 88; **100.** 116 ff., 275, 280 f. they recite holy texts **52.** 48 ff.; **54.** 4; **60.** 17. — 4. K.s or princes cause holy texts to be copied **45.** 3; **60.** 22; **81.** 40 ff.; **90.** 37 f.; **91.** 27; **92.** 13; **97.** 36; **99.** 86. payment of the scribes **91.** 28; **99.** 33. — Literary works composed at the k.'s instigation **54.** 35; **97.** 56 f., 59; **90.** 78 f., 82 f.; **98.** 24. sacred books fetched from abroad **84.** 26; **100.** 73. bhikkhus fetched from abroad to Ceylon **60.** 5 f.; **84.** 9, 11 ff.; **94.** 15 f.; **97.** 10 f.; **98.** 89 ff.; **100.** 58 ff., 136 ff. — The king cares for the accomplishments of the clergy **84.** 26 f.; **98.** 16 f.; **99.** 173 ff.; **100.** 101 ff. — 5. Clerical acts, particularly the pabbujā and upasampadā ceremonies, performed at the k.'s instigation **60.** 7; **78.** 30; **81.** 49 f.; **84.** 37, 43; **87.** 72; **89.** 47; **90.** 39, 62, 65; **91.** 31; **92.** 19, 21 ff.; **94.** 20; **97.** 8, 13, 26; **98.** 16; **99.** 168 ff.; **100.** 94 ff., 133 f., 172. purification of the order and church-reform caused by the k. 5. 236 ff.; 36. 41, 111 ff.; 39. 57; 44. 46, 76; **51.** 64; **52.** 44; **73.** 2 ff.; **78.** 2 ff.; **84.** 7 ff.; **91.** 11; **100.** 44 ff. the k. determines a simā **15.** 184 ff.; **78.** 56 ff. — 6. Dedication to the church or to a sanctuary of the kingdom, the regalia &c. **18.** 36; **19.** 31; **31.** 90, 92, 111 f.; **32.** 36; **39.** 31; **42.** 61; **82.** 50; **85.** 109 ff.; **86.** 57. donations equal to the bodily weight **51.** 128; **60.** 21; **73.** 11. the k. grants titles to the bh.s **84.** 31, 38; **89.** 64 ff.; **100.** 239. — 7. Conflicts with the bh.s **44.** 74 ff.; **53.** 14 ff.; **93.** 6 ff., 10. — Persecution of the christians **98.** 80 ff.

## F. Administration of the kingdom

1. Officials and titles (cf. C. tr. I, p. XXV ff. and p. 359, 2). chatta mark of distinction for officials 70, 85, 122. — General expressions: adhikārin 66, 66; 70, 278, 297 f.; 72, 21, 37, 75, 122, 123, 138, 160, 207, 232, 265. adhinātha 70, 216, 278. antarañgadhura 69, 32, 35. amacca 4, 37; 5, 35, 239 &c.; 58, 30; 66, 72 &c. (mahāmacea 16, 10; 61, 1; 72, 96, 129 &c.; mahāmatta 72, 70, 181; mūlāmacea 69, 31). maṇḍalika, maṇḍalanāyaka 46, 31; 51, 109, 122; 54, 8; 69, 5; 70, 242, 246. mantin 66, 113; 89, 27. saciva 66, 67; 67, 90; 68, 7, 18; 70, 83, 324. sāmanta (58, 20); 61, 63; 66, 142; 69, 5, 16; 70, 9, 57, 129, 136, 179, 189, 212, 246, 314; 72, 16 ff., 50, 54, 78, 82, 165. — Special designations: asiggāha 39, 54; 42, 42; 44, 1, 43, 54, 58 ff.; 66, 29. ādipotthakin (bhavṛṭārap°, bhaṇḍāgārādbikūrin) 69, 27; 72, 27, 160, 182, 196, 207. kañcukin (-nāyaka) 63, 53; 69, 26; 70, 44; 72, 58; 75, 176. kamimanātha (°nāyaka) 72, 58, 206. gaṇaka (°amacea) 11, 20; 69, 30; 76, 39. chattaggāha (-nāyaka) 38, 3; 59, 16; 66, 29; 70, 60; 72, 68. jīvitapotthakin 70, 174, 318; 72, 161; 74, 90. dāvjanātha, °nāyaka °adhināyaka) 11, 26; 70, 5, 8, 15, 19, 64, 68, 121, 279; 72, 36, 65, 162, 222. dovārika 35, 51. dhammagēhakanātha 59, 16. nagaraguttika 10, 81. bhaṇḍārapotthakin, bhaṇḍāgārāndhikārin see ādipotthakin. mahālekha 52, 33; 72, 1, 161, 166, 170, 182, 206. mūlapotthakin 75, 139 f. lekhaka 66, 155. sabhāpati (kuṭhārasabhlānāyaka) 67, 61, 64, 70, 80. seṭṭhinātha 59, 16. senūpati (senūni, °adhināyaka, camūpati, dhajinīpati &c.) 11, 25; 15, 212; 35, 59; 50, 82; 51, 30, 40, 88; 52, 16, 28; 53, 43 ff.; 54, 13 ff., 58 ff.; 55, 2; 56, 7; 64, 9 ff., 22; 65, 13 ff., 27 ff.; 66, 2 ff.; 67, 82; 70, 123, 129 ff., 153 ff., 285; 72, 45, 49, 76, 122 ff., 137 f.; 90, 12; 96, 38 (sakkasenāpati 52, 52, 61 ff., 72 ff.; 54, 53. andhasenāpati 41, 87). — Titles: kesadhātu 57, 65 ff.; 72, 2, 5, 7, 107; 76, 253 ff., 324 ff. &c. (cf. C. ed. II, p. 601, col. 2); (-nāyaka 70, 68, 279). jitagiri 72, 25. damilādhikārin 75, 20 ff., 69 ff.; 76, 39. nagaragiri, °galla 66, 35, 62; 70, 68, 89, 146, 199, 318; 72, 107; 76, 60. nīlagiri 70, 137, 140.

māragiri 72, 11, 164, 174. laṅkāgiri 72, 27, 124 f.; 76, 250. laṅkādhikārin 70, 278, 283, 306, 316. laṅkādhināyaka (°nātha &c) 70, 24, 95 ff.; 123, 174, 205, 220. laṅkāpura 72, 39, 222; 75, 70; 76, 250, 324, 326. lokagalla 72, 222. saṅkha(ka)nāyaka 70, 278; 72, 31, 41; 75, 75.

2. Administration of justice. The k. the highest judge 21, 14. alleviation of punishment 36, 80 f.; 83, 4 ff.; 87, 48 f. amnesty 34, 84; 62, 42; 80, 2 ff. — Law-books 49, 20; 80, 41. — Crimes: high treason 35, 10; 36, 21, 91; 87, 48(?). robbery 61, 67. indebtedness 36, 39. — Forensic procedure 35, 10; 37, 38; 78, 13. — Punishment: hiapsāmatto vohāro 36, 28. fine 83, 6. prison 35, 22; 54, 31; 62, 42; 70, 238, 261; 83, 4. mutilation, capital punishment 35, 11, 36, 43; 36, 121; 59, 22; 60, 42 ff.; 75, 160 ff., 190 ff., 83, 4; 87, 49.

3. Internal administration. Book-keeping at court 66, 155; 69, 27. — Taxes 61, 53, 70; 68, 51; 73, 3; 74, 18 f.; 87, 50. alleviation of taxes 36, 26. the gūmabhojaka 61, 73. — The village community 10, 103; 23, 4; 38, 38; 55, 31; 60, 75; 74, 48 f.; 84, 3 ff.; 86, 53. — Administration organised by Purakkamabāhu I. 69, 27 ff.; 74, 48 f.

## G. Army and war

1. The soldiers (bhāṭī 39, 20; 58, 20 &c.; yeḍhā 22, 44; 69, 7 &c.; sūrā 69, 36; 99, 119 &c.; virā 72, 218 &c.) Enrolling of soldiers 10, 24. soldier's pay 90, 15, 18 f., 20. — Four-membered army 18, 29; 25, 81; 70, 217, 226; 71, 18 &c. balavāhana 15, 189; 17, 28; 25, 1, 57; 70, 23, 69 &c. war elephants 25, 26 ff., 81; 41, 23; 50, 21 ff.; 70, 229; 76, 48 &c. chariot warriors 25, 81 (rathin 88, 34; rathesabha 15, 189; sārathi 14, 42). cavalry 25, 81 (numerous in the Damila armies 76, 100, 298, 331). infantry (patti) 25, 81. — Mercenaries (āyudhiya 61, 69; āyūlhajivin 66, 67): Sihalā 55, 12; 61, 69; 74, 44; 90, 17 ff. Damilā, Keraṭā, Kaṇṇāṭā 45, 11; 55, 5, 12; 69, 18; 70, 230; 74, 44. the Velakkārā 60, 36; 63, 24, 29; 74, 44. villages granted to the mercenaries for maintenance 74, 48. — Militia 67, 70; 70, 82, 187, 260; 72,

127; **74**, 52, 112; **75**, 102; **99**, 42 ff. (among the Damilas **76**, 130, 246 f., 259 ff.). *vyādhā*, *kirātā*, *corā* as soldiers **69**, 20; **70**, 285; **72**, 208. — Officers (*sāmanta* see F 1). an umbrella their badge **68**, 49; **70**, 122; **76**, 160; **88**, 75. a palanquin their conveyance **70**, 85, 122; **72**, 100. — Trumpets **25**, 65; **65**, 27; **66**, 32; **72**, 119; **74**, 222; **85**, 113; **88**, 75; **89**, 46. drums **69**, 20; **70**, 227; **74**, 222; **75**, 104; **76**, 161; **85**, 114; **88**, 75; **96**, 15 f.; **99**, 46. flags **70**, 225; **85**, 113; **88**, 75. a relic as liegel-badge **25**, 1; **26**, 9. — 2. Weapons (*gāndha*, *īvē* **7**, 36; **69**, 7, 38; **99**, 49 &c.); five kinis **7**, 16; **41**, 48; **70**, 229). Bow and arrows **6**, 29; **7**, 19; **25**, 89 ff., **99**; **33**, 63, 65; **35**, 31; **55**, 6; **57**, 43; **66**, 27; **70**, 114; **72**, 134, 246, 250; **74**, 96, 117; **83**, 44; **96**, 14. poisoned arrows **76**, 49; **83**, 38, 45. gokappa arrows **76**, 48. archers **25**, 82; **69**, 19; **70**, 116; **72**, 244, 322. — Sword: *asi* **10**, 59 ff.; **22**, 44, 53; **66**, 108; **72**, 84. *khagga* **25**, 63, 89; **30**, 93; **31**, 79; **64**, 1; **66**, 24, 31, 49; **72**, 102; **88**, 74 &c.. *tharu* **24**, 1; **69**, 22. (royal swords **72**, 102-4). — Dagger: *chnrikā* **55**, 6, 17; **69**, 24. *asiputtaka* **41**, 24. *nikkarayi* **44**, 112. — Spear: *kunta* **25**, 1; **26**, 9; **36**, 47; **96**, 14; **99**, 49., *satti*, *sattha* **69**, 20; **70**, 116; **90**, 7. *tomara* **24**, 35; **70**, 116. *salla* **70**, 307. — Lasso **7**, 20; **10**, 55. — Club **23**, 58; **69**, 17. — catapults **72**, 251; **83**, 44. — Armour (*kavaca*) **69**, 7, 38. shield **25**, 58, 62 ff.; **67**, 42; **99**, 48. doublet of buffalo hide **74**, 73. — 3. The war (*yuddha* **1**, 63; **38**, 36 &c.) Preparation of war **68**, 7, 38, 52; **69**, 28, 33, 38; **70**, 1, 57. *yuddhopakarayāni* **69**, 5, 14, 17, 31; **70**, 1; **96**, 12. — Review of troops **99**, 42 ff. sham-fights **89**, 26, 31 f. manoevers **69**, 36. — Four methods of war **58**, 3. guerilla warfare (*corayuddha*) **75**, 18 N., 135. ambush **66**, 75 f. strategem **25**, 56. — Battle (*yuddha*, *sāmpāma*, *rāya* &c. **24**, 19; **70**, 246; **72**, 5, 17; **96**, 17 &c.). single combat of the commanders **25**, 67 ff., **83** ff.; **41**, 47 ff.; **60**, 30 ff. victory and defeat (*jaya* and *parājaya*, -*bhava* **70**, 78 f., 180, 225, 246; **71**, 16 &c.). celebration of victory **76**, 332. *ābhārayāna* as distinction of victorious officers **72**, 320. officers of the defeated foe beheaded **70**, 122. — Naval battles **70**, 63 ff., 91; **96**, 32. — Field entrenchments **10**, 46; **25**, 20;

37. 19; 38. 36; 70. 61, 72, 93, 100, 130 ff., 161, 163 ff.; 72. 232 ff., 258; 74. 32 ff., 62, 86 f., 94; 76. 121 ff. &c. fortresses 81. 1 ff.; 88. 43, 60, 77; 96. 22, 34; 99. 116; defence, besiege, capture, plundering of fortresses 25. 21 ff.; 51. 34; 58. 55 f.; 70. 235 f., 251 ff., 288 ff.; 72. 209 ff., 250 ff.; 76. 244 f., 321 ff.

## VII. The people

### A. Clans, castes, guilds.

1. Clan-names 19. 2; 35. 16 ff.; 38. 13; 39. 44; 41. 69; 42. 30; 66. 35; 69. 13; 74. 213; 80. 15; 85. 51; 90. 7; 91. 3 (Moriyā and Lambakappā in India 5. 17; 77. 27 f.) — Castes (vāṇī 72. 145) and guilds 7. 57; 19. 1, 3; 69. 24; 80. 41, 75. setthīn 11. 26; 19. 2, 67; 59. 16. khattiya, rājanya 3. 3; 7. 47; 17. 63; 19. 54, 66; 87. 28; 89. 27. brāhmaṇa, dvija, vippa 3. 3; 9. 2; 10. 20, 102; 19. 2; 33. 37 ff.; 34. 24; 35. 18; 37. 41; 62. 33, 46; 64. 16; 66. 132; 67. 94. vessa 3. 3; 20. 15; 76. 264. subba 3. 3. — Kulina: hīna 61. 50, 52, 62, 68; 66. 153. kulaputta 72. 304; 92. 22; 97. 13 f., 26; 99. 169; 100. 131, 172; kulittī 60. 78; kuluvaṃsa 95. 6; kulajñti 23. 19. — Slaves (dāsa, dāsi) 9. 4, 15, 19, 22, 24; 27. 12; 61. 68; 70. 202; 88. 106; 90. 2 (shaving of the head 6. 42. redemption of slaves 87. 46). outcasts (cāpūḍala) 5. 57; 10. 91 ff.; 33. 2; 35. 18; 66. 132; 88. 106.

2. Single professions (kammakāra 61. 68; 69. 21; 99. 50; pesakāra, pessiya 7. 56; 30. 6; sippika, -in 34. 73; 66. 139; 88. 13, 85. list of craftsmen 88. 105-7. (wandering craftsmen 66. 139). payment of the craftsmen 27. 22 f.; 30. 14, 18 f.; 88. 110; of artists 100. 198 f. farmer and herdsman: kasi-kamma 69. 37; 76. 287; gopa(ka), gopāla 9. 22; 10. 13, 17; 19. 2. smith: kammāra 68. 25; 88. 105; lohakāra 68. 25; sopyakāra 18. 24; 66. 139; 68. 25. goldsmith's works 98. 94; 100. 30. 72. barber &c.: nhāpita, nhāpaka, kappaka 29. 20; 34. 84; 69. 26; 70. 44. bricklayer: (ittihaka)vadḍhaki 30. 5, 8, 30; 35. 101, 109 f.; 37. 27; 88. 106. mason: silākoṭṭaka 68. 25. wood-carrier: dārnubhatika 34. 22. writer: lekhaka

**37.** 26; **66.** 155; **99.** 33. merchant: vāṇija 5. 49; **7.** 24; **28.** 21 ff.; **75.** 45; **95.** 4; **99.** 109 (wandering traders **66.** 134). hunter: luddaka, vyādha **28.** 9, 41; **67.** 19; **70.** 35, 44. fisherman: bālisika, kevaṭṭa **22.** 62; **28.** 37.

### B. Settlement

1. Village: gāma, passim, fence of briars round a v. **66.** 87 (gāmika "villager" **23.** 66; **67.** 70; jānapada **29.** 22). — small town: nigama (negama **70.** 254). — town: nagara, pura, purī **87.** 67 (nāgara **4.** 5, 15; **14.** 59; **17.** 63; **79.** 1 &c.; pura **29.** 22). — 2. Description of a town **10.** 84 ff.; **73.** 55 ff.; **88.** 92 ff., **116.** II.; **91.** 5. four districts of a t. **73.** 26. streets: vithi **34.** 76; **73.** 59. houses: geha, ghara, nūgūra (special kinds: addhayoga, humniya **88.** 93, 118). houses of more than one storeys: pāśāla **88.** 92; **91.** 5 &c. (cf. vii, C, 12 e). halls: sūlā, catnssūlā **15.** 47, 50; **35.** 88; **37.** 15; **73.** 23; **76.** 123. alms-houses: dānasūlā **54.** 30; **73.** 26. hospitals: vejjasūlā (**37.** 182); **49.** 18, 19; **52.** 25, 57; **54.** 31, 53; **73.** 34. dispensaries: bhūsajjageha **52.** 27. lying-in hospitals: sivikāsotthisūlā **10.** 102; sūtighara **79.** 61. shops: nūpaya 5. 52; **23.** 29; **34.** 76; **91.** 5. gardens, parks (nyyāna), bathing-ponds (pokkharāṇī), bath-houses (ubhānakotthaka): **15.** 2, 7, 8, 30, 202, 207; **35.** 97, 98; **37.** 33; **68.** 57 f.; **73.** 95–123; **78.** 45 ff.; **79.** 1 ff.; **100.** 288 f. jantūghara **15.** 31. — 3. Fortification of the city **60.** 2 f.; **73.** 57 ff.; **94.** 7 f. wall and trench (piṅkāra, parikhā) **25.** 8; **35.** 96; **60.** 3; **70.** 236; **91.** 5, 7. gate-towers, bastions &c. (gopura, dvārāṭṭala, dvārakotthā, putthayūḍila, torapa, khandhāvāra) **51.** 31; **60.** 3; **70.** 116, 190; **91.** 5, 7; **96.** 30; **98.** 70. gates (four) **34.** 79; **35.** 97. fourteen gates of Pulathinagara **73.** 160 ff. — 4. Suburbs (of P.) **73.** 151 ff.; **78.** 79 ff.

### C. Domestic and social life

1. The family. Terms of kinship **7.** 65; **9.** 16, 24, 26 f.; **10.** 7, 29, **73.** I., 82; **11.** 20; **48.** 51, 82; **51.** 24; **52.** 11; **57.** 28; **59.** 28; **61.** 1; **62.** 2; **63.** 38, 40, 51, 53; **64.** 33; **67.** 16; **69.** 23; **70.** 266; **93.** 3; **99.** 1, 123. three kinds of sons **87.** 18 ff. —

Marriage (paripaya) 72. 91. marriage-outfit of a bride 7. 55 ff.; 87. 28. brides from India 7. 50 ff.; 87. 28; 96. 40. allusion to the buying of brides 72. 91. master of the house (kuṭumbika) 23. 61, 90; 24. 25. fire kept in the house 10. 14. — Pregnancy 22. 42 ff.; 62. 36. child-birth, birth-rites 9. 21; 62. 45. childhood 87. 55 II.; 88. 6 (wet nurse 35. 20). domestic ceremonies 22. 65, 74; 62. 53; 63. 5; 64. 13. — Death and funeral 74. 144 f.

2. Food and drink 7. 24; 10. 3; 14. 55; 22. 14, 70; 24. 56; 29. 28; 30. 37, 39; 32. 30, 39 f.; 45. 49; 34. 55 f., 62; 35. 65, 67, 92 I.; 36. 69, 100; 54. 22 f.; 70. 211; 73. 36; 85. 38; 89. 44 II., 51 ff.; 100. 4, 195 f. — morning meal 25. 114. pod-pepper and other spice 25. 114; 26. 16; 28. 21; 54. 22 f. — Intoxicating drinks (*smūlī*) 25. 32; 54. 70 f. — Betel chewing 35. 62; 54. 22; 100. 3, 196.

3. Dress (vattha 11. 29; 29. 28; 35. 65; 36. 53 &c.) and ornaments (ābhūrṇya 7. 27 &c.). Stuffs 68. 9; 70. 109; 73. 84; 90. 70. — Turban 11. 28; 23. 38; 32. 78; 35. 53 (hair-knot 66. 103). mantle 35. 102; 60. 70; 66. 103, 109. shoes (pāduka, upāhanī) 11. 28; 30. 14, 39. — Ornaments, unguents, perfumes (sugandha 89. 42) 7. 55; 11. 28; 25. 91; 32. 29; 34. 52; 66. 44 f., 134; 70. 108) 73. 84; 76. 206, 237; 85. 41, 116; 89. 19; 97. 47. añjana 11. 29; 34. 52. incense 89. 42.

4. Articles of personal use (tools &c.). Umbrella (ātapatta, chatta) 76. 113; 89. 19; 99. 47, 55 (cf. vi, B, 2). fan 11. 28; 31. 78; 76. 115; 85. 27, 46; 89. 20; 100. 193. napkin 11. 29. twigs for cleansing the teeth 5. 25. — Knile (viisī) 28. 24 f. hammer, axe and other tools 29. 3; 88. 108 I. — Pottery, vessels: kalasa 74. 205; 85. 28. kumbha 89. 20; 90. 71. ācāmakumbhī 27. 40. ghaṭa 29. 57 II.; 76. 112, 115; 85. 26; 92. 17. thāla, thāli 89. 21, 44; patiggāba 89. 21. pāti 30. 12. bhājana 11. 31; 22. 5, 64 (fig. 44. 70; 84. 16). bhiṅkāra 11. 28; 76. 115; 89. 20. saraka 32. 55. — Spoon 27. 40. basket (piṭaka, puṭa) 36. 93; 88. 109. water-strainer 36. 92.

5. Household-furniture. Bed: mañcaka 24. 40; 27. 39; 54. 31; sayana, seyyā 22. 83 II.; 23. 39; 25. 102; 31. 107 f.;

62. 23, 24 &c. chair, pīṭha: **27.** 39; pallaṅka **27.** 32 ff.; **31.** 76 f. sivikā **11.** 31; **32.** 7. — Carpet, mat **14.** 51; **25.** 102; **27.** 35; **34.** 54; **73.** 64; **88.** 109; **90.** 70; **98.** 46. — Lamp **25.** 101; **31.** 80; **33.** 6; **34.** 55, 77; **74.** 205; **85.** 40 f.; **89.** 48 f.; **90.** 71; **92.** 17; **99.** 62. Lamp-stand **76.** 205; **89.** 23. — Mirror: ādāsa: **100.** 106; dappapa **89.** 21. — Charcoal-pan **60.** 70. bell **21.** 15. mill-stone (nisada) **23.** 6; **28.** 40; **30.** 9. chest (mañjūśā) **30.** 60. — parissāvana **36.** 92.

6. Measures and weights, time, money. Measures of length: yojana (cf. M. tr. p. 297, Nr. 34) **1.** 21; **5.** 23, 179, 262; **6.** 18, 35; **18.** 29; **20.** 12; **23.** 22, 26; **28.** 7, 13 ff.; **38.** 68 (note is incorrect; cf. C. tr. I, p. 349), **85.** 4; **86.** 44; **89.** 14. gāvuta **65.** 4; **73.** 151; **74.** 63; **76.** 197; **89.** 9. usabha **22.** 42; **23.** 88; **25.** 43; **85.** 4. hattha **1.** 41; **18.** 27; **25.** 43; **70.** 128; **78.** 63, 69. ratana **15.** 167; **30.** 58, 63; **72.** 235; **78.** 77; **92.** 17. vidatthi **28.** 14. uṅgula, -li **18.** 27; **28.** 14; **30.** 59. porisa **72.** 235. yaṭṭhi **78.** 63; **86.** 41. bāṇapāṭa **72.** 239. dbau **35.** 31. tāla **17.** 43. — Square measures: ammaya **38.** 77. karīsa **10.** 30; **28.** 13; **35.** 83, 86. — measures of capacity: ammaya **30.** 7 ff. doṇa **15.** 167; **31.** 18; **74.** 3. nāṭi **30.** 37; **32.** 45. — weights: nikku(la) **76.** 18; **82.** 13 f.; **100.** 14. — Time: year (vassa, saṃvacechcha passim, hāyana **41.** 3; **44.** 153 &c.). months (māsa **3.** 16; **5.** 279; **25.** 8 &c.). names of months **1.** 12, 19, 16, 73; **3.** 2; **11.** 37, 40, 42; **12.** 2; **13.** 14, 18; **16.** 2, 14; **17.** 1, 17; **18.** 7, 61 f., 64; **19.** 9; **20.** 33; **29.** 1, 14, 63; **31.** 109; **39.** 37; **41.** 80; **85.** 89; **90.** 62; **100.** 91. sukkā-, kālapakkha **18.** 61 f., 64; **19.** 9; **20.** 33; **29.** 14; **31.** 109. day (divasa passim, vāsnra **62.** 10, 32; **70.** 263 &c.). yāma **25.** 105; **85.** 40. — Money: kahāpaya **4.** 13; **21.** 26; **25.** 100; **30.** 14, 18; **53.** 29, 32 f.; **77.** 102; **81.** 45. gold coins **27.** 21; **48.** 7; **81.** 45; **100.** 14. silver coins **91.** 12; **97.** 6. sums of money in numbers only (to be supplied by kahāpaya) **6.** 24 f.; **7.** 61; **10.** 18, 24; **23.** 36 ff.; **26.** 22; **34.** 87; **35.** 64, 72; **89.** 66; **92.** 13.

7. Traffic and trade. Roads: maggānumaggā **67.** 20. — footpaths **70.** 4; **72.** 240. high-roads (mahāmagga) in C. **25.** 6 ff.; **50.** 37; **58.** 41; **73.** 163; **74.** 83; **89.** 13 f. cause-

ways and bridges 70, 127 f.; 86, 21 ff.; 98, 86; 99, 118. resthouses 60, 66; 89, 15; 99, 118. mile-stones 80, 25 N. — Means of conveyance: *yāna*, *vāhana* 10, 31 ff.; 58, 21; 61, 6; 99, 84. carriage (ratha) 7, 56; 14, 42; 15, 189; 31, 38; 33, 46; 70, 127; 89, 16. cart (*sakaṭa*) 28, 21 ff.; 30, 6; 34, 46. litter 70, 85, 122; 72, 100; 90, 5, 8; 95, 12; (?) 15, 189; 25, 1, 57; 70, 23, 69). — Trade: (merchant see VII, A, 2). navigation and ocean-trade 6, 43; 7, 51, 58; 8, 11; 11, 23, 38; 18, 7 f.; 19, 4, 17, 70; 23, 24; 35, 26 f.; 58, 9; 69, 33; 100, 63 ff., 75 ff. harbours in C. Mahātittha 7, 58; 25, 79; 48, 81; 51, 28; 60, 34; 88, 63 &c. Jamībukola 11, 23, 38; 18, 7; 19, 23 ff. Urūvelapāṭṭana 28, 36. Mattikāvāṭatittha 60, 34. Mānñāra 61, 39; 83, 16. Vālukagāma 75, 45. Pallavavaṇka 76, 46. Pulaceri 83, 17 (?). Bhīmatittha 86, 40. Kolambatittha 94, 1. Tikopāmālatittha 100, 76. in India: Tāmalitī 11, 38; 19, 6. — Articles of trade: horses from India (sindhava) 21, 10; 23, 71; 31, 38. elephants from Birma 76, 17-34. jewels 69, 33. spice 28, 21; 54, 16; 58, 9. stuffs 58, 9.

8. Rural life. Agriculture (*kasikumma*) 69, 37. its intrinsic value 92, 24 ff. clearing of the jungle 23, 51; 68, 30. — Irrigation works 68, 16 ff., 32 ff.; 79, 27 ff.; 88, 111 ff. mātikā "canal" 61, 65; 68, 24, 33; 79, 25 ff., 40 ff. (nettika 60, 14). vāpiṇī (see V, C, c, 6) gayh, kar, bandh 10, 88; 23, 92 f.; 35, 120; 36, 3; 37, 46; 38, 42; 42, 31; 51, 73; 79, 69. structure of a tank: dam (bandhana, setu, setubandha) 42, 31; 68, 17, 23, 26, 28. paññāli "outflow running through the dam, sluice" 79, 27, 30, 42 ff., 68. āvaraṇa "lock" 60, 52; 61, 65; 79, 27 N., 69. koṭṭhabaddha "square hole (for the lock)" 68, 16; 79, 27 N., 28. weir (*vāripāta*) 48, 148; 68, 35, 37, 40. flood-escape (*nijjhara*) 68, 33, 50; 79, 28, 66. — raising of the water by means of machines 34, 45. subterranean canals 35, 98. — Fields 23, 51; 68, 30, 52 ff.; 88, 111 f.; 92, 26. produce of the fields 23, 51; 34, 3; 68, 31; 92, 26. corn (*dhamma*) 68, 7, 38; 70, 1. sowing and harvest 10, 31; 24, 58; 34, 3. barn 68, 31. — cocon-plantation 90, 93. sugar-mill 34, 41; 61, 53. — Herdsman

**9.** 22; **10.** 13, 17; **19.** 2. assagopa **39.** 1; hatthipaka **88.** 34. cattle (*goyā*) **35.** 42. domestic animals: elephant, cow, buffalo, dog, see V, C, 3, h, 3.

**9.** Education of the people, literary life. Education: wandering schoolmasters **66.** 138. art of writing, letters **7.** 51, 57; **8.** 7; **22.** 15; **23.** 25, 33, 35; **33.** 40; **66.** 36; **67.** 55, 58; **76.** 30; **98.** 90; **100.** 61, 158. lekhaka **99.** 33. royal inscriptions and sannas **28.** 2; **33.** 50; **54.** 28; **86.** 34 f., 39; **100.** 214. — Appreciation of books, their destruction and restitution **52.** 50; **80.** 67; **81.** 41 ff.; **99.** 125. See also V, E, 4. — Knowledge of languages and dialects **66.** 130; **69.** 22; **90.** 80. Pāli as ecclesiastical language **98.** 90. grammar **64.** 3. philosophy **90.** 80. — Poetry: kāveyya **42.** 13; **64.** 3. poets in C. **42.** 13; **60.** 75. See V, E, 4.

**10.** Sport and amusement. Sport (kila **66.** 111): hunting **5.** 151; **10.** 2; **14.** 1, 4; **70.** 32 ff.; **72.** 263 (bow and javelin, the hunter's weapons **14.** 4; **70.** 41). capture of wild elephants **72.** 105. — art of fencing **24.** 1; **64.** 1; **69.** 22. pugilistic contest **63.** 30; **75.** 75. riding on horseback or on elephant **22.** 56; **23.** 72 ff.; **24.** 1; **62.** 6; **64.** 4; **69.** 22; **88.** 34; **96.** 7 ff. Archery (dhanusippa **57.** 43) **23.** 86 ff.; **24.** 1; **69.** 19; **72.** 243, 245; **83.** 45. plays in water **26.** 7, 10; **70.** 31. — Music and dance: music (turiyavālita **34.** 60; tālavacara **17.** 7). song (gītā) **34.** 79; **72.** 94. dance (nacca) **34.** 60, 79; **85.** 43. musicians **30.** 91; **69.** 24; **72.** 94, 264. singers **72.** 264; **85.** 43. dancers and dancing girls **10.** 87; **29.** 21; **32.** 78; **74.** 217; **85.** 43. wandering musicians **66.** 132 f.; bards and minstrels **74.** 222; **89.** 34. musical instruments. turiya (five kinds **73.** 68; **85.** 30, 45; **89.** 33) **29.** 25; **76.** 114. flute **30.** 75; **31.** 82; **72.** 264; **74.** 216. trumpet **74.** 222; **99.** 60; **100.** 33, 190. flute **72.** 264; **74.** 216. cymbal **99.** 60; **100.** 33, 190. drums: bheri **74.** 221; **96.** 15; **99.** 46; maddala **96.** 15; **99.** 46; mudinga **74.** 216; kāhala **74.** 222. — rasa-theory **66.** 56; **72.** 94, 265; **73.** 117; **75.** 89. laya **73.** 79. — dance and music at festival occasions **34.** 60, 79; **74.** 215-7; **85.** 42 f.; **89.** 33 ff.; **90.** 74; **99.** 46. d. and m. as amusement of ladies and princes and at court **25.** 99, 102; **29.** 24; **64.** 4;

69. 22; 70. 31; 73. 141. — Public amusements: samajja 34. 79 (cf. E. HARDY, Album Kern, p. 61 ff.). Āsālha-feast 85. 89; 99. 53. vasanta-kīṭā 64. 17. — stage for mimics (*rāṇigabhuṇi*) 31. 82. puppet-plays 66. 133. snake-charmers 66. 131. mendicant artists 52. 30; 53. 30. — festival processions 31. 36 ff.; 37. 77 ff.; 38. 77; 52. 53 ff.; 72. 313 ff.; 74. 224 ff.; 76. 108 ff.; 89. 16 ff.; 99. 45 ff., 53 ff. decoration of the streets 19. 38; 34. 76 f.; 37. 74 ff.; 62. 43; 74. 199 ff.; 85. 4 ff.; 89. 14 ff.; 98. 40 ff.; 99. 7 f., 43; 100. 25 ff. illumination 34. 80. donations distributed to the people at festival occasions 29. 20 f., 27 f.

11. Medicine. Physicians and medical art 32. 38; 73. 16 f., 39; 99. 176 f.; 100. 144. wandering quacks 66. 137. kings as physicians 37. 112–50; 73. 34–54. gynecology 37. 140. veterinary science 25. 34; 37. 112 ff., 128; 73. 50 ff. medical books 97. 59. — Diseases 15. 60, 63; 35. 66; 36. 82 ff.; 37. 141; 52. 25, 77; 56. 5; 99. 176. cripples 37. 118. poisoning 66. 131, 138. chirurgical instruments 37. 150; 76. 51. bleeding 37. 128. medicaments: bhesajja 5. 224; 22. 30; 32. 38; 76. 49 ff. &c. honey and ghee 5. 49 ff., 215. — Hospitals and dispensaries see VII, B, 2.

12. Art: architecture, plastic and graphic art. Architecture. a. building material (*dabhu*) 25. 39; 37. 25, 29; parpsu 30. 6 f. mattikā 11. 29; 29. 5; 30. 21. cuppu 88. 106; 100. 284. sudhā 25. 29; 29. 8; 32. 1; 34. 46; 68. 27; 91. 29 f.; 97. 38, 47. iṭṭhakā 25. 29; 28. 5, 7 ff.; 30. 15 ff.; 35. 85; 88. 98, 106; 92. 10; 100. 87, 284 (*tambulohiṭṭhakā* 27. 42). gitjaku 88. 97. silā 25. 29; 33. 23, 25; 35. 118; 36. 102; 68. 25; 88. 107; 97. 47; 98. 86; 100. 281, 296. medavaṇṇapāsāṇā 30. 57; 31. 119, 121. — b. Workmen: vaḍḍhaki see VII, A, 2; 88. 106 f. — c. Various buildings: ekaṭṭhūṇikaghe, ekaṭṭhambhapāsāda 9. 3; 73. 92. pāsāda, aḍḍhayoga, hammiya see VII, B, 2. — d. Elements of a house: ajira 35. 3. ālinda 35. 3; 98. 44. dvāra 73. 63; 88. 99. kavāṭa 35. 25; 73. 63. bhitti 73. 63; 88. 98. thamīha 27. 30; 36. 102; 60. 11; 78. 41; 88. 98; 100. 296 f. sopāna 34. 44; 73. 63; 78. 41; 88. 99. vedikā 27. 16, 26; 73. 88; 88. 99.

gabbha 27. 15, 28; 73. 61. kūṭāgāra 27. 15, 26; 73. 62; 78. 38, 49, 55. viṣṇuka 88. 97. sīhapaujara 27. 16, 28. chadāna (72. 211); 97. 39. valabhi 88. 97 (tulāyaṭṭhi 88. 97; gopānasi 37. 111; 88. 98). — e. Pāsāñla (dīgha-, eññap° 78. 36 f., 50; 90. 90); pākāra 27. 41. kūṭāgāra, gabbhasāñghara, pañjaragelha 78. 55. dvārakoṭṭhaka 27. 41. gopura 60. 12. jā-sādatala 25. 98, 105; 28. 3. thūpika 31. 13; 73. 135. siṅga 90. 66, 90. underground tunnel 55. 7. — Thupa, cetiya (M. tr., p. 295, Nr. 26), a tree as cetiy 1. 67. thūpa "tomb" 20. 53; 37. 41. cetiya "tumb" 20. 44; 25. 73. cetiya = thūpa 29. 15; 30. 57; 86. 51 &c. dhūtingabbha = thūpa 60. 56; 68. 28; 79. 14. silāmaya th° 35. 118. model of a th° 30. 11 ff. — erection of a th° 30. 15 ff. mautling of a ruined th° (kāneuka) 1. 42; 33. 23, 25; 35. 85, 121; 36. 12. — parts of a th°: foundation 29. 2–12 (mañgalitjhakā 29. 15, 46–63), moonstone 31. 61. toraya 38. 10. vālikūṇigāra, -mariyāñde, cetiyāñgāra 33. 31; 34. 70; 37. 60. hatthipākāra, -vedi 33. 5; 38. 10; 39. 30; 41. 95. pupplādhāra 30. 51, 56; 33. 22. pālkavedikā 34. 41; 35. 2. dhūtugabbha 30. 57 ff., 62 ff.; 34. 49. sullhākanima 32. 1; 33. 5; 34. 46. the "tee": caturassacaya 31. 121; muddhavedi 32. 5; souyathūpa 100. 263. vedikā on the tee 34. 39; 35. 2. figures of sun and moon on the tee 36. 66. thūpika 44. 133; 76. 105; 80. 20; 87. 66. chatta 33. 5; 35. 2; 36. 24, 65; 38. 54; 44. 133. vajiracumbuṭa 36. 66; 38. 71; 41. 95. — Муñçара, provisional pavillon, erected for various purposes: as a chapel 100. 227; for a sermon 98. 71 ff.; 100. 279; in connection with a pāsāñla 14. 47; 27. 29 ff.; 36. 99, or with a temple 100. 185, 217, 243. ratanam° 27. 29; 37. 103. silām° 36. 102. thambhā, chatta and vedikā of a m° 27. 30 f.; 100. 226. — f. Ornamentation of the buildings (the object itself or its representation in relief or in fresco-painting): pupplāpūṇyaghāṭa 30. 90; 32. 4. strings of pearls 27. 31; 30. 66 f., or of bells 27. 16, 27; 30. 66; 73. 68. ratanapadumāni 27. 34; 30. 68. — Figures (panti "rows") of animals 27. 30, 37; 30. 65; 100. 255, or of deities 27. 30; 30. 74 ff.; 89 ff., 92, or of sun, moon and stars 27. 33; 30. 68; 36. 66; or of sacred symbols 27. 37; 30. 65, 92;

36. 103. agghiyapanti 30. 92; pañcaṅgulikapanti 32. 4. — Pupphalatā 30. 65; 73. 62; 100. 244, 255. vijjullatā 30. 96. rūpalatākamma 98. 70. — Painted representations of the sixteen sacred places 100. 253, 261, or of jātakas 30. 88; 97. 39–15, or of scenes from the life of the Buddhas 30. 78 ff.; 100. 261 ff.

b. Plastic art. Statues of the Buddha 35. 89; 38. 65, 86; 39. 6, 7, 40; 45. 61; 49. 14, 44; 51. 76; 52. 65; 53. 49; 78. 74 ff.; 79. 78; 85. 10, 66; 88. 56; 90. 94; 92. 14; 98. 66; 100. 154, 235, 257. golden or gilded images 30. 72; 48. 137; 49. 77; 50. 34, 66; 51. 23, 48 ff.; 55. 20; 61. 57; 100. 72, 75, 249. stone images 36. 104, 128; 37. 14; 38. 61; 42. 18; 44. 68; 51. 77; 52. 12; 53. 50; 85. 77; 100. 181. bronze images 36. 31; 37. 31. images made of stucco 100. 245. — Buddhist iconography 38. 62–4 with N.; 45. 61; 52. 26, 65; 53. 50; 73. 78; 98. 66. — Statues of Metteyya and of other bodhi-sattas 38. 68; 45. 62; 51. 77; 79. 75; 100. 248, 259; of Ānanda, Sāriputta, Moggallāna 39. 53; 51. 80; 100. 248; of Mahinda and of his companions 37. 68, 79, 87; 38. 58; of princes 39. 52; 88. 57; 100. 249. — Images of gods 30. 73 ff.; 86. 19; 90. 102; 100. 218, 259. tīvraṇika images 78. 39; 85. 66. — Figures of animals 39. 52; 100. 252.

c. Graphic art (cf. the notice in a) Paintings on stiff 27. 18. a picture of the Buddha 85. 94 ff. — Murul paintings 78. 35 ff., 40, 52, 88; 90. 66, 90; 100. 244, 247 ff., 250 ff., 260 ff.

d. Special arts. Ivory work 37. 100 ff. — mosaic 51. 69. — figures moved by mechanism 85. 15 ff.

### VIII. Hindu religion and popular belief

**A. Hindu gods** (deva 18. 51; 32. 63 f.; 51. 108; 70. 223; 96. 39 &c. amara 99. 107. sura 72. 322; 100. 135. — 1. Hindu cult in C. 45. 55; 48. 143; 73. 71; 83. 49; 90. 101 f. *veda* and *vedāṅga* 5. 107, 143; 10. 20; 62. 33; 64. 16. the brāhmaṇa caste see VII, 1. brahmanical ceremonies 62. 33, 45, 52 f. bhatti 74. 243; 85. 33, 70, 82, 121; 93. 9. Hinduism forcibly introduced 80. 75; 83. 9 f. Hindu temples (*devālayā*, -lānā) 37. 40; 79. 19, 22, 81; 88. 93, 119; 99. 45. — 2. Groups of gods: tāvatiṣṭā, tettiṣṭā and their heaven 27. 18; 30. 44, 89; 31. 79. tusita gods and their heaven 32. 72 f.; 33. 13. dvattiṣṭā kumāriyo 30. 89; 31. 80. brahma gods 18. 51; 85. 15; 87. 11. planetary gods (*gaha*) 87. 1. — 3. the three great gods: Brahmā 30. 74; 74. 197, 237; 89. 17 (the brahma world 5. 139; 19. 45; 31. 11). Viṣṇu (nātha-sura &c.) 7. 5; 83. 49; 85. 85 f.; 90. 102; 97. 16; 99. 42; 100. 248. (Lakkhi 72. 101. Āśāḥi festival 85. 89). Śiva 73. 91; 74. 193; 93. 9 f. (Cappi 73. 161). — 4. Other gods: Indra (Sakka, Devimila, Vāsava, Sejanpiatti, Pākasūsana, Sa-hassakkhu, Nārāyaṇa, Vajirapāṇi) 15. 185; 17. 13; 21. 31; 28. 6; 30. 71; 31. 31, 78; 37. 151; 39. 23; 47. 25; 51. 108; 62. 11; 65. 19; 72. 59, 168, 186, 265, 299, 328; 74. 206; 85. 12; 96. 37. his residence, his palace, his hall of justice, his garden 15. 185; 73. 70, 87; 74. 198, 206; 80. 5; 88. 121; 89. 5, 10. his trumpet 30. 74. his bow 85. 12. Kuvera (Vessavānu) 10. 89; 27. 29. his residence Ālakā 37. 106; 39. 5; 74. 207; 80. 5. his treasures 87. 31. Skanda 45. 45, 55; 57. 7. Vissakamman 18. 21; 28. 6 f.; 30. 11; 31. 34, 76; 73. 69. Pajjunna 21. 31; 85. 44 (devo vassati 21. 32; 36. 77). Soma 62. 5; 63. 11. Br̥haspati 42. 3; 52. 38. Sarasvatī 73. 86. Yama 72. 249, 309; 75. 30. Māra 30. 75; 31. 85; 41. 48; 66. 99; 74. 237; 80. 70; 86. 9; 88. 81; 93. 17; 96. 42. Namuci 98. 96. the four lokapilā (mahārājā) 30. 89; 31. 79; 72. 59. minor gods 30. 75; 31. 78, 82. — 5. Demigods,

nymphs &c. Kandappa 77, 106. kumbhaṇḍā 12, 20. gamhabbaī 12, 20; 73, 163. acchārī 25, 102; 27, 13. nāgā (bhujagā &c.) and garnā (suparnā) 1, 84; 5, 28; 12, 9 ff.; 14, 40; 19, 3, 19 ff.; 31, 19, 27 ff., 46 ff.; 50, 27; 75, 38; 83, 14. Nāga king Aravāla 12, 9, 15, 19. Kālānāga 5, 87; 30, 75; 31, 27, 46, 83. Mahānāga 41, 77 ff. Ananta 73, 120. Nāgas original inhabitants of C. 1, 45 ff., 63 ff., 71 ff.; 19, 35. — 6. Demons. asurī 1, 84; 51, 39; 72, 299; 96, 37; 99, 63. dānavā 75, 51. kiṁvarī (-riyo) 5, 212; 78, 40. rakkhasā (-siyo) 12, 45 ff.; 15, 60; 39, 34; 54, 66; 72, 70; 83, 46. yakkhā (-iniyo) 9, 23; 10, 84 f.; 12, 20 f.; 18, 52; 19, 3; 31, 81; 36, 82 ff.; 50, 36; 55, 21; 99, 125. y.s in bodily shape 10, 104; 14, 7. twenty-eight y.-chiefs 30, 90; 31, 81. the y. Kātavela 10, 81; 37, 44. y.s original inhabitants of C. 1, 20 ff.; 7, 9, 11, 30 ff.; 63, 12. pretū and bhūtā 10, 104; 74, 145. — demons in animal shape 7, 9; 10, 53 ff.; 14, 3, or changing their shape 7, 26, or producing animal beings 10, 4. — Rāhu 83, 42.

**B. Popular belief.** 1. Spirits, local or tutelar deities (devatū, ḍeva, devaputta, maru) 5, 27; 8, 13, 25; 15, 67, 81, 135, 165; 19, 19; 20, 41; 22, 19, 80; 23, 10; 27, 30; 30, 15, 50, 99; 31, 56, 83 f., 93; 32, 63; 37, 238; 42, 51; 57, 32, 38; 70, 210; 80, 55; 99, 112, 133. tree spirits 1, 52; 5, 42; 10, 89. mountain deities 14, 3 (Sumanadeva 1, 33; 86, 19). gnomes 14, 38. chattanhi devatā 28, 6. devatās in animal shape 28, 9. vyādhihitēva 10, 89. devapalli 57, 38. offerings to the d.s (bali) 15, 67, 135; 36, 89. — 2. Magic art and witchcraft. Incantations, charms 41, 80 ff.; 51, 81; 52, 80; 57, 6 ff.; 66, 138. magic water and thread 7, 9; 73, 73. rag-trees 49, 27. magic remedies 46, 37. fending off the influence of evil spirits (santi) 85, 50. — Rainfall effected by charm 37, 189 ff.; 87, 1 ff. — Oracle, soothsaying, signs (nimitta) and their interpretation 6, 2; 8, 10, 14; 14, 53; 22, 46 f., 68; 35, 66; 39, 22; 57, 38 f., 53; 62, 38 ff.; 66, 132; 67, 29 f., 32; 77, 48; Brahmans as soothsayers 9, 2. casting lots 95, 20 ff. — Dreams and their interpretation 62, 12 ff., 21 ff.; 66, 47 ff.; 95, 14 f. — Bodily marks and their interpretation 5, 45; 22, 59; 35, 109; 48, 114; 57, 49; 59, 34 ff.; 62, 46 ff.; 81, 68 f.;

87. 62. — Astrology 35. 71; 57. 48; 100. 46, 51. auspicious and inauspicious constellations 19. 47; 29. 1; 31. 109; 62. 37, 55; 63. 47; 67. 31, 62, 91; 70. 240; 71. 28; 89. 39; 96. 13; 100. 191.

## IX. Buddhism

Buddha, dhamma, saṅgha (*vatthuttaya, ratanattaya*) 5. 81; 12. 28; 13. 13; 21. 8; 23. 13; 26. 23 ff.; 64. 15; 87. 43; 90. 65; 91. 6, 9, 16; 92. 27; 97. 1; 98. 2; 99. 11; 100. 169, 301.

**A. Buddha.** 1. Bodily and mental qualities of a B. 3. 1, 6; 5. 91; 17. 46; 18. 22; 54. 29; 74. 2; 85. 54; 99. 67. former B.s 1. 5 ff.; 15. 34 ff.; 27. 11; 39. 51. Future B.s 32. 73; 37. 242; 38. 68; 51. 77 ff.; 52. 47; 80. 12; 87. 3; 100. 237. paccukabmidha 1. 55; 5. 50. — 2. Gotama B.: in former existences 42. 5. his life 1. 12 ff.; 2. 22; 3. 1 ff.; 35. 31; 51. 10; 73. 162; 74. 3. miracles performed by the B. 17. 44; 82. 29; 100. 272. his visits to C. 1. 19 ff.; 15. 160 ff.; 74. 2. his disciples 3. 4 ff., 9 ff.; 37. 176; 39. 53; 51. 80; 85. 78 ff. 107. the five great resolves 17. 46 ff.; 18. 22; 82. 33. titles of the B. 1. 37; 82. 17; 85. 100 ff.; 90. 51.

**B. Dhamma.** 1. puṇīta, apuṇīta; kamma 32. 22 ff.; 37. 51; 93. 15, 17; 94. 21 ff.; 95. 24 et passim. saṃpāra 22. 34 ff.; 30. 44; 32. 21, 81 ff.; 37. 152; 93. 11, 14; 100. 237 &c. three bhavas 4. 66. gati, agati 37. 51 N., 108; 80. 13. patti 42. 50 N.; 44. 107; 52. 69; 100. 146, 159. — 2. The eightfold path 12. 42; 84. 32. compassion with living beings 35. 6; 49. 36; 52. 15, 28; 54. 32; 60. 74; 74. 20 f. — 2. Influence of Mahāyānism (cf. PARANAVITANA, Mahāyānism in Ceylon, C. J. St. G. II, p. 35 ff.) 1. 57; 50. 65; 80. 12; 82. 17; 85. 119; 86. 5–7; 87. 3; 90. 51. kings as bodhisattas 36. 90; 88. 35; 90. 48; 100. 136.

**C. Saṅgha** passim (cātudisaka 32. 34; 45. 54; 73. 155; 79. 17. gaya “chapter” 60. 17; 89. 18, 57; = saṅgha 99. 66, 106). 1. Organisation of the order: pabbajī, upasampadū (see V, E, 5; M. tr., p. 294, 296) 5. 129 ff.; 12. 30 ff.;

**14.** 31 f.; **37.** 210, 223; **57.** 19; **81.** 49 f.; **84.** 37, 43; **87.** 72; **89.** 47 ff. &c. shaving of the head **5.** 46; **16.** 11. the yellow robe **5.** 229; **14.** 13; **18.** 10. cripples not admitted **57.** 19. pabbajā of nuns **15.** 19 ff. — pañca sahadhammikā **80.** 66: sāmapera **13.** 4; **22.** 25; **31.** 119 &c.; **99.** 25, 89, 169, 173; **100.** 44, 96 f., 238. bhikkhu passim (samaṇa **14.** 8; **26.** 21; **30.** 37; **33.** 93; **66.** 1-14; **67.** 91; **97.** 14. yati **37.** 175; **53.** 15; **57.** 19; **89.** 58 E.). — thera, mahāthera **37.** 218; **89.** 64 et passim. ayyaka **45.** 69. yatissara **67.** 61, 80. — bhikkhunī **5.** 198 ff., 208; **19.** 68, 78 ff.; **26.** 15 &c. therī **19.** 65, 77. — uissaya **36.** 112. upujjhāya (antevāsin) **5.** 69, 206, 208. ācariya (sāvakā) **5.** 70, 208. — the bhandūgūrika **89.** 58. — bhikkhus living in villages or in the wilderness **52.** 19, 22; **53.** 14 II.; **54.** 20; **57.** 32; **84.** 18, 22; **99.** 170. tapoīhana, tapassīn **53.** 14 ff.; **54.** 20; **89.** 57; **91.** 25. wandering bhikkhus **98.** 15. — retirement from the order **93.** 14 f. occupations not allowed to bh.s **84.** 7; **100.** 45 f. kulasaiṣagga **33.** 95. — exclusion **5.** 270 II.; **37.** 39; **94.** 22. cremation of dead bh.s **20.** 34 II.; **43.** f., 47, 53; **100.** 148. — titles granted to bh.s: sūmīn (mahās°, sūsanas° &c.) **52.** 20; **53.** 23; **81.** 76; **86.** 38; **89.** 64. samghathera **4.** 56; **37.** 45. saṅgharūja **100.** 69, 108. rājaguru **90.** 81.

2. Necessaries of a bh: catupacīyā **3.** 14; **5.** 196; **22.** 21; **33.** 91; **37.** 76 N.; **51.** 122; **60.** 10, 15, 69; **84.** 16; **89.** 50; **90.** 41; **94.** 20; **97.** 11; **98.** 22; **99.** 26. atṭha parikkhāra (sāmapakā p°) **4.** 26 N.; **20.** 24; **26.** 21; **30.** 37, 39; **54.** 25; **60.** 71; **84.** 21, 39, 41; **85.** 39; **88.** 52; **89.** 66 f.; **91.** 21, 33; **97.** 8; **99.** 89. ticivara, chacivara **33.** 26; **34.** 7, 84; **35.** 77; **36.** 40, 110, 131; **41.** 29; **91.** 23, 33; **100.** 132. patta **14.** 52; **24.** 26 ff.; **35.** 7. parissāvana **35.** 71. dhammakaraka **22.** 68. akkhamalā **46.** 17; **57.** 6.

3. The vihāra. Four vihāras **53.** 37; **54.** 5, 33, 54. atṭha mūlavihāra **61.** 59. atṭhāyatanañi **84.** 4, 18. assama **72.** 145. bhikkhumupassaya **18.** 11 I.; **20.** 21; **37.** 13 &c. ārāma **10.** 101; **15.** 185; **19.** 41; **24.** 13 (cf. **22.** 23); **29.** 32 &c. — sūmā **14.** 32; **15.** 183 II.; **78.** 56 ff.; **100.** 129, 287, 291. sūmāsamugglāka **37.** 36 f., 56. pākāra **36.** 8, 37; **78.** 51, 91; **100.** 217, 265 &c.

— Component parts of a v. (49. 32; 60. 11 ff.; 78. 32 ff., 49 ff., 70 ff., 79 ff.; 79. 13 ff., 62 ff.; 84. 18 ff.; 85. 2 f.; 86. 50 f.; 100. 240 ff., 282 ff.): mālaka 15. 29, 36 ff.; 16. 15; 32. 58 &c. bodhi tree 34. 31; 37. 91; 48. 5; 49. 15; 68. 28; 79. 16, 62, 72; 85. 2, 70; 86. 51; 90. 99. the 'bodhi tree of Bo-gaya' 15. 22; 17. 17, 47 ff.; 18. 34 f., 42; 19. 43, 56; 20. 4 ff.; 37. 246. the bodhi tree in the Mahāvihāra, Anurādhapura 17. 30, 40; 18. 4 ff.; 19. 1 ff.; 20. 1; 23. 28; 28. 1; 34. 58 ff.; 36. 52, 103, 126; 37. 85; 38. 55, 57, 67, 69; 41. 29, 32, 94; 42. 66; 44. 45, 65; 48. 70, 124; 51. 78; 52. 11, 21. its eight saplings 19. 60-2. the b. trees of former Buddhas 15. 78, 112, 147. — pūsītha-vedī, silū-v<sup>o</sup> round a bodhi tree 36. 52, 103; 37. 91; 42. 19; bodhikotthaka 79. 72. dvīratoraya 36. 103, 126. bodhighara 15. 205; 37. 15, 31; 38. 43, 69; 41. 65; 42. 19, 66; 48. 70; 49. 15, 74; 51. 54; 53. 10; 60. 62; 79. 72. — thūpa or cetiya (see VII, C, 12, e) 17. 37 ff.; 26. 8 ff.; 29. 1 ff.; 78. 51 &c. thūpaghara, cetiya<sup>v</sup> 31. 60; 35. 87, 90 f.; 36. 9, 106; 48. 66. — Single buildings: dwelling house for the priests (pūsīda, āvīsa &c.) 27. 9 ff.; 36. 11; 60. 11, 57; 78. 33 ff., 49 ff., 67, 81 f.; 90. 96; 92. 11; 100. 297. guhā, lena 3. 19; 16. 12; 20. 16; 78. 38, 66, 74 f. pariveṇa 15. 201, 206 ff.; 35. 57, 88; 36. 8, 10; 57. 20; 78. 36, 71. relic temple 37. 15; 46. 29; 78. 41; 83. 75; 90. 66 ff.; 94. 14; 97. 36 ff.; 98. 25, 35. image house (paṭimūgheśa &c.) 35. 89; 37. 15, 183; 60. 83; 68. 28; 78. 53 ff., 85 ff.; 85. 77; 86. 50; 88. 56; 90. 99; 98. 67; 100. 295. dhammasālā 78. 42, 73; 79. 21; 98. 78 (dhammāsana, therāsana 3. 22, 35; 44. 115; 85. 46). uposathaghara, -āgāra 15. 37; 34. 30; 35. 85; 36. 16, 107; 37. 201; 51. 70; 78. 56; 92. 10; 100. 93, 287. padhūnoughara &c. 36. 105; 37. 232; 39. 58; 42. 46; 44. 119; 46. 11. aggisālā 78. 43, 51, 71, 86. potthakūlaya 78. 37. dānasālā 37. 182; 74. 150. āgantukasālā 79. 20, 22, 63, 80. bhattasālā, bhojanasālā 15. 205; 20. 23; 36. 12; 78. 42 (bhuttanāvā 37. 181 N.; 42. 67). salākagga 15. 205; 36. 74; 49. 32. caūkamana 15. 208; 78. 42. nahānakotthaka 78. 45 f., 83. vacenkuṭi 78. 43, 59, 86. — Servants and officials in a v. (ārāmika &c.) 37. 63, 173; 46. 14, 28; 52. 26; 57. 21; 78. 4 N.; 88. 58; 97. 55; 98. 27; 100. 218. dāsā 46. 10, 20; 80. 36, 40; 100. 11.

4. Duties of the bhikkhus, vihāra-life. Dasasīlap 18. 10. — Scholarly studies 90. 80; 100. 178. tepiṭakū 5. 84, 275; 27. 44; 78. 7. — Performing of ecclesiastical acts: dhammakkamma 39. 57 (cf. VI, E, 5); kāmmavācā 5. 207. — Recitation of sacred texts 3. 33, 36; 41. 58 f.; gāyatrījāyā 31. 86; 32. 11, 63; 34. 49. preaching of the doctrine (dhammarāṇa 98. 77 ff.; 99. 15, 24); dhammañcātā, -desaka, -kathika &c. 14. 22. 58; 15. 4 &c.; 32. 45; 35. 92; 60. 20; 85. 46 f.; 98. 73, 79; 99. 18 f., 170; 100. 275 (maṇḍapas erected for the preachers 98. 72; 99. 16. seats prepared for the pr.s 4. 51; 99. 18. fans in the hands of the pr.s 85. 46; 98. 73). — kūlūpaka, -ga 30. 40; 36. 116. — Ceremonies performed by the bhks: vassa, antovassa 1. 14; 3. 15; 16. 8; 17. 1; 18. 2; 100. 131. uposatha 5. 235, 273; 13. 14, 18; 29. 63; 32. 41; 35. 76; 36. 16; 51. 83; 53. 29; 74. 20; 100. 131 (pāṭilariyapakkha 37. 202) (cf. IX, C, 3: uposathaghara). pavitraṇī 5. 235, 280; 17. 1; 20. 24; 34. 62; 37. 90; 100. 132. kaṭhina 44. 48; 85. 99 ff.; 86. 46 ff.; 91. 31; 100. 132. paritta 46. 5; 51. 80; 52. 80; 62. 31; 87. 5; 99. 26. — Ceremonies performed in buildings erected in water (udaknkkhepasīmā) 78. 28 ff.; 87. 71; 89. 47, 70; 94. 17; 97. 12. — Higher attainments. upanissaya (marks of future holiness) 5. 45, 172, 194. padhāna 36. 105; 42. 46 (cf. IX, C, 3: padhānaghara). kammatthāna 5. 148. meditation, trance (jhāna) 5. 123, 220; 15. 209; 23. 63; 35. 101; 88. 55. vipassanā, -ssaka 5. 152; 19. 46; 99. 170; 100. 174. — The path of salvation (sotāpatti &c.) 13. 17; 15. 48; 23. 61; 27. 44; 29. 68; 31. 101. anūsava, khīṇasava 5. 112; 20. 51 f.; 28. 24; 29. 6. arahant, -hatta 1. 14; 5. 46, 172, 214; 14. 14, 33; 16. 14, 17; 19. 46, 65 f.; 23. 63; 25. 104; 26. 5; 29. 68 f.; 31. 95, 100; 84. 25; 86. 13. tādim 34. 49. iddhi 1. 37; 5. 174; 12. 15; 13. 19; 14. 14; 30. 99; 32. 15. abhinnā 4. 12; 5. 152, 275; 13. 4; 14. 14; 22. 34; 52. 38. — Therns as soothsayers 15. 169 ff. miracles performed by th.s 5. 258 ff.; 12. 10 f., 49 f.; 13. 19; 14. 35; 15. 38 ff.; 31. 85; 32. 15. nirvana of th.s 5. 219, 226 f.; 20. 33.

5. Cult. Inauguration of a monastic building 26. 14 ff.; 36. 130. music and dance at festival occasions 5. 181; 34. 60. —

Vesākha-festival 1. 12; 32. 35; 34. 59; 35. 100; 36. 40, 109, 130; 44. 46; 51. 84. āsūlha-festival 99. 53. abhiseka (net-tapūjā, nettamaha, akkhipūjā) 5. 94; 38. 58; 39. 7; 100. 187, 191, 204 f., 235, 267. Cf. EZ. II, p. 254. — traces of a temple ritual: the Buddha-image or a relic of the B. is treated as the living master (buddhupatīhāna 34. 61) 38. 61; 52. 26; 53. 30; 78. 35; 90. 77 ff.; 97. 33; 100. 182. — Relic-cult (sārīrikā dhātuyo 17. 12; 80. 69; 99. 58. paribhagikā dh. 55. 17; 82. 18, 34); dātādhātu 17. 14; 37. 92 ff.; 38. 8, 70 f.; 42. 33; 44. 45; 51. 22; 54. 5, 45; 57. 22; 60. 16; 61. 56, 61; 64. 30; 70. 266, 310; 72. 301; 73. 128; 74. 38, 81, 88, 103, 126, 142, 147, 165, 167, 183 ff., 193, 198 ff., 226, 246; 81. 17 ff., 26 ff., 33 f., 77; 82. 6 ff., 40 ff.; 84. 13; 85. 25, 33, 92, 111; 86. 51 ff.; 87. 5, 69, 71; 88. 10, 15, 65; 89. 16–46; 90. 41, 46 ff., 54 ff., 67, 72, 77; 91. 12, 19; 92. 9; 94. 11 ff.; 95. 2, 9 ff., 21; 97. 4 ff., 25, 52; 98. 8, 25, 37 ff., 94; 99. 58, 63, 68, 86, 105, 123, 141, 143 ff., 166; 100. 1 ff., 12, 22 ff., 40 ff., 124 (an image of the d. 100. 153, 157). pattadhātu 17. 12; 20. 13; 33. 48, 55; 37. 192; 61. 56, 61; 64. 30; 70. 266, 310; 72. 301; 74. 38, 81, 88, 103, 126, 142, 147, 165, 167, 188 ff., 210, 226; 81. 17 ff., 77; 85. 25, 33; 87. 69, 74; 88. 10, 66; 89. 16–46; 90. 72. dakkhiṇakkakadhadhātu 17. 14, 20, 24, 37 ff., 50; 37. 207 N.; 42. 53 ff.; 64. 30. kesadhātu 39. 49 ff.; 44. 45; 50. 71; 54. 41; 64. 30. gīvatthidhadhātu 20. 19; 64. 30. — the reliques of the Mahāthiipa 17. 51; 31. 16 ff., 45 ff. reliques of theras 20. 41; 85. 80. — Miracles performed by reliques 17. 25 ff., 43, 51 f.; 31. 97 ff.; 82. 41 ff. — Reliquaries (caṭigota, karandaka) 31. 77, 87 f.; 50. 71; 76. 115; 85. 27; 89. 21; 90. 72; 91. 18 f.; 92. 14; 97. 6, 53 f.; 98. 27 ff., 94; 99. 160, 165; 100. 13 ff. — Relic feasts 88. 16; 90. 41, 57, 75; 95. 2; 97. 25; 99. 68; 100. 8 &c.

6. History of the Saṅgha. The three councils 3. 5 ff.; 4. 9 ff.; 5. 228 ff. Buddhist sects 5. 1 ff. (cf. M. tr., p. 276 ff.). theravāda, ācariyavāda 5. 2; 37. 227; 52. 46; 54. 46 f. &c. vibhajjavāda 5. 271 f. mahīsaṅghikā 5. 4; 50. 68. — Schisms in C. 33. 95 ff.; 37. 2 ff. — church-reforms see VI, E, 5. — tayo nikāya 41. 97 and N.; 44. 131; 45. 16; 46. 16; 48. 73; 51. 14,

64, 133; 52, 10, 12, 35, 80; 54, 4, 27; 55, 20; 60, 10, 13, 56; 70, 181, 328; 73, 5, 12, 20; 76, 74; 78, 5, 10. dve nikāyā 46. 15. dbampiarncikā 5, 13; 38, 75; 52, 17 f. vetullavāda 36. 41, 111; 42, 35; 78, 22. sāgalikā 5, 13; 39, 11; 42, 43; 52, 7. dhammadhiñtī 41, 37–40. sassntadilñhi 5, 269. ubhayasūsana (= bīna- and mahāyāna) 84, 10 (cf. IX, B, 2). — Ascetic groups of bh.s in C: pañsukūlino 47, 66; 48, 4; 49, 80; 50, 63, 76; 51, 52; 52, 21, 27; 53, 25, 48; 54, 18, 21, 25; 61, 59. lībhavāsino 54, 27; 60, 68, 72. vantajivakā 60, 69. tapovana-vāsino 41, 99 N.; 52, 22; 53, 14 ff.; 54, 20. — Bhikkhus in the Coja and Pañdu country 36, 112 ff.; 89, 67; 90, 80. foreign bh.s fetched to C 60, 5 f.; 84, 9, 11 ff.; 94, 15; 97, 10; 98, 89 ff.; 100, 58 ff., 122 ff. — Persecution of the order by Rājasīha I. 93, 10 ff.; 100, 220 ff. by the Parāigis 95, 7 ff. by the Olandas 99, 112 ff., 125. — Non-buddhist sects: litthiyā 5, 74. jaṭilā 1, 16. niganthā 10, 97 ff.; 33, 43, 79; 39, 20. paribbājakā 7, 6; 8, 11; 10, 101. tūpāsa 7, 11; 66, 135 f. ājivakā 10, 102.

7. The laity (upāsaka, -sikā 89, 30). ariyā: pñthujjanā 5, 113. conversions 1, 32, 33; 12, 19 ff., 27 ff.; 14, 23, 40, 58, 64; 19, 46. saraṇa, sīla 1, 32, 62; 14, 23, 40; 22, 69; 25, 110; 35, 75; 36, 73; 54, 29; 98, 13; 100, 280. uposatha vows 17, 6; 35, 76; 37, 202 f.; 39, 18; 48, 10; 60, 21; 97, 19; 98, 13; 100, 131. padakkhiṇum kar 18, 36; 29, 48; 31, 91; 37, 196; 72, 328. — Sacrificial offerings to the community or to a sanctuary: pūjā, dāna 17, 62; 32, 35; 34, 57, 59; 35, 74 f.; 44, 46; 54, 37, 39; 64, 15; 70, 193 ff.; 85, 26, 70, 112–6; 89, 19 ff.; 90, 73 ff.; 97, 29 ff.; 98, 52 ff., 58 ff., 76; 100, 211, 225 &c. pūjopakarapāni 70, 193 f., 198; 98, 93 (saṅkha 70, 191; 100, 190. pañcaturiyāni 70, 194; 98, 51; 100, 7, 33, 190. setacchatta &c. 70, 194; 98, 52; 99, 55; 100, 31, 193. dhajapatañkā 70, 194; 99, 57; 100, 187. puṇḍraghaṭā 29, 48; 30, 90; 32, 4; 98, 36; 100, 188. Cf. also VI, C, 9). pūjāvatthūni 97, 33; 98, 54, 75; 99, 22, 56; 100, 124, 146, 197, 205 f. (food, garments, carpets &c. 30, 36 f.; 31, 113; 32, 35, 39; 33, 72; 34, 62; 35, 77 ff., 92 ff.; 36, 100, 131; 51, 61; 85, 116; 90, 73; 92, 27; 97, 29; 98, 10 f., 15; 99, 26; 100, 10, 195, 205 &c.

Cf. catupaccayā, aṭṭhaparikkhārā, ticīvara, chacīvara in IX, C, 2; kaṭhina in IX, C, 4, salākabhatta (cf. salākagga IX, C, 3); 27. 11; 34. 64; 48. 73. — medicaments 22. 30, 37; 60. 70; 98. 10; 100. 3, 196. — flowers, perfumes, incense 15. 27 f.; 22. 30, 37; 30. 27; 85. 70, 83; 90. 73; 92. 16; 97. 29; 98. 8 ff., 64, 75; 99. 56; 100. 3, 33, 197. — valuables, gold, jewels &c. 17. 62; 36. 125 f.; 61. 56; 85. 121; 97. 28; 98. 11, 33, 53; 99. 37; 100. 9, 31 f. — elephants, horses, cattle, bullalos 90. 76; 92. 29; 98. 33; 99. 37; 100. 42. — slaves, male and female 46. 10, 20; 80. 36, 40; 90. 76; 100. 11. — lamps and oil 32. 41; 92. 16 f.; 98. 75; 100. 33. lamp-feasts, illuminations 32. 37; 35. 79; 76. 119; 85. 40 f., 70 f., 81, 116; 86. 31; 98. 60 ff., 84). — Festival processions in honour of a sanctuary see VII, C, 10. Covering of a thūpa with costly stuffs 33. 10 f.; 34. 42, 46 f., 74; 44. 44; 54. 37, 42. — Donations of land, tanks and fields 34. 63; 35. 83, 117 f., 120; 36. 3; 85. 120 f.; 88. 52; 90. 76 &c. maintenance villages (bhogagāma) 46. 14 f.; 49. 21, 26 ff.; 52. 46; 53. 31; 60. 66 ff., 72 f.; 61. 51; 84. 3 ff.; 85. 58; 90. 87, 97 &c. — Ceremonies connected with donations 15. 25; 26. 18; 27. 46. — Pilgrimages 66. 136; 80. 24; 85. 118; 86. 1, 9 ff.; 88. 48; 92. 15-8; 97. 16, 27 ff.; 99. 36 ff.; 100. 125 ff. the sixteen sacred places in C. 1. 77 ff.; 100. 128, 253. the sacred foot-print on the summit of the Samanakūṭa 1. 77; 60. 64; 85. 118 ff.; 86. 10, 28 ff.; 88. 48; 97. 18; 98. 84; 100. 221 ff. the same in Siam 100. 160, 253.

## Additions and Corrections

### I. Mahāvamsa ed.

2. 11. Put; after Okkākā, and read pavuttā instead of pa-puttā.
4. 30 d. Read: tamppakkhagāhiṇī.
5. 169. Put comma instead of full stop at the end of the verse.
5. 170. Read: tassa tassa and put full stop after nāmato.  
Pāda c begins Yācītvā.
19. 3 c. Read: sepiṇam.
19. 70 d. Read: vidū.
23. 11 c. Read: sahoḍham.
33. 8 c. Read: Velaṅgavīṭṭhikam.
35. 11 a. Read: sahoḍhe.
35. 13 a. Read: Gopakanadītire.
35. 113 a. Read: Gopanadiyā.
36. 7 c. Read: Ratanapāsādaṇ (proper noun).
37. 45 b. Expunge the comma after so.
- p. 337, col. 2, line 30. Read Kukkuṭārāmo, a monastery in I. 5. 122; in C. 37. 15.
- p. 339, col. 2, line 10. Add Gopakanadī **35. 13, 113.**
- p. 344, col. 1, line 29. Add 14. 44 after Paṭhamo thūpo.
- p. 349, col. 1, line 20. Add Ratanapāsādo, a building in A. 36. 7.
- p. 350, col. 1, line 25. Add Vattaniya, a monastery in I. 29. 40.
- p. 350, col. 1, line 44. Read: a monastery in I. (instead of C.).
- p. 353, col. 2. Expunge the last article Honakanadī.
- p. 356, line 19. Read: sahoḍham gaṇhāti cf. skr. sahoḍha.

## II. Cūlavamsa ed. I

37. 79. Put the whole verse between marks of suspension.  
It is a parenthesis.
37. 103. Put: after ratanamāṇḍapāṇī.
37. 114 d. Read: nāgo rogīti niechayam.
37. 202 ab. We have probably to read: cātuddasiṃ pañcas-  
asim yā ca pakkhassū atṭhamī.
37. 206 b. Read: eorāpi rattiyam, uggate &c.
38. 3 h. Read: chattagāhakajantuno.
38. 29 c d. Read: ento, pntto Parindo pi, tatiye tassa bhātuko &c.
38. 60 d. Read: attanā instead of attano.
38. 65. I propose to read: Akāsi pañīmāgehe Buñumāngala-  
cetiye | bodhisatte ea, tatthāpi Kālaśelassa satthuno &c.
38. 77 b. Read: kañsalohajam.
38. 79 c d. Read: ko hi nāma samattho? ti mukhamattam  
nidlassitam.
38. 88 c. Read: rājākule.
41. 82 c d. Read: gahetvā khipi; tih' evamī aṅgulīhi sa tam  
chupi.
41. 89 b. Expunge the comma after vasam.
41. 96 b. Rend: Uttare instead of ntta're.
44. 51 b. Add the note: \*vihārakam all MSS. and Ed.
44. 56 b. Read Janapadaṃ (it is proper noun).
44. 90 b. Read: sakkā hantum ti dārakam.
44. 123 c. Read: 'parajjhityā.
47. 66. Read p. 89\*: tatth' eva.
48. 20 d. We have probably to read: pubbavuttito instead  
of -no.
49. 17 d—18. Read: pañīmīyo ca kārayī || pāsāde cetiye c' eva  
&c. with full stop after anappake.
49. 78 d. Expunge the full stop after avalokiyā.
49. 81 h. Expunge the comma after sādhukam.
50. 34 a b. Read: Pāsāde Ratane sabbasovaṇṇam satthu-  
bimbakam.
50. 48 d. Read: 'samo instead of samo.

51. 88 d. Read: Kuṭṭhaka<sup>o</sup> instead of Tuṭṭhaka<sup>o</sup>.  
 54. 57 a. Read: tam rājapī.  
 56. 6 c. Read: Devanagaraṇ (it is proper noun).  
 59. 2 a. Read: »Abhisekamaṅgalattham pāsādādiṃ &c.  
 59. 49 b. Read: Sundarivbaṇī.  
 61. 4 d. Read: 'khilā instead of khilā.  
 61. 36 a. We have probably to read: Ariyadesīso.  
 61. 51 c. Note. Read: tbā instead of ṭbā.  
 61. 53 d. Read: 'khiṇatosū instead of khīṇa<sup>o</sup>.  
 65. 6 c. Read: Paṭiladdha<sup>o</sup>.  
 66. 26 c. Read: kumāram.  
 66. 56 a. Perhaps we should read: Nānābhassarasañhuṣa.  
 66. 59 d. I propose to read ten' ato instead of te tato.  
 66. 80 d. Read: Kanamburam.  
 66. 143 a. Read: °opāya<sup>o</sup> instead of °opaya<sup>o</sup>.  
 70. 54 a. Read: Rājaraṭṭham (it is proper noun).  
 70. 98 d. Read: Ambavanam instead of Ambu<sup>o</sup>.  
 70. 103 a. Read: Janapadam.  
 70. 112 d. Read: gaṅgāpasse instead of Gaṅgā<sup>o</sup>.  
 70. 120 a. Read: gaṅgājalam instead of Gaṅgā<sup>o</sup>.  
 70. 181 c. Read: vasī karitasampdbāno.  
 72. 58 a. Read: Ārakkha<sup>o</sup> instead of Ārakkha<sup>o</sup>.  
 72. 106 d. Expunge » before and after sāvadhāramūpī.  
 72. 121–2. Pnt: at the end of v. 121 and » before Bil-lavhayambi.  
 72. 127 b. Expunge » before sakalārātivābīmī.  
 72. 170 d. Read: Kālavāpiyam.

### III. Cūlavāmsa ed. II

- Introd. p. III, l. 6. Read: anxious.  
 73. 96 c d. Read: nayanā nandanādam.  
 73. 145 d. Expunge the comma after natthitam.  
 74. 46 a. Read: Rājaraṭṭham.  
 74. 64 d. Read: na dassāmāti sabbatbā« &c.  
 74. 149 c. Expunge » before yasmiṃ.  
 74. 150 c. Pnt » before cātuddisikadīnānam.

74. 206 d. Read: maggāmaggavicakkhaṇo.
75. 24 b. Read: yuldhakilantakam.
76. 124 c. Read: So Kañcakudiyā°.
76. 130 a. Read: So Kañcakuḍiyā°.
76. 157 a. Read: Damile neke.
76. 190 b. Read: °pperūmālām.
76. 192-3. Read: vissutaīp || etth' antare &c.
76. 223 a. Read: °pperūmālo.
76. 232 a. Read: °pperūmāle.
76. 316 a. Read: Virapperayaram.
77. 52 b. Read: jhīpetvā.
78. 38 d. Put; at the end of the verse.
78. 39 b. Expunge; after akkhirasāyanām.
80. 33 d. Read: Sarājakulavāḍḍhano.
80. 37 c. Read: Khandhāvara°.
80. 39 b. Read: Sarājakulavāḍḍhano.
82. 37 a.b. Read: passanto , bhagavā nūpacakkhanā tesu  
main pi ca &c.
85. 56 a. Read: mahāvihāraīp, not Mahā°.
86. 17 d. Read: tamtaīpūnīnakriyāsu.
86. 18 b. Read: Gaṅgāsiripurām.
88. 22 b. Read: dakkhiṇasāmīp disantare.
90. 82 b. Expunge the comma after tadauantaram.
91. 24 d. Read: Sunettapariveṣyakaīp.
91. 25 c.d. Put comma after pūjetvā and expunge it after  
tapassinām.
93. 7 a. Read: tassa dhammām instead of tass' adhammām.
97. 18 a. Read: okūṭācalu°.
98. 61 a. Expunge « after karontū and insert it after  
ekāhe va.
98. 95 d. Expunge the full stop after ṭbito.
99. 29 d. Expunge the comma after so.
99. 80 d. Read: yāv' etarabi.
99. 89 d. Read: parikkhārūni.
99. 107 b. Read: Lañkām.
100. 15 d. Put comma after narādhipo.
100. 16 b. Expunge the comma after varam.

100. 44 a. Insert; after so.
101. 14 c. Read: sammānesi.
- p. 601, col. 1, ult. Read: 73. 62, 114; 78. 77; 89. 45.
- p. 609, col. 2, Devanagara. Add: 56. 6.
- p. 612, col. 1, line 29. Add: Pajjunna, the Hindu rain-god  
85. 44.
- p. 612, col. 2, line 13. Add: Paññiyāñjāra, a D. chief 76. 173.
- p. 613, col. 2, line 12. Expunge 18 and insert 88. 18 on the  
following line after 87. 16.
- p. 620, col. 1, Mahāvālukagaṅgā. Add: 78. 28.
- p. 623, col. 2, line 4 from below: Ratanāvalicetiya. Add:  
80. 20; a thūpa in Khiragūma 79. 71.
- p. 624, col. 1. Expunge the article Rājakulavāḍjhana.
- p. 624, col. 1, Rājaratṭha. Add: 74. 46.
- p. 630, col. 1. After Sarassatīmāḍapā insert the article Sarā-  
jakulavāḍjhana, a pariveṇa built by Āyasmanta 80. 39  
(cf. 80. 33).
- p. 632, col. 2. Add after Sudhammā the article: Sunetrupari-  
vena, a monastic building erected by Parakkamabāhu VI.  
91. 24.
- p. 632, col. 2. Expunge the article Sunārī and add after  
Sundarapabbata: Sundarī, a Kāliṅga princess 59. 49.
- p. 642, line 31. Add: \*tithimā, s. m., the moon 95. 17. —  
Cf. skr. *tithiprāṇi*.
- p. 644, line 4. Add: \*dhani, s. m. sound, noise 99. 60. —  
skr. *dhvani*, Ch., Abhp. 128.
- p. 650, line 19. Add: \*rakkhin, adj., protecting, guarding;  
*saddhamma* 100. 248. — skr. *rakṣin*.
- p. 652, line 5. Add: \*vippulīṅga, s. n. a spark of fire 72. 81;  
75. 110; 95. 14. — skr. *visphulīṅga*, Ch., Abhp. 35.
- p. 654, line 27. Add: \*sāñcīca, s. n. art of poetry 82. 3. —  
skr. *sāhitya*.
- p. 657. To make agree this list of kings with that in C.  
tr. II, Introduction expunge the separate numbers 90 and 92  
of Līlāvatī's second and third reign, and then read 90  
instead of 91, and 91, 92, 93 &c. up to 125 instead of  
93, 94 &c. up to 127.

#### IV. Mahāvamsa, tr.

Introd. p. XXXVI ff. WICKREMASINGHE's Chronological Table of Ceylon kings in EZ. III, p. 4 ff. differs somewhat from my list of kings. As nr. 5 he adds after Pañḍukabhaya the name of Gāyatissa which does not occur in the Mhv., and therefore nos. 6–28 in W.'s list correspond to 5–27 of my list. Instead of nos. 28–32 WICKR. has only nr. 29 Anulā, omitting the names of the paramours of this queen. Nos. 30–58 correspond to 33–61 of my list. In Cūlavṛṣṭa trsl. II, Introduction I accepted WICKR.'s table.

2. 11. Translate the verse thus: and sixteen even unto Okkāku.  
These (kings) who are mentioned in groups reigned in due order, each one in his capital — and add the note:  
We must with the Tīkā read *pavutta* instead of *paputta*.
5. 69. The note 4 on page 31 is indeed misleading (WICKREMASINGHE EZ. II, p. 276). Read thus: *Upajjhāyassu*. Every novice on his entrance into the order chooses an *upajjhāya* "spiritual preceptor" and an *ācariya* "teacher". The former instructs him in the rules of the monkish life, the latter in the study of the holy scriptures. In his relation to the *upajjhāya* the novice is called *saddhivihārika*, and *antevāsika* in his relation to the *ācariya*.
5. 139. Read: after it had been perfumed, instead of for better care thereof.
7. 43. Page 58, note 3 read Malvatu-oya inst. of Malvatte-oya.
9. 23. Read Cittā instead of Cittā.
10. 53. The note 1 on page 72 is wrong. Read thus: According to v. 62 foll. not far from the Kacchakatittha (see note to v. 58), on the right bank of the Mahaveliganga. The Dhūmarakkhapabbata is also mentioned Mah. 37. 213. It is identical with the Dimbulāgala (anciently Udumbaragiri, cf. Cūlav. tr. II, p. 102, note to 78. 5), the so-called "Gunner's Quoin". H. STOREY, Ceylon Antiquary and Literary Register III, p. 229).
10. 90. To Yonas add the note: See E. R. AYRTON, Ceylon Notes and Queries I, Oct. 1913, p. VIII.

11. 10 ff. As to *yatthi* Professor N. LAW (letter of 3rd April 1930) calls my attention to skr. *yaṣṭi* in the meaning "necklace", occurring in the *Kanṭaliya Arthaśāstra* 2. 11. 29 (p. 76 of SHAMA SASTRY's edition). Accordingly we should translate thus:

(10) At the foot of the Chāta mountain there appeared<sup>1)</sup> three cane-like necklaces of the size of a chariot whip.  
 (11) Of them one was a creeper-necklace of bright silver: on this might be seen brilliant delightful creepers of golden colour<sup>2)</sup>. (12) One was a flower-necklace<sup>3)</sup>: on this again might be seen flowers of many kinds, of manifold colours, in full bloom. (13) At last, one was a bird-necklace<sup>4)</sup> whereon might be seen numbers of birds and beasts of various colours, as if they were living.

Notes: <sup>1)</sup> P. *juta*. — <sup>2)</sup> Perhaps *suvanṇapāṇḍā* "with golden leaves". — <sup>3)</sup> P. *kusumayatthi*, commonly called *puṣpahāra*, a string made of golden flowers. — <sup>4)</sup> I. e. a necklace formed by a string of birds made of gold and other precious metals. Cf. also the description of the various necklaces in the *Kanṭaliya* I. I.

11. 22. Here we should translate: Those three kinds of precious stones and the three chariot-like<sup>1)</sup> necklaces &c &c. — with Note <sup>1)</sup>: Refers to *rathapatodena samānā pariṇāyato* in v. 10.

11. 26. Read: the rank of general, instead of the rank of staff-bearer — and add the note: In *dāyādanayaka* the word *dāyāda* means "army", and *nayaka* "leader". Cf. Cūlav. tr. I, p. XXVI.

15. 4 (p. 96, N. 2). The note should run thus: I. e. "the discourse of the fool and the wise man" = Majjhima, Nr. 129 (III. 163).

15. 38 (p. 100, l. 12). Read mango-fruit instead of mango-tree.

17. 31 (p. 118, l. 25–6). Read: was covered with kadamba-puppha- and ādāri-creepers — and add in note 3 after This creeper: (skr. *kadambapuṣṭa*; the name seems to prove that the flowers of this creeper remind those of the kadamba-tree).

19. 73, 75 (p. 134, l. 11 and 17). Read Kadambapuppha-thicket.
22. 7. Expunge in note 3 the words: Tradition seems &c., and add: Cf. on Yatahalena H. C. P. BELL, Kégalla-District, p. 35-6.
24. 22 (p. 165, N. 5). The note should run thus: According to local tradition the battle took place near Yudagannava  $1\frac{1}{2}$  miles NNW. of Buttala. The spot is marked by a thūpa (now in ruins).
24. 39. To came to a vihāra (p. 167, l. 18) add the note: According to popular tradition this vihāra was that of Okkampitiya, about five miles East of Buttala.
25. 48 (p. 173, l. 28). Read: surrounded by a kadambapuppha-thicket.
25. 99 (p. 177, l. 16). Read: sitting on the throne, instead of in the royal chamber.
30. 84 (p. 206, note 2). Add: Cf. Suttanipūta 976 foll.
32. 40 (p. 224, N. 2). *Jāla-pūra* means "net-cake". I was told in Ceylon that even now cakes of a peculiar shape are prepared there for which such a denomination would be besitting.
33. 43 (p. 232, l. 6) Read: 'The great black Sihala is fleeing'.
33. 85 (p. 235, l. 22). Read: concealed herself in a kadambapuppha-thicket.
35. 104 (p. 254, l. 6). Read: in a kadambapuppha-thicket.
35. 116 (p. 255, l. 2). Read: on the place of the kadambapuppha-thicket.
36. 6. Add to note 1, p. 256: In Sinhalese inscriptions he is called Maļu Tissa. See H. C. P. BELL, ASC. 1896, p. 47-8.
- p. 274, l. 12. Read: Sum. I, p. 258 ff.
- p. 288, l. 12. Read: south-east of Anurādhapura, instead of south-west of A.
- p. 289, l. 31—290, l. 2. (See above note on 10. 53). The passage should be corrected thus: Its position is shown clearly by Mah. 10. 53, 57, 58. We must look for it on the right bank of the Mahaveliganga, not far from the Kacchaka-ford. It is the Dimbulāgala rock, the so-called "Gunner's Quoin", as Mr. H. STOREY has shown.

### V. Cūlavāmsa, tr. I

Introd. p. XXII, l. 7. To *bhāgīneyya* add the note: Mr. A. M. HOCART, C. J. Se. II, p. 34, refers to the part played by the sister's son in Ancient Germany, according to Tacitus, Germania 20: *Sororum filiis idem apud avunculum qui apud patrem honor. Quidam sanctiorem artioremque hunc nexum sanguinis arbitrantur.* "The sister's son is in as great honour with the uncle as with the father. Some consider this tie of blood more sacred and closer."

Introd. p. XXV, line 9. Add the note: The inscriptions of King Nissāuka Malla's "Council Chamber" in Polonnaruva supply us with useful information as to the highest officials and the constituent members of the royal council at the time of that king. At the king's right hand there sat 1) the *mahādipāda* (p. XVIII), 2) the *adipādas* (p. XVI), 3) the *senū-pati* (p. XXVI), 4) the *adhikarins* (p. XXV), 5) the Chief secretary (*mahādekha*, p. XXVIII); — and on his left side 1) the Governors of the provinces (*māyālaka*, p. XXV f.), 2) the eighty-four chiefs of smaller districts (*sāmanta*, p. XXV), 3) the heads of the merchants (*setthīn*). The number 84 exactly corresponds to the 84 *sāmanta* appointed by Parakkamabābu in Dakkhiṇalesa (Mhv. 69, 16). See H. W. CODRINGTON, JRAS. C. Br. XXIX, Nr. 77, 1921, p. 304 ff.; the same, II.C. p. 68.

37. 175 (p. 16, N. 5). The identification of Mahālhammarathin with *Tu-mo-kiu-ti* is doubtful as *-kiu-ti* would correspond to a *-gutta* rather than to a *-kathin*.

P. 17, 18, 19, 20 top. Read Upatissa I. instead of Upatissa II.

37. 213 (p. 22, N. 4). Read: right bank, instead of left bank.

38. 68 (p. 36, N. 4). Add at the end of the note: It is however probable that in the Mahāvāmsa not the Buddhist *yojana*, but the common Indian *yojana* is meant which has the double length. See PARKER, Ancient Ceylon, p. 255 f.

P. 52, top. Read Upatissa II. instead of Upatissa III.

41. 89 (p. 60, N. 5). Add at the end of the note: But we may also take *vasam* as part. pres. and assume that the sentence extends to v. 92 with *pāhesi* as finite verb.
42. 67 (p. 73, N. 2). Add in the note: Cf. note to 70. 286 and 312.
48. 66 (p. 116, N. 4). Add in line 8 of the note after *gehāni*: (Cf. C. J. Sc. G. I., p. 145 ff.).
56. 6. The translation should run thus: he thought it not the time to carry on war and came suddenly into the company of the gods when he just had visited (the town of) Devanagara.
59. 7. The translation is not precise enough. It should run thus: After the wise (prince), that best of men, had held the position of a *yuvrāja* seventeen years he caused (this number of years) to be written down (in the annals). — Add the note: *Sattarasarassāni* refers as adverbial to *yuvrājapadam* *sito santo* and is at the same time object of *likhāpayi*.
60. 64 (p. 220, N. 2). On line 13 of the note read thus: The *Jambukola-vihāra* is the monastery erected by Devānampiyatissa at the landing place Jambukola (Mhs. 20. 25) and *Jambukolalena* the Dambul monastery 26 miles N. of Matale with its celebrated rock temple.

## VI. Cūlavamsa, tr. II

74. 151. My translation of the verse is wrong. It is based on a reading *cūtuddisikudinām*, but the *cūtuddisikadīnām* of the MSS. is quite correct and we must translate: "Collect for the poor (bhikkhus) from the four regions of the heavens a plentiful gift of alms."
81. 67 (p. 141, l. 17). Read: after that, instead of for that.
-





